

JENLISA FANFICTION STORY BY:
JERRIEFAIRY28



JENNIE KIM II LISA MANOBAN

I See Orange

I See Orange (JenLisa)

JerrieFairy28

Published: 2023

Source: <https://www.wattpad.com>

IMPORTANT REMINDER

*****I MUTE READERS*****

*****I MUTE READERS*****

*****I MUTE READERS****

First and Foremost for My New Readers

❖ NEVER ASK ME FOR UPDATES ❖

Second-If you're a Clown who leaves dumb ass and Rude comments then you're *OUT* of Here.

And Also, I Hate Excessive Cursing on my comments section, It's so trashy and gross-That's an Automatic mute.

This is a FanFic Story, *I REPEAT* a FanFic Story so whatever's going to be convenient for the characters and for the plot then that's what's going to happen, things tend to get or will get *EXAGGERATED*, this is *FICTION* after all

I said it before and I'll say it again, I'm not a Professional Writer so of course some of the things that will happen here is not exactly well thought out especially when I'm tired from work, this is just something I do to relieve stress

If you don't like what you're reading, do yourself the *BIGGEST FAVOR* and *STOP* or *REMOVE* this story from your Library or Reading List. Cool? Cool.

Thanks.

1.) Hana

Title: As If It's Your Last

Artist: BLACKPINK

A/N: This is the Song that started it all, I didn't like Lisa's Orange Hair and that's what inspired me to write this book

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

[**Warning:** TOXIC JENNIE AHEAD! This book has its cute moments and by cute I mean Jennie being crazy in love with Lisa so she has A LOT of tendencies to become over Jealous and Possessive BUT She doesn't kill people here, this isn't like Lunatic or the other popular book]

NARRATOR'S POV

Seoul, South Korea

Pioneer HighSchool, An Exclusive Co-Ed School for the Elite.

Children of the Most Affluent, Famous and the Powerful go here to receive top-notch Education HighSchool could offer.

Getting into Pioneer HighSchool means a gateway to the Most Prestigious Universities, not just in the Country but International Borders as well.

Every HighSchool has their own Queen Bee, And Pioneer has Jennie, Kim

Jennie is the only daughter of Hajoon and Ji-Eun Kim----Her Father is a Practicing Lawyer and one of the owners of the school while her Mother is a former Beauty Queen who now runs a Make-Up Empire.

Her Grandfather founded Pioneer HighSchool in 1955, 2 Years After the Korean War to symbolize Hope and a New Beginning.

Mr. and Mrs. Kim loves their daughter very much, they give her everything she wants

Jennie is known not only for the fact that she's the Founder's

Grand-daughter but also for her looks and charm.

Nobody can ever say 'No' to her.

She's the Head Cheerleader, She's dating the Basketball Captain, her friends are as Gorgeous, Smart and Wealthy as her

She might be the Queen Bee but that doesn't mean she slips on her grades, she gets high marks with minimal effort, she's basically a borderline genius. She's currently ranked number 2 at the whole school at the moment just behind her Cousin Kim, Jisoo.

She has high chances of being number 1 academically but she's too lazy to actually put some work into studying.

Jennie and Jisoo were born 13 days apart, they're part of a Group Called the U.C.C. short for "Upper Class Clique" - Students in their school gave them the nickname, in fact, the five girls never really acknowledge it because they find it super cringey.

Other members of the "Clique" are:

Rosé Park- The Calm, Neutral one

Irene Baè -The Flirt, but she won't go as far as stealing another person's man.

Tzuyu Chou aka "Chewy"-The Foreigner and Youngest, she's just as savage as Jennie and Irene but can be quite funny

Jisoo can be quite playful/serious. it really depends on the situation, Her and Rosé are quite the same in a way.

Jennie is so-so, she's a nice person when it comes to her friends but if she doesn't like something or someone, she tends to be aggressive and feisty with them, she also has some typical spoiled brat and entitlement behavior which comes out every now and then

It's their Senior Year, their Last Year in Pioneer High and Jennie is planning to make it her best and unforgettable Year Yet, after HighSchool she plans to follow her Father's footsteps and become a lawyer as well, she loves court room drama. Money isn't bad either.

She knows not to mooch off of her Parents Wealth after College, She's not one of those Rich girls that relies on their Parent's Money even when they're over 30. She finds that kind of behavior disgusting. She also has a lot of Pride in her.

She parked her Red Audi A7 and exited her vehicle when somebody hugged her from behind.

JENNIE'S POV

"Good Morning Jennie-Ya!" Irene greeted me

"Hey Irene, Good Morning, You're looking extra happy today" I said giggling

She broke off the hug and linked her arms with mine

"It's the first day of our Senior Year and I'm excited. After this we're off to College, Finally Some Freedom!" Irene said as we enter our school on our way to our lockers

"You know that's still Months away right?"

"Yeah but I'm already over it, I want to meet College Boys already, HighSchool Boys are old news"

I playfully rolled my eyes at her

"Don't be bitter just 'cos your boyfriend cheated on you during our Summer Break"

"YAH! That's uncalled for, You're still as rude as ever, I like you less now"

"I'm not even sorry babe, but don't worry about it, You're Pretty and there's still a lot of guys to mess around with before we graduate so cheer up okay? don't be too slutty though"

"Whatever, Mandu."

"Hey! what did I say about calling me that?!"

"That's what you get for ruining my day sister, payback"

I'm opening my lockers when Rosé, Tzuyu and Jisoo approached us

"Hey Ladies" Rosé greeted both Irene and I

"Hey" We both said and we gave each other hugs

"How was your summer break ladies?" Tzuyu asked

"Fine, nothing exciting, went to Cancun 3 weeks ago then straight to New York for a week to check out NYU" I responded

"Europe for me, shopping, you know the usual" Irene said

"What about you ladies?" I asked

"Went to America to check out some Universities, I think I already have an Idea on which one I want to attend" Rosé answered

"Good for you Chaeng, I'm still trying to choose between UCLA or UC Berkeley" Jisoo added with a bit of frustration in her voice

Tzuyu just shrugged.

"I might go back to Taiwan, maybe go through a gap year, my parents want me to be familiar with the Family business"

"Right, so looks like all of us had a productive summer break" Rosé said smiling

"Eww.. Except for her" Irene said nodding her head towards one

student.

All of us turned to where she was looking at, I scrunched my nose in disgust, The girl is not a pretty sight to see.

Who's that girl?

Has she been going here?

How the heck did she get in Our School?

I know this is shallow but I don't really like the way she looks physically.

She has really bright orange hair in a messy bun, her uniform is not ironed, looks like she just rolled out of bed, don't even get me started on her make-up.

What the heck??

The only thing good about her is her height that's it.

"Who's that?" Rosé asked

"Who knows? Who cares?" Tzuyu responded

"It's the first day of school but it looks like she's about ready to graduate with the way she's dressed up, she's already over it" Jisoo said laughing

Irene rolled her eyes at her

"She should at least try to look decent, what a weirdo"

I continued to stare at the strange girl, She looks like she's trying to be invisible, she's doing a pretty bad job at it though.

She's so obvious with that bright orange hair of hers.

I decided to make my senior year exciting and I'm about to start it

now.

Let's have some fun shall we?

"Jennie-ya where are you going?" My Cousin asked

I ignored her and went to approach the strange girl.

She's opening her locker but I slammed it back to close it and blocked her.

"Hey" I said to her, grinning

"Uhh..Wha-what do y-you want? I don't ha-have any Mo-money, please.. don't h-hurt me"

"Money?? I don't want your money loser, don't you know who I am?" I questioned a little offended

"I..I do, Y-you're J-Jennie Kim.." She answered then she looked down on her shoes

I crossed my arms

"Ha! let me tell you something, Freak! When someone says 'Hey' to you, you're supposed to say 'Hi' or 'Hello' or an equal response. You don't assume that they want your money, nobody wants *YOUR* money"

"I..I'm sorry Jennie"

"Do Not call me by my first name! We're not friends! Who do you think you are?!"

"I..I apologize Miss Kim I didn't mean to offend you, I'm sorry"

"I've only been in school for 15 minutes and you already managed

to ruin my day! and look at me when I'm talking to you!"

She obliged right away and faced me with teary eyes.

I smirked internally

This girl is too easy, I'm gonna have fun toying with this one.

It's been a while since I last bullied a person, and she's the perfect target.

"What's up with your Stupid Looking Hair? Don't you know that's prohibited? Your hair is too bright and it's honestly distracting. I saw you trying so hard not to be seen but sadly, You failed"

"But I--It wasn't M-my fault! --I was Victimized by---" She tried to reason out but I cut her off

"Save it you Tangerine looking freak! I don't have time to hear your sentiments! If I'm gonna be totally honest, your overall physical appearance is nuisance! You don't belong here!"

People are already gathering around us, whispering and giggling

I walked closer to her and whispered to her ear, I had to tiptoe, I didn't realize how tall she was

"Watch your back, I'm keeping my eyes on you, **Tangelo**" I said darkly then I pushed past her making her fall on her ass.

I heard the crowd laughing as I walk away flipping my hair.

I walked back to My Group of Friends with Tzuyu and Irene smiling proudly at what I did

"Good One Jennie, that girl is such a weirdo I swear" Irene said giving me a high five.

"Jennie-ya don't you think you were a little harsh on the poor girl? she was minding her own business" My cousin said.

I rolled my eyes at her.

She's trying to play the 'Unnie' card again, she's not even 2 weeks older than I am.

"Yeah Jennie, it's the first day of our senior year, cut her some slack will you?" Rosé added

"I mean, to be honest she *does* look like that girl that gets bullied a lot, it's like she's asking for it" Tzuyu said nonchalantly

"Thank You Chewy! someone finally gets it"

Both Rosé and My cousin shook their heads in disappointment

"Anyways, I gotta go, I'll see you girls later" I announced

That girl with the Orange hair, I'm gonna make sure this year would be unforgettable for her as well.

The only difference is that, Mine is going to be amazing and Hers will be horrible.

Poor Girl.

Poor Choice of Hair Color.

:

:

I entered my first class which is AP English with everybody greeting me with respect like I'm The Teacher.

I scanned the room quickly and saw a familiar face.

Miyeon-- The student council Vice President.

She's not part of My Regular Circle but she's a friend of mine and Jisoo since we were kids.

She saw me and waved her hand and motioned me to sit down next to her.

"Hey Jennie, how is it going?"

I hugged her and sat down

"Pretty Good, How was your Summer Break?"

"Boring, I stayed home most of the time since I broke my arm, I'm never playing bowling again"

I chuckled

"How do you break an arm while bowling"

"Trust me I find ways, I'm accident prone"

"But you're fine now right?" I asked her, I genuinely want to know if she's alright.

"Yeah little bit, just gotta be on light duty and not lift anything super heavy"

"That's good, be careful next time"

"I will, thanks Jennie, How was your summer?"

"Good, Cancun for the beaches and New York to check out NYU Law School"

"Nice I've always wanted to go to those places, maybe after graduation"

"***smile***You should, both places are very nice"

Just then, The teacher came in.

We all stood up and bowed our heads and greeted him a good morning.

"You may all sit down" The teacher said, then he did roll call to check if everyone is here in a non alphabetical order

"Cho, Miyeon" he started

"**Here**"

The teacher called my name next

"Kim, Jennie"

"**Here!**"

"Manoban, Lalisa"

Nobody responded

"Is Manoban, Lalisa here?"

Manoban? What a strange last name

"Last call for Manoban, Lalisa"

"Here! Here! I'm here!" Someone said barging in the door

To my surprise, It's the Tangelo girl from earlier, Her hair looks tousled, It's not even in a bun anymore and her uniform are more crumpled.

Lalisa, so that's her name huh?

It doesn't suit her.

Really though just when I thought she couldn't get any more gross.

"Oh it's her" Miyeon whispered

I looked at her direction wondering how she knew the girl

"You know her personally?" I asked, for some reason I got curious

"Not personally but I do know she's the Janitor's daughter, Lisa. Last year I remember after class I would see her when we have student council meetings, she'd stay a little late to help her Father clean the classrooms, I heard that she comes in early to school as well to set up the tables before classes starts"

That's probably the reason why she looks--Off.

She didn't have time to fix herself.

Whatever, what do I care?

Like Tzuyu said, She has that Vibe that's asking to be bullied.

"Sit down Manoban, first day of class and you're already late" The teacher said sounding irritated

Lisa bowed her head profusely and apologized

She then scanned the room and when her eyes landed on mine, She froze and fear is evident in her eyes.

Lisa looked away quick when she found an open seat at the very back of the class.

I looked back at her, she's already looking at me.

I winked at her and gave her a mischievous smile.

We're gonna have fun Lalisa.

:

LUNCH

I met up with My Friends at the Cafeteria.

We're Sitting at Our Usual Spot, we're currently talking about our classes and schedules when My Boyfriend Mino called me and said he's on his way to meet me in the Cafeteria.

About 10 minutes later he showed up together with his team mates.

"Baby, sorry I didn't get to see you this morning, coach wanted us to train as soon as now before basketball season starts, as a sorry, here, I got you these" He said, handing me a bouquet of flowers and he kissed me on the lips.

"Aww that's sweet, you didn't have to, but thank you" I gushed

"I know but I feel bad, it's our Senior Year and I didn't even get to see you before your first class"

"***smile*** It's fine, really, don't worry"

"What's your next class later? I can walk you there"

"Dance Class"

"Dance class huh? interesting"

"Yes, I already got all the College credits that I need, this is just extra just in case I didn't get into Law School" I joked earning a laugh from him

"Alright, I support you baby"

Mino and I have been together since Sophomore year.

His father is a close friend of my dad's, they ventured on different businesses together like restaurants and real estate.

I've known Mino for the longest time now, like Miyeon, he was a childhood friend, I never really liked him at first but I finally gave him a shot, almost 2 years later, here we are.

He's a cocky guy, doing his best to give off that "Bad Boy" aura because he wants the other students to fear him for a reason I'll

probably never understand but I guess it works since nobody dares to mess with him.

He's a good guy to me though, very sweet and affectionate to a point where he gets too clingy.

I don't feel comfortable when he gets like that, even if we have history as friends and have been dating for a while.

I don't mind the Sex, I just don't like the 'After Sex' cuddles

That's not me, That's not my style.

:

When lunch was over, Mino and I walked together hand in hand while he's telling me funny stories that happened during their basketball practice.

"Alright here we are, I'll see you later ok, I love you" He said then he gave me a kiss on the lips

"love you too, see yah"

He opened the door for me and I entered and waved him goodbye

The people in the room addressed me, I don't know any of them except--

Lalisa Manoban.

Wow, is this fate or what?

She didn't seem to notice me because she's busy with her old beat up phone.

She's probably playing a game, there's no way a person would text this freak.

I went straight to her direction, I cleared my throat to get her attention

****Ahem!****

That startled her which caused her to look up

*****smirk***** I didn't know Tangelos are interested with Dance, you really think you got what it takes?"

"Mi-Miss Kim--"

"You're Pathetic Lisa, just quit already before you embarrass yourself"

The dance teacher entered the class and introduced herself

"Hello Everyone, My Name is Miss Cheshir, but you guys can just call me Miss C. if my last name is too hard to pronounce, I want to welcome you to dance class"

We all greeted her back

"Before I get started I want to introduce you to my T.A. (Teacher's Assistant) Lalisa Manoban, she's gonna be helping me out, if you have any questions regarding the steps and I'm too busy, please ask Lisa, she's a dance machine slash genius" the teacher motioned her

hand to Lisa's direction

"Lisa stand up and introduce yourself" Miss C. Said

She timidly stood up

I'm seriously surprised by how the teacher introduced her.

*She can't even stand up right and she's telling us that this dweeb is a
dance machine slash genius?
What a load of crap.*

"Hello, I'm Lalisa, nice to meet you all"

I rolled my eyes

*Geez! can this girl get any more weird?
Even when she introduces herself she's unappealing*

After her awkward moment she sat down quickly

We introduced ourselves one by one, Miss C. told us what to expect in class and also told us to have fun while we're here.

"OK, So This is the first time I'm teaching these steps because I want to have a fresh start, Lisa do not know this either even though she's been my T.A. since her first year here, so you can be sure I ain't lying"

Oh, so the Tangelo has been here since Freshman Year.

As we followed her every step, I noticed Lisa is just watching our

teacher intently.

Miss C. Said that she's a dance genius, I wonder if she's just exaggerating.

Dance class is quite full so she decided to teach half the class and the other half go with the little dweeb.

"Ok, half the class i'll teach and the rest, go with Lalisa" Miss C. Said

I decided to go to the dweeb's group to see what the fuss is about.

As the music started, her attitude suddenly changed, like she's a completely different person.

Lisa danced exactly like Miss C if not..better, but it was only her first time watching?

How could this be?

All of us were amazed.

How could she memorize the choreography so fast??

I'm just staring at her dumbfounded, I don't know what to say but for some reason, I got more annoyed with her.

I don't like this chick at all, she's stealing my Thunder!

After she danced, the whole class was looking at her including me and they all clapped while Miss C. is looking at her proudly.

Lisa didn't realize how everyone admired her because right after her performance, she went back to her old dweeby self.

"So yeah, ladies and gentlemen, Lalisa Manoban" Miss C. re-introduced her and everyone was cheering and whistling while she looks down blushing.

I'm glaring her way

I'm gonna give her a piece of my mind later!

I went out first after class and waited by the door, I saw the dweeb talking to Miss C.

She's all smiles after getting praises then after that, she finally exited the classroom

"Lisa" I called with an authoritative tone

"Mm-Miss Kim, Can I Help you?" She asked nervously

I rolled my eyes and grabbed her arm and dragged her to the nearest empty classroom and locked us in.

I pushed her down hard to one of the chairs

"Listen you show-off! what the hell was that about?! what are you trying to do here??"

"Mi-Miss K-Kim..wh-what are you tal---"

"Ugghhh will you quit stuttering you freak! do you have speech impediment?! Be honest with me! it wasn't your first time seeing the choreography wasn't it?!"

"It is My First t-time I sw-swear Miss Kim! Mi-Miss C is secretive when it comes to-to her dance steps until she's su-sure it's p-perfect"

"That's Bullshit!"

There's no way this girl can be good at something!

Just then we heard the bell ring, signaling the 5 minute warning.

I looked at her and grinned then I then slammed my hands on the table of her chair.

"Saved by the bell, Tangelo, but you're gonna get what's coming to you" I threatened

She's looks really frightened.

I stared at her angrily one last time before walking away.

I'm only getting started, Freak.

2.) Dul

LISA'S POV

Three Months of School has been a total hell for me.

The Queen Bee AKA Jennie Kim made me her target and started bullying me and to make matters worse, She had the whole school doing it as well.

*I already got enough on My Plate, I really do not need this right now.
How could this happen? I've been Super Low-key since Freshman Year, why would she decide to bully me now?*

It's because of this stupid hair of mine! It's bright orange!

It caught her and her friends' attention on the first day of our Senior Year and it all went downhill from there.

How did my hair turn out orange you ask?

Well, I was working at a local community pool during the summer break to earn some extra cash when my jerk of a co-worker Sehun decided to mix a potent orange hair dye in my shampoo bottle because he thought it'd be funny.

I clean the pool and I'm a lifeguard there as well so we are required to wash our ourselves before going in and out of the swimming pool.

I tried dying my hair back to black but it made it worse.

I went to the salon but they told me it's going to cost me a lot of money which is the thing that I don't have.

First day of school and I went to the office to explain my hair situation, they were understanding but they told me that I have to eventually have to do something about it at least before winter break.

I've been trying to find a job but so far, no luck.

I'm Lalisa Manoban, I'm 18 years old.

People call me Lisa, well they don't really call me that, they either call me a Freak, Weirdo, Dork or the Queen Bee's Favorites ***Tangelo.***

I'm an only child. My Father is Thai, he immigrated in Korea about 25 years ago, while My Mother is Korean.

My Mother passed away giving birth to me---My parents had me when they were in their early 40's.

My Father told me I'm their '*Miracle Child*' and their '*Answered Prayer*'---they kept trying and trying for years and just when they're about to give up, that's when I happened.

I feel guilty for what happened to my mother but even though My Father lost his wife because of me, he still loved me. He re-assured me time and time again that it wasn't my fault my mother died and that everything happens for a reason.

You're probably wondering how I got into Pioneer High?

My Father has been working for Jennie's family for as long as I can remember and as a loyal employee of the school, He was given the Privilege to enroll me here at no cost--- Kind of like a Charity

The only catch is that I have to maintain good grades because this is Pioneer High after all, The school is well known to produce the best of the best in the Country, especially academically inclined students.

I'm not on top of the class, I'm probably at the bottom of the food chain but my grades are at "A's" and "B's" and that's good enough for me to keep studying here, just as long as I don't get a "C" then I should be ok.

Me and My Father come to school early everyday via public transportation since I was in my freshman year. I help him clean up classrooms before and after class.

Papa has a bad back and he's pushing in his 60's---It's hard for him to work like he used to so I decided to help him out because he was worried that they might fire him if he doesn't do his job right.

I don't mind helping him, He has given me everything I need he accepted me for who I am, and by who I am I meant being interested in both boys and girls.

I came out of the closet when I was 15 years old, He didn't judge me at all or got upset, he just told me to live my life and be happy.

He's a great father and even though we struggle with money, I wouldn't trade this life for anything.

:

:

It's Monday.

Another week of hell is about to start but I try to look at the positive side of everything.

At least I'll get to see Miss C--The ONLY Friend I have in the School.

I go to her class every lunch time, She knows My Story about me being bisexual, struggle with money, Jennie Kim's bullying and everything else in between.

She took me under her wing since I was a freshman when she saw my potential as a *'Dance Machine slash Genius'*--her words, not mine.

:

I'm walking down the hallway with my head down hoping that Jennie Kim and her friends wouldn't see me.

I walk fast to get my stuff from My Locker, I thought I was doing good but I'm proven wrong once again when I heard a familiar voice behind me.

"Well, Well, Well. Look who we have here"

Even when my back is turned, I know who that voice belongs to.

Jennie Kim

I turned around slowly to face the inevitable

"Mi-Miss Kim.. Please..don't.."

She chuckled

"What? I haven't even done anything yet..except.. here, hold this"
She said handing me a tray which contains a large coffee cup and a big bowl of soggy looking cereal overflowing with milk.

"Wha-what do you want me t-to do with this Miss Kim?" I asked
but she instead answered my question with another question.

"***grin*** Have you had breakfast yet Manoban?"

"N-No Miss Kim"

"Good, because that's actually for you."

"F-for me Miss?"

"Yep! Here, Eat Up!" She said then she flipped the tray making the coffee and the bowl of cereal with milk pour all over my uniform, Some of the liquid got into my nose and my eyes as well, (good thing the coffee wasn't piping hot)

She laughed and so did the students around us
"Good Morning Tangelo!"

I dropped the tray and ran to the nearest bathroom to wash up

I should've known she was gonna do something evil!

I tried wiping the mixed liquids off of my uniform but I'm just making it worse.

I still have 10 minutes before AP English starts so I went to the one person I can rely on.

I ran toward Miss C.'s classroom and Thank God she's there already.

"Miss C!" I said breathless

"Lisa what happened to you?! you're a mess!"

"Jennie Happened"
She pursed her lips

"Here, I got a cardigan, cover yourself, just return it to me when you can"

"Thank you! thank you! you're a life saver Miss C!"

"No problem, Now Go, class is about to start, see you 5th period"

"Thanks again Miss C.! Bye!"

I bowed my head then I ran back to the bathroom as fast as I can

:

I made it just in time to class and when I got there, I saw Jennie glaring at me.

I did my best to ignore her but that pissed her off so when I was passing by her, She tripped me.

Luckily, I was able to grab on to one of the chairs and caught myself but that didn't stop the rest of the class to laugh at me.

I mentally rolled my eyes at them

They're so immature I swear.

During class, My Classmates would throw paper and pens at me while the teacher is not looking then they will giggle right after.

Jennie is of course the mastermind of it all---Obviously.

She's Literally The Mistress of Evil!

They follow whatever she tells them to do like little Sheep they are!

They want to get some kind of reaction from me, maybe even make me cry but I won't give them that satisfaction so I continued to ignore them while I listen to today's lesson.

:

:

5th Period

Dance Class

Finally I'm in my favorite class.

My Sanctuary

The class where I can actually have fun!

Jennie doesn't mess with me here because she actually likes this class as well and she pays attention to Miss C.

I'd like to think that Jennie has high respects for Miss C. and since I'm her T.A., She leaves me alone.

Miss C. is currently telling us about how we're going to have a field trip in 2 weeks outside Seoul on Friday and the weekends to visit an old dance studio and to meet her Mentor.

She said that we're going to benefit from it big time especially for people who loves to dance.

I heard about these trips before, Miss C. only does this with her Senior class so even though I have been her T.A. since I freshman year, This is also going to be my first time.

Problem is, I won't be able to go but I really want to because it's great opportunity and I've heard good things about Miss C's mentor.

I should ask her if she can have me tag along for free on the trip in exchange for Manual Labor.

"Ok Ladies and Gents, Now that I've explained everything to you about the field trip I guess we can move on but before I forget, I want to remind you that this trip is Voluntary. If you're interested, come see me after school and sign up so I can make arrangements, Do you have any questions?"

Everybody shook their heads 'No' so Miss C. continued with the Lesson.

"Alright good, Moving on. So Today, I'm going to show you a dance that's a little out there but if you keep an open mind and think of it as non- sexual then this class is going to be more exciting"

She smiled widely and then showed us a video of the choreography.

It's a bit sexy for my liking but everybody seems to like it since they're cheering and clapping.

Even Jennie seems excited about it

"Nice right? after our field trip I expect you guys to learn the choreography, you're all going to perform it one by one, it's a perfect dance to heat up after winter break don't you agree? the dance is going to account for 30% of your grade for the 2nd quarter"

Girls are giggling while the guys are whistling. well which is no surprise.

We are a bunch of 18 year olds with raging hormones so what do I expect?

After class, I stayed a bit to talk to Miss C. about my financial situation

"Lisa don't worry, I have a solution for you. Are you free around 6pm-8pm for the next two weeks?"

"Normally Miss C. --I help my dad right after school to clean classrooms, we get done by 5:30 PM. what's up?"

"Well, remember that dance studio I was telling you about where my friend works? She's in need of a person to fill a position because one of her dancers were injured, she called me but I declined the offer because I thought of you first"

"Miss C, I don't know what to say.."

"Just say Yes and i'll let her know right away. You start tomorrow and this is also a good way for you to make a good impression. Who knows they might just hire you part time during winter break"

"Miss C, Thank You so much! I thought I wouldn't be able to go to the class field trip!"

Tears of joy fall from my eyes--

"***smile*** Trust me Lisa, these two weeks of working for them will make you a decent amount of money and you'll still have extra to finally dye your hair black or at least dark brown"

I hugged Miss C. and sobbed, I'm so grateful to have a friend like her.

There's still good in this world and she's an angel sent from above.

"There, there.. get it together Lisa you still have your 6th Period, Go now, I'll let my friend know, I'll text you the address later alright?" She said breaking off the hug.

"Thank You Miss C. I owe you"

"You don't owe me anything, you're like a little sister to me, anyways go. I'll see you tomorrow"

"Bye Miss C." I said waving at her then I exited her class room.

:

When 6th period class is over, I started cleaning the class room right away.

I'm in the West Wing helping out My Father--This Wing has 30 class rooms so My Dad and I will split it to 15 each.

I was about to go to the second classroom when I heard giggling coming from a girl.

I checked to see who it was and saw Jennie with her boyfriend Mino and It looks like they're messing around so I hid at the other side of the door to give them some privacy.

"Mino, wait, not here" Jennie said as she continues to giggle while Mino plants kisses on her neck.

"Come on baby, don't you think it's exciting? nobody's around"

"Well.. we haven't done it in school before and I did say I wanted to have an exciting Senior Year so fuck it! let's do it" She said wrapping her arms around his neck as he laid her down on the teacher's desk.

Wait.

Wait!

Are they actually going to have sex here?!

Oh My Gosh! What am I doing???
I'm watching them like I'm a Pervert!

I tried to look away but for some reason, I couldn't because my curiosity got the best of me.

"Mino.." Jennie moaned as he continues to kiss her neck and then she wrapped her legs around his waist.

I gasped loudly and that made them startle and got up.

"Shit! who's there?! You better come out or else!" Mino yelled

I came out from where I was hiding

"Tangelo?! What the hell are you doing here?! were you actually just watching us?!"

"N-No! Miss Kim! I didn't see anything at all! I'm sorry I didn't mean to intrude--"

I'm bowing my head over and over

"Shut it! I already know you're a God damn freak but didn't think of you as a pervert!"

I stopped bowing and looked down on the floor so I won't have any eye contact with either one of them because I might end up shitting my pants if I meet their angry gaze.

"What did I tell you before?! Look at me when I'm talking to you!"

I reluctantly lifted my head to look at her then she grabbed on to my collar and pulled me aggressively close towards her

I'm internally panicking, Her face is inches away from mine

Too Close!

TOO CLOSE!!

"Listen You Orange Freak! if this ever comes out, You're dead meat! You understand?!"

I gulped thickly.

I'm so scared of her that I just nodded my head rapidly in response.

She rolled her eyes at me then she pushed me down resulting on me landing on my butt.

Jennie laughed then she walked away, Mino then followed her but not before glaring at me then he called me a "Cock- block"

He was looking like he wanted to kick me in the face but thank goodness he didn't.

I stood up and Pat may skirt and fixed myself a little and picked up my broom

Geez why is it my fault??

Why were they doing THAT here anyway??

Control your hormones!

I brushed the idea off and decided to just forget about the whole drama scene--There's no point stressing over someone's sex life especially Jennie's.

I got done on the West Wing by 5:30 PM as always then I met up with My Father at the Bus stop.

While on the bus, I decided to tell my Father about the weekend field trip and the 2 week job offer Miss C. told me about

"Papa, my teacher offered me a two week job as a dance instructor, well, she referred me to her friend actually, she told me that I can make a decent amount of Money from it, I could kind of use the money because we're going to have a field trip in 2 weeks"

"Oh that's good then Lisa, but what about school? are you not gonna be too tired if you do that?"

"It's only going to be for 2 hours a night and that's it. It only takes about 20 minutes to get there from school so I still have time to do My Homework"

"Just be careful Ok Lalisa? I'm sorry you need to go through all of this, child"

"Hey, Papa, Don't be sorry. You've given me life, If anything I owe you a lot, I'm fine, Honest."

"Lalisa, I'm aware of Ms. Jennie Kim's bullying"

"Papa--"

"Lalisa, if you're worried about you jeopardizing my job, I'm telling you right now, I'd rather prefer it if you stand up against her, don't let anyone walk all over you."

"Papa, don't worry. She doesn't hurt me physically--more on name calling but that's it, the farthest she's done is push me but she's so little that I barely flinch" I lied.

Even If I'm taller than Jennie, she's a lot stronger than I am.

My Father didn't say anything anymore until we reached our apartment.

I prepared us some bibimbap, we have left over meats and eggs and some vegetables and rice, it's easy to make and doesn't take up much time

After dinner I washed up and and get myself ready for bed.

Tomorrow, I'll start my job as a temporary dance instructor.

I hope they'll like me even if I'm sporting a really bright hair.

I hope they can see past that and focus on my dancing instead.

I hope I'm good enough.

3.) Set

LISA'S POV

Pioneer High

I'm here again at Hell on Earth A.K.A School--feeling anxious that Jennie might become more savage in bullying me because of what I witnessed yesterday.

If only I could turn back time and unsee what I saw yesterday but I couldn't so I'm just going to have to deal with whatever kind of physical pain Jennie will inflict upon me.

I'm in front of my locker getting some of my books while being cautious at the same time.

Okay Lisa, Be Alert and Keep Your eyes peeled.

I'm so pre-occupied of worrying that I didn't notice that an open can of paint is on top of my locker and so when I opened my locker, it spilled all over me.

I heard a bunch of students laughing at me and throwing stuff at my direction.

I ran as fast as I could to the bathroom to wash up the paint before it dries up.

I need to wash this all out before class starts or else I'd be the laughing stalk again.

10 minutes of trying to scrub the paint off but still, nothing happened--It seems the more I try, the more it spreads everywhere.

I look like a mess and today is supposedly my first day working at the dance studio!

I'm feeling very hopeless that tears streamed down my face.

I didn't want to cry but I'm so stressed out, My day hasn't even started yet and this already happened.

I don't want to make a bad impression on my first day as a dance instructor and considering I'm only covering for one of the main dancers.

I started sobbing when all of a sudden, Someone came in and offered me a handkerchief

"Here" I heard a woman's voice say

"Oh! Uhh..Sorry, I'm just about to leave, excuse me" I said, I didn't even bother looking at the lady.

"Wait!" She said as she got a hold on my shoulder

"I'm sorry about what my cousin did, Jennie can really be a ruthless witch, I apologize on her behalf"

Huh? Cousin? so that means this person is...

"Miss Kim, Jisoo! I'm so sorry I didn't mean to mess up the bathroom like this!" I said wide eyed while bowing to her over and

over.

I'm very scared because this is the elder Kim that I'm with.

If Jennie can do this much damage, Who knows what her cousin can do to me?

Oh no! of all people why does it have to be one of the Founder's Grand-daughters

"Hey, please, you don't need to do that, I promise it's fine" She said calmly

I stopped bowing to look at her and saw that she's smiling at me

"I'm sorry I don't have any extra uniform to lend you, but If you want I can help you be excused for today, It's impossible for you to get rid of all that paint before class starts, obviously"

"No, it's alright Jisoo-ssi, I think most of the paint are gone anyway and besides, I can't skip classes today, The teachers might give us pop quizzes and I can't miss any of that, I need to maintain my grades"

****giggle**** The paint is nowhere near off of you Lisa-ssi and about your quizzes, I'll help you out with that one too, If you have an excuse from the Principal, you pretty much have immunity on those petty pop quizzes, The teachers would usually just let you take it the next day or whenever you're available to take it as long as it's not near the final grading period of the quarter"

She knows the school policy, but I'm surprised that she knows my name.

"I don't want to be rude Jisoo-ssi but how did you know my name?"

"I don't want to offend you by stating the obvious but if you're the the most bullied person here in school, You'll have the tendency to be known amongst the students, though not in a very pleasant way. Sorry"

"R-Right"

"***smile***Anyways, let's go, don't worry I'll help you"

I stared at her---

I'm not sure Id I should trust her, She is Jennie's cousin after all.

"I know what you're thinking, I'm Jennie's cousin so you're having doubts right? But I want you to know that you can trust me. Her and I are different, I genuinely want to save you from humiliation, so let me help you okay?" She said holding my hand.

I guess I should just believe her words, I need all the help I can get.

"Ok, Miss Kim"

"Just call me Jisoo"

"Well, uh.. If that's the case then you can also call me by my name with no formalities"

"Awww..finally you're warming up to me. Ok Lisa, let's go to the Principal's office, I'll explain everything to him"

"Wait, Jisoo"

"What?"

"You're.. not getting anyone in trouble right?"

"Listen Lisa, I don't want to come out as arrogant but even If I did name drop and tell the principal that this is my cousin's doing, do you really think he can do anything about it? I mean come on, Jennie and I run the school, she's just more--showy about it. Me on the other hand? I don't really care"

"Oh, Okay then"

"Now, are you ready?"

"Y-Yeah, let's go"

Jisoo and I exited the bathroom with her still holding my hand as we head to the Principal's office.

People around us are staring and whispering--I'm getting self conscious about it but Jisoo doesn't seem to care.

As we walk down the hallway, I felt a glare piercing right through my head, I looked around and there I saw Jennie, giving me a menacing look while keeping a close eye on where her cousin

and I are going.

She looks super pissed so I quickly looked away because I don't want to give her any more reason to be mad at me.

We went straight towards the Faculty office and there, Jisoo immediately explained the situation to the Principal, She also asked to give me an excuse letter for the whole day because of what happened.

The Principal was understanding of the situation and he apologized as well for Jennie's behavior.

He emailed my teachers and he also gave me a physical copy of a signed excuse letter just in case I get asked to show it.

"Jisoo, Thank You so much for helping me out, I'm sorry you missed your first class because of me"

"Please, don't worry about it and you're welcome Lisa, anyways how are you gonna get home?"

"I'm going to walk home"

"Walk huh? How far away is your house from here?"

"Like 3 miles away"

"I see. I'll give you a ride home then"

"NO! Please Jisoo, You already did so much for me already. I can't let you miss your second period"

"Lisa, you're talking to the number 1 student here---Academically speaking of course. Do you really think missing two periods would affect my grade? You're underestimating me"

"No, It's not like that at all, I just don't want you to get in trouble"

"Lisa, Trust me, The teachers would get in trouble first before they get me in trouble, now come on"

She grabbed my hand and dragged me to exit the school when someone called her name out

"Jisoo!"

I felt chills right away as soon as I heard the familiar angry voice.

Jisoo stopped walking suddenly which caused me to bump onto the back of her head pretty hard.

"Ouch!" We both whined as she's rubs her head while I cover my lip then We both turned around to face her cousin.

"Jennie! What the hell are you doing here? Why aren't you in class?!"

"You're one to talk Chu!" Jennie spat back as she approached us.

She glared at me and crossed her arms "What are you doing with this Tangerine-freak?"

"I'm going to drop Lisa off at her house, She's skipping classes today and It's all thanks to you" Jisoo answered with obvious sarcasm.

"Skipping classes?? She can't do that! that's only for the two of us Chu! Tangelo is not entitled to it!"

"Cousin dear, you shouldn't have done what you've done to Lisa then. Look at her, She's a mess and I want to help her"

"***smirk***Oh come on Chu, it's not that bad, I mean, the color suits her"

"Jennie Stop it, anyways, we're leaving, go back to class."

"I'm coming with you!"

"What??-Why??" I asked in surprise

Why does she want to come with us??

What is her deal?!

Why can't she just leave me alone for once!

"None of your business, Tangelo!"

"Jennie, it is her business, It's her house, her privacy" Jisoo answered in my defense.

"I don't care! You're taking me with you Chu!"

Jisoo looked at me worriedly, silently asking me if it's okay for Jennie to come along.

She looks like She's contemplating as well whether or not She's going to take her cousin with her to drop me off at My Apartment.

I don't want her to feel pressured so I just nodded.

Jisoo pursed her lips and smiled at me, I saw Jennie give her cousin a dirty look but Jisoo didn't seem to notice.

"Fine Jendeuki, let's go"

"What did I tell you about calling me that, Chu?!"

"Do You want to be called Mandu instead??"

"Sssshhh! People might hear you!" Jennie whispered angrily

"Are you blind? there's LITERALLY only the 3 of us here in the hallway"

"Chu! Shut up and let's go to your car!"

Jennie walked ahead of us, stomping her feet.

Jisoo and I both sighed then we looked at each other and laughed.

"Sorry about Jendeuki, she can be a bit--"

"Bossy? Aggressive?" I said out of nowhere

My Eyes widened and I covered my mouth with my two hands immediately because those words were just supposed to be only in my head"

I thought I was going to be in big trouble but to my surprise, Jisoo just giggled.

"She is--Let's go Lisa"

When we reached Jisoo's car, Jennie is already waiting by the passenger side, tapping her foot impatiently.

"What the hell took you guys so long?!"

"What's the matter with you Jendeuki? seriously are you on your period?"

"No! Unlock your car! I don't want to be seen going in at the same time with that dweeb over there!"

She doesn't want to be seen with me going in at the same time with her in the car but she insisted in coming along with us?!

She's so.. uggghhh!!

Jisoo shook her head and unlocked her car with the remote.

"Go ahead and get in, Lisa"

"Jisoo, The paint, It's gonna be all over your car seat--"

"Don't worry about it, I'll just have it cleaned, I happen to know a guy. Please get in, It's fine I promise"

"Thank You, I owe you"

"***smile*** No worries" She answered then she went to driver's side and entered her vehicle--"Put on your seat belts please, ladies"

"Lisa, could you type in your address? here take my phone" Jisoo said handing her device to me.

"Oh, alright..."

When I finished typing in my address, I handed her phone back to her

"H-here you go Jisoo" I said but Jennie is the one who looked back and took the phone from me.

She brushed her hands against mine and I could've sworn she traced her index finger on the palm of my hand then She sent a

wink my way.

She then turned away from me and gave the phone to Jisoo.

"Here you go, Chu"

"Thanks but could You hold it for me? I'm driving as you can see"

"Ughh! Fine.."

15 minutes later, We finally reached my apartment.

Jisoo is a good and safe driver, I'm glad she offered me a ride home, she saved me a lot of time.

"Here we are" Jisoo said as she looked back, smiling.

Jennie looked at my direction as well with an unreadable expression on her face.

"Thank You again Jisoo, sorry for messing up your car seat"

"Lisa stop apologizing, seriously, it's fine"

"I want to see the inside of your apartment" Jennie butted in.

"Huh? but it's a mess, I haven't cleaned it yet--"

Jennie didn't let me finish talking, instead, She got out of the car and walked straight towards the apartment.

"Lisa, I'm sorry again, I don't know what's going on with that cousin of mine. Do you mind?"

I sighed for the nth time today

"It's..fine..let's go inside Jisoo"

I took out my keys and unlocked our door

"Uhm.. come in.." I hesitantly said

The Cousins went inside and looked around the place a bit.

"I like it Lisa, it's so homey, it's not even a mess at all" Jisoo complimented

Jennie stayed quiet as she continues to look around like she's curious.

I'm actually expecting that she'd say something negative but fortunately she didn't, Even her expression wasn't judgmental, which is a first.

"Uhm, May I offer you ladies some tea?"

"Sure" Jennie spoke out

Jisoo looked at her cousin weirdly but is able to answer me
"Yeah, Ok Lisa, thank you"

"Ok, I'll be right back, Please sit down, you can turn on the T.V. if you want "

I went to our tiny kitchen to boil some water, it took about 15 minutes to serve the tea, I went back to the living area and saw the cousins just casually talking to each other.

"Uhm..here you are ladies"

"Thanks" Jennie mumbled.

"Thank You, Lisa" Jisoo smiled then asked "Hey Lisa, Your Father works for the school right?"

"Uhm, Yes, he's the Janitor there"

"Ahh.. what about your mom? where does she work, I mean if you don't mind me asking"

I felt Jennie's gaze like she also wants to know about My Mom.

"N-no not at all, She actually passed away right after I was born"

"Oh..I'm..Sorry, I shouldn't have asked. My Bad, Lisa" Jisoo said, I looked at Jennie's direction and she was a bit surprised herself but she stayed quiet.

"No don't worry about it, that's a long time ago, I don't even have any memory of her, just stories from my Papa. It's ok Jisoo, don't feel bad"

Jennie is quietly observing us as we talk, she doesn't look too pleased at what she's seeing as I saw her glare at her cousin again while she holds her cup with a death grip.

"I'm tired of this, I want to leave" Jennie announced, putting down the tea on the table

"But I didn't even get to take a sip of the tea Lisa made"

"You can stay here then, I'll wait outside"

"You're such a brat Jennie!"

She rolled her eyes "Whatever, I'm out of here"

Jisoo inhaled sharply, she put down her tea on the table as well and stood up.

"For the 100th time, I'm sorry about Jennie, Lisa. Thank you for the Tea, let's do this again some time okay?"

"***smile***It's alright Jisoo, Thank you again, for everything"

"Go wash up now, before the paint completely dries off, see you at school tomorrow, bye Lisa" Jisoo said as she exited the apartment and then waved her hand goodbye

"Bye. Drive Safe!"

I waited for them to drive off, Jennie is just looking ahead while Jisoo smiled at me one last time before leaving.

I then went to my room to grab my towel so I can wash up.

I probably need to shave my head with all this paint on my hair.

It's only 9 AM and work doesn't start until 6 PM so I still have a good

amount of time to clean myself up.

4 HOURS In and I managed to take off most of the pain on my hair and face.

There are some traces of it still left on my arms and neck but one couldn't really tell not unless they look at me closely.

Whew!

I'm glad that's over

I'm just going to wear a cap to cover the traces of paint on my hair.

I texted Miss C. about what happened, she said that she can help me with my painted hair situation and told me to come over to her house after work and she'll wash it for me.

I'm glad she's my friend, like I said before, she's a life saver.

Jennie Kim--- She REALLY loves humiliating me.

She finally managed to make me cry earlier but I'm happy she didn't witness it and it was Jisoo who saw me instead.

That cousin of hers is nice, why can't she be like Jisoo?

I wish some of Jisoo's kind trait would rub off on her cousin, they're complete opposites I swear.

Less than a year left Lisa and You're out of High School.

You can do this.

4.) Net

JENNIE'S POV

Another great day! That Stupid Tangelo fell into my trap.

As soon as she opened her locker, a can of red paint spilled all over her, that's what she gets for being a pervert.

I mean, who in the right mind would actually watch two people about to have sex? I understand that Mino and I weren't exactly in an ideal place to do it but for her to creep on us like that?

She's such a whack job

I can't stand her!

After the can of paint fell on her, other students started laughing. I saw her run towards the bathroom as fast as she could, I swear I just want to see that girl cry for once, she really annoys the crap out of me for some reason.

"Good one Jennie" Irene said giving me a high five

"Thanks, next time it's going to be a bucket full of worms" I replied with Tzuyu laughing along with us

"Jennie, that wasn't very nice, we're seniors now, act like one" Rosé said

"Come on Chaeyoung-ah, you gotta admit it's pretty funny" Tzuyu giggled but Rosé just rolled her eyes at us

I ignored her, I tend not to talk back or retaliate when it comes to Rosé, so I just continued laughing with Irene and Tzuyu when somebody grabbed my arm from behind

Who the fuck dares to...?!

"Jennie-ya! what the hell was that? what's wrong with you?!"

It's my cousin.

I should've known, she's the only one who would actually have the guts to grab me like this.

I swatted my arm away and smirked at her

"What Chu? I think it's hilarious"

"Yeah Jisoo, we're just having a little fun dude, chill" Irene said as she put her right arm around my shoulder

"That wasn't funny at all Jen! You're a Kim! You're giving other students the impression that it's okay to bully people, You should know better! This is our Grandfather's school! have some respect!"

"Hey! You're crossing the line Chu! Don't you dare bring up Grandpa into this!" I spat back with the same attitude

I'm start getting pissed off myself

"Well then get your act together! You've been on her ass for months now, enough already! You're so immature I swear!"

"What the hell did you just call me?!" I went right up to her face and we stared each other down

"You heard me Jennie. Quit being a brat and stop this nonsense before I tell your Parents" She said threatening me

She knows My Parents do not tolerate this kind of behavior and I'm gonna get into huge trouble if my cousin would actually tell on me, which she will because she doesn't approve of bullying either.

I just continued to glare at her and then She walks away, going in the same direction where that stupid-ass Tangelo went to

Who the hell does she think she is?!

Just because she's a few days older than me she thinks she can boss me around!

It's all stupid Lisa's fault!

Why is she even here in My School!

I hate her and that stupid orange hair of hers!

Such a fucking eye-sore!

That Tangelo freak is in my first period class and I can't wait to see her 'After-Paint' look.

She's going to be so humiliated later she might probably end up crying.

I smiled at the thought of her ugly crying face

:

2 minutes before our first period starts, I saw my cousin and Lisa exit the restroom, with Jisso holding Lisa's hand.

For some unknown reason, I felt very uneasy all of a sudden at the sight of them having physical contact

They didn't notice my presence at first but Tangelo eventually did so I gave her a death glare.

Just then, first period bell rang, I was going to follow them and see what's going on but Miyeon saw me and dragged me along with her going to class.

:

Where is She??

The 15 minute grace period is already over and she's still not here!

I'm waiting for the freak-show to show up while still feeling very upset at the same time about what I saw earlier---I'm really bothered about Tangelo and Jisoo holding hands.

Was that really necessary?

That idiot cousin of mine could've just told Tangelo to follow her!

She doesn't need anyone holding her hand like that!

Last time I checked, Tangelo is not disabled!

To my disappointment, Lisa didn't attend our First Period class.

:

When the first period bell rang signaling that the class is over, I went straight to my locker to get some books with my boyfriend Mino waiting for me by the door.

He walked me to my lockers and offered to help me carry my books but not without him asking for a little make-out session.

I agreed with his request since I needed some kind of distraction to erase the memory of Tangelo and Jisoo in my head, so we went to an empty classroom and did our thing there.

:

Mino and I made-out longer than we should so we ended up getting late for our next class.

I told him to go ahead because I need to fix myself.

My hair is a little mess and my lipstick is a bit smudged.

I don't want to enter my class with an '*After Make-out look*' --- I always have this need to look nice and proper so I went to the Girls' Restroom to do quick touch up

:

When I was done with my make-up and hair, I exited the restroom but as soon as I did, I saw My Cousin and Lisa coming out of the office

What is this?

They're still together?!

Jisoo and Lisa are just talking. I hid behind one of the lockers as I watch the both of them.

The hallway is empty and it's just the three of us here, grace period is over so I don't think Lisa would be attending her next class either.

My cousin and Lisa seems to be talking for quite a while now, then out of nowhere, Jisoo grabbed Lisa's hand again as they walk towards the School Exit

I didn't like what I was seeing.

Tangelo's hand being held by someone fired up something inside of me which is something I can't really explain--I have No Idea what's going on, All I know is that I'm mad.

Why does she have the need to hold Tangelo's hand like that?!

I decided to come out from my hiding spot and call my cousin

"**Jisoo!**" I yelled

That startled the both of them causing Jisoo to stop walking while Lisa bumping at the back of my cousin's head then they both turned and looked at my direction

"Jennie! what the hell are you doing here? why aren't you in class?!"

Seriously? she's not even in her class either

"You're one to talk Chu, What are you doing with this Tangerine Freak here?!" I asked my cousin while glaring at Lisa

My cousin said that she's going to drop her off at their apartment, I told her that Lisa isn't entitled of skipping and that it's only exclusive to the both of us but of course, she has the answer to everything.

She tried to make me feel bad about bullying Lisa, she got a smart mouth on her and I'm really tempted to tape it up so she could shut up and not give me headache for once.

I turned my attention to Tangelo, who does look like a mess which caused me to laugh internally

She looks like a damn clown.

My cousin interrupted my thoughts and told me that she's leaving with Lisa and that I need to go to class.

I don't know what came over me but I wanted to go with them. I have this unsettling feeling in my stomach telling me that I shouldn't let this two be left alone..

"I'm coming with you!"

"Wha-why?" Lisa asked with a surprised tone

"None of your business you Oompa Loompa!"

"Jennie, it is her business, it's her house, her privacy"

"I don't care! you're taking me with you Chu!"

My cousin looked at Lisa as if she was asking if it's okay for me to come along, Lisa nodded hesitantly and Jisoo gave her a smile, which irritated me.

I involuntarily gave my cousin a dirty look but she didn't see me doing it.

:

When we got in my cousin's car, I made sure that I sit in the front seat because I do not want the two sitting next to each other because I'm not comfortable seeing them too close together

Jisoo gave Lisa her phone and asked her to type in her address on the Navigation app and when Lisa was done typing her information, she handed it back to Jisoo but I intercepted and took the phone from her instead

I decided to mess with Lisa a bit, I wanted to make her feel

uncomfortable so I brushed my hands against hers and I made sure I trace my index finger on her palm.

While doing so, I felt like there was electricity that ran through my whole body and I also felt an unfamiliar tingling sensation in my stomach

Weird?

What was that?

She looked at me and I winked at her, I then bit my lip seductively.

I saw the way she looked at me, she was surprised and didn't know how to react, I then turned away from her and gave Jisoo her phone, but then she asked me to hold it for her because she was driving.

Before we arrive at her apartment, I took a mental note of her address and the directions leading up to where she lives, It might come in handy in the future.

When we reached her house, She said thank you to Jisoo and was ready to leave

I felt a bit of sad knowing Lisa is about to go, I didn't want to let her out of my sight yet, she'll be out of school for the whole day today and I won't see her until tomorrow, so I did what I don't usually do

I Invited myself to her Place

My stupid mouth spoke out before I could even stop it.

"I want to see the inside of your apartment" I blurted out of nowhere

I wanted to take back what I said but it's too late now, Lisa tried to protest and said that her apartment is a mess but before she could even finish, I went down the car and walked straight at the front door so this way, she wouldn't have any choice.

When we got in her apartment, I heard my cousin say something

"I like it Lisa, it's so homey, it's not even a mess at all" Jisoo commented and I agree with her.

As soon as I got into Lisa's Place, I felt comfort but I kept my opinion to myself.

I continued to look around without touching anything, I didn't want her to think I'm being too comfortable.

Tangelo said she doesn't have any food to serve but she did offer to make some tea.

I didn't want to leave yet---I wanted to stay a bit longer so I said Yes to her offer.

I felt my cousin giving me a weird look but she can't do anything about it now so she just said accepted Tangelo's offer as well

Tangelo asked us to sit down and turned on the television for us, After about 10 or 15 minutes, she came back with our tea.

Jisoo started asking her some questions about her family, which caught my attention because I was curious too.

I already know about her Father being the School Janitor, but when I heard about her Mother passing away right after giving

birth to her, I felt really sad, and also felt a little guilty bullying her.

As Lisa and Jisoo continues to talk, I felt out of place.

They're on their own little world again and it felt a little heavy on the chest seeing how they interact with each other.

I feel myself getting upset again because of this, I don't want to see or hear any of this '*Flirting*' anymore so I announced that I'm leaving.

My cousin whined about not even getting to sip her tea, I told her she could stay and I'll just wait outside for her

I walked out the door without saying goodbye to Lisa, I felt bad for her earlier but seeing how comfortable she was with my cousin when this is just their first time interacting with each other really pisses me off.

:

Few moments later, I saw Jisoo coming out the door, she said her good byes to Tangelo, My Cousin then unlocked her car door with her remote.

And when we both got in the car, she started to nag me again

Surprise, Surprise

"What the hell was that Jennie?!" Jisoo said with a pissed off tone as she started her car

"What did I do now Chu?!"

"Seriously? first you insisted of coming with me to drop Lisa off, then you invited yourself to her apartment and when she did welcome us and offered us some tea you walk away? where are

your manners?!" She continued and then drove off.

"Wow, My manners?! I didn't know not drinking the tea is a sign of SEVERE Disrespect! Christ! You've been on my case since this morning! Why do you keep defending that little Orange Freak anyway?!"

"She has a name Jennie and That's not the point! She welcomed us to her house even though She needed to clean herself! I don't really need to remind you why she needs to do so since it's your own doing and then out of nowhere you walk away? And you know what? I should be asking you a question, Why do you insist on making her life complicated? leave her the hell alone Jennie!" My cousin said still raising her voice while focusing on the road.

"It's none of your business Chu alright?! Can we drop this?! I'm tired of talking about Lisa!" I said leaning back on the car seat, crossing my arms.

"Wow..You really are something Jennie, For all I know you're probably crushing on her so you're doing all this just to get her attention"

I froze

My heart pounded uncontrollably and I felt a blush creeping in but I quickly brushed off the feeling and shook my head

Good thing Jisoo was looking ahead and was focused on her driving or she would've assume something is really up when in reality there's none! nothing!

I just like seeing that freak of nature suffer!

That's all there is to it!

What a ridiculous thing for this bitch to say.

Me? having a crush on that little..tangerine-looking weirdo?

Seriously?

First of all, I don't swing that way, Second is that I have a boyfriend, Third, she's very unappealing and barely approachable! Fourth-- Tangelo is naturally annoying!

I could go on and on with the list of why she's not girl crush material

There are a million reasons!

I'd rather get hit by a bus than to actually have feelings for that little.. ugly...stupid Lisa..

Wait.

I do have feelings for her..

Feelings of hate!

That's it.

Nothing more!

:

:

We arrived at our school just in time for our 3rd period.

I was supposed to meet up with Mino again but I changed my mind, I'm not in the mood to have another make-out session with him again.

If we hadn't made-out from earlier, I wouldn't have witnessed my cousin and Lisa leaving school together

...I wouldn't have this feeling of envy towards their interaction with each other

My day would've been perfect, but Lisa managed to turn it around and ruin everything!

Yes I'm blaming Tangelo!

She's making me very upset!

Stupid Orange Slut!

I didn't meet up with my friends and Mino during lunch, They've been calling and texting non-stop but I wasn't answering.

I'm thinking of just skipping school altogether, Lisa is not here today anyway so I have nothing to entertain myself with.

Thinking about it, I admit that I did go a little too far with my prank today, which caused her to skip her all her classes

*****Sigh*****

I'll try to tone it down a little next time.

I don't want her skipping classes anymore, I wouldn't be able to see her if I do something like that again..

I exhaled sharply

It's so boring without Lisa here..

Wait up, Hold on. Why do I care if I don't see her in the first place??

What the hell is wrong with me?! I can do a lot of things to entertain myself!

That's it! I'm skipping school today, I'm just gonna go to the mall and do some retail therapy, that's what I need, and maybe get a facial and a mani-pedi..anything to get my mind off that Orange haired freak!

I went to my car and got out of campus but for some reason, I found myself driving back to Lisa's apartment

I want to see her..

I wonder what she's doing right now..

When I realized what I was doing, I quickly turned around and mentally slapped myself.

*I'm losing it.
What am I even doing?!
Why was I driving back to her apartment?!
I REALLY need to relax, today is an off day for me.
I probably should skip school tomorrow too.
I need a reset from all of this!*

I drove away from her place and this time, it's for real.
I went to the mall to shop

I need to get that weirdo Tangelo out of my mind.

LISA'S POV

After washing myself, I decided to take a quick nap since I woke up early helping my father clean the school.

My Father doesn't know about what happened to me from earlier but I'm still gonna go back there later after classes are over so I can help him clean then I'll go straight to the dance studio.

I don't want him suspecting anything, knowing him, he'll get worried and I don't want to give him more stress.

School..

I'm going to be there again tomorrow.

Just thinking about it and Jennie being there makes me feel anxious.

She went a little too far with the paint prank she pulled

I had to skip my classes because of her and she was finally successful on making me cry.

*It's Sehun and his stupid prank that caused me all this hardship!
This stupid orange hair of mine is such a burden!*

I can't wait to earn some money so I can finally dye it back to a much darker color

Maybe then Jennie will leave me alone, I mean the orange hair is distracting, and my councilor told me that I only have a month before winter break ends and if I don't dye it back to black or dark brown, I'm going to be in big trouble, meaning---Expulsion.

I hope I make a good impression to our boss so they'll consider me for a part time job.

5.) Daseot

LISA'S POV

I'm in front of the dance studio to meet the boss, I'm very nervous because this is what's going to determine if I'll ever get a chance to work for them.

I wouldn't mind if they offer a part-time position or even every weekend, that'll be a great way for me to earn money to help my father and at least I'll get to do what I love at the same time

*Ok, relax Lisa, you got this.. just do your best---*I said to myself

I went in and checked in with the person at the front desk

"Ah yes, Lisa Manoban, just go straight and make a left, that's where Miss Momo's office will be"

"Momo?" I asked confused

"Yes, that's the boss' name, Miss Momo, Hirai" the receptionist answered

Hirai? That sounds Japanese?

"Ok, Thank You Miss" I said to her smiling, she smiled at me and nodded

I followed the receptionist's directions and there I saw the office name plate by the door that read "*Momo Hirai*"---That's it, no titles whatsoever under her name.

I took a deep breath and knocked

****Knock Knock****

"Come in"

I heard someone say from the other side of the door,

I turned the knob and opened the door slowly

"Hello?" I started

The lady was sitting on her chair, she was on her computer trying to concentrate but looked up at me and smiled anyway

"Can I help you?" she asked politely

"Oh, good evening ma'am, my name is Lisa Manoban, I'm here for---"

"Ahh yes! Lisa. Cheshir's Assistant, right? Come in" she said beaming

I went in and closed the door behind me and walked towards her.

I stood in front of her awkwardly with my head slightly looking down

"Lisa, sit down please"

"Oh! Yes ma'am, I'm sorry"

She chuckled

"Sorry for what? You're fine, anyways, tell me about yourself, how old are you and where do you go to school? you don't really need to tell me anything personal though ok? just the basic stuff" Miss Momo said smiling, she's really pleasant like Miss C.

"Uhm..My real name is Lalisa Manoban but people call me Lisa, I'm 18 years old, Senior at Pioneer high, My family consist only me and my father, I'm an only child.. and.."

I didn't know how to end my introduction so I just stopped.

I looked at Miss Momo's direction and she just gave me an understanding look

"Ok, so, do you have any professional experience as a dancer Lisa-

ssi?"

"Uhm, No Ma'am, but I have been Miss Cheshir's Assistant since I was a freshman, I wanted to compete before though but I didn't find any time because of school and I help my father after school to help clean up the classrooms.."

"Clean your classrooms?" She asked confused

"Yes Ma'am, my father is a janitor there, and I help him clean classrooms and restrooms, he's in his mid 60's so he doesn't function like he used to." I answered

"..I'm sorry Lisa-ssi, I don't mean to be invasive.." Miss momo said with a hint of guilt in her voice

"Oh no Ma'am that's alright, you weren't being invasive, it's no big deal, really" I said smiling at her

"Alright then, back to business, Cheshir sent me videos of you dancing, very impressive, you dance like a professional, that's why I was asking if you have any experience"

"Th-Thank you Miss Momo"

"No Problem, Since I'm kind of in a rush, I wouldn't ask you to show me your skills, I trust Cheshir's judgement, you can start tomorrow, I'll ask my younger Cousin to give you a tour of the place"

"Wo-wow.. Wait, so does that mean Im hired?" I asked because I'm not sure if I'm understanding her right

"Yes, welcome to J-Trinity"

I stood up abruptly which startled Miss Momo and I clapped and smiled like an idiot

"Thank You Thank You Miss Momo! I won't let you down! I'll do my best!"

"***laughing*** No Problem Lisa, Oh by the way, you said you go to Pioneer high right?"

"Yes Ma'am"

"Sana, She's my little cousin coming from Japan. She'll start there on January, maybe you can help her and show her around? She's really nice and could use some friends"

"Yes of course ma'am" I answered right away

"And Lisa, please call me Momo"

"Pardon?"

"Momo is fine, no need for formalities"

"Ok..Momo" I said shyly

"Let me call in Sana. She should be done with her class" Momo said then she pressed something on her office phone and spoke to it ---
"Sana please come into my office, thank you"

5 minutes later, a girl came in, she's all smiles and has a really bright and happy aura

Wow, she's cute

"Sana, let me introduce you to Lisa, she's going to be one of our Dance Instructors here, can you show her around? and F.Y.I, She's also a student at Pioneer High and she's the same age as you"

Momo said to her and then she looked at my direction to introduce me to her cousin

"Lisa, this is Sana"

The cute girl looked at me beaming

"Hi Lisa! Nice to meet you!"

"Nice to mee---Owww" I didn't get to finished what I was going to say because Sana engulfed me into a bone crushing hug

"Sana, let go. You're hurting Lisa" Momo said with a giggle

"Ahhh! Sorry Lisa, I couldn't help it, you look cute, I like cute

people" Sana said and I blushed

"Oh goodness.. Lisa, please don't take it the wrong way, she's not flirting, She's just like that but rest assured she meant what she said" Momo said shaking her head and Sana just giggled

"Anyways, let's go?" Sana asked me but she didn't wait for my answer, she just grabbed my hand and dragged me along with her

"Bye Momo-chan! see you later!" She said before closing Momo's door

:

:

"So, Lisa-chan, J-Trinity has 7 dance rooms, I'll just show you this one room here since they all look pretty much the same. We teach ballet, Hip-Hop, Modern, and everything under the sun. To be honest I don't know what else, I just got here 2 weeks ago and I'm just saying random type of dance(s) to you" She said laughing

I laughed with her, she's really funny and I feel at ease with her

"Wait, you just got here 2 weeks ago?"

"Yes"

"Wow.. Really? Your Korean is very good" I said complementing her

"Thanks, I studied Korean while I was in Japan and I watch a lot of K-dramas and listen to a lot of K-pop as well" Sana said

"Oh really? do you have any favorite singer or group?" I asked

"Yes! I love Twice! You?" she answered excitedly

"Nice, I like Twice, but it's BlackPink for me" I said to her

"Oh I like them too! we're going to get along just fine, Lisa-chan"

"Are we not getting along now?" I asked jokingly and she laughed

"You're right Lisa-chan. let's be friends okay? Anyways let's continue with the tour"

The Tour didn't really last long, It was only about 15 minutes because Sana did a lot of shortcuts but it's alright since it's not very hard to memorize the place.

I stayed for about an hour or two because She insisted that we get to know each other a bit. Usually, I would be awkward and find a way to get out of a conversation but I'm comfortable talking to her.

I can tell that she genuinely listens to me, She also told me some stories about her childhood and other random topics.

I had so much fun talking to her that I didn't even notice the time.

"Oh shoot! Sana sorry but I gotta go, I promised my Father I'll be home as early as I can, it's almost 9PM already!" I said a bit panicked

"Shit! Sorry Lisa-chan, I kept you here late" She said feeling bad

"Don't be, it happens, anyways I'll see you tomorrow Sana!"

"Wait Lisa-chan! Can I get your phone number?"

"Sure. Actually here, let me give you my phone and just dial yours"

I handed her my cellphone and she punched in her number and called it

"Ok, got it. See you around Lisa-chan!" Sana said as she gives me a tight hug "I'm glad you're my first friend here" she whispered and then she pulled away smiling

"Me too Sana, bye!" I responded then ran off to the bus station.

:

:

THE NEXT DAY

I'm on the bus right now on my way to school, I'm still so happy about what happened yesterday

Not only did I get the Job, I also made a friend.

Sana is the first one whoever approached me like that, she seems to be really happy that her and I are friends now, she texted me earlier to say good morning and we've been texting since then.

She's such a nice and sweet person, I hope when she officially enters Pioneer High and find out that I'm really a loser that she wouldn't change and still remain friends with me because God knows I desperately need one.

:

I arrived in school 20 minutes later, it's still a bit early so I decided to go to Miss C's class to tell her about the good news and also to thank her for giving me such a great recommendation.

"Miss C.?" I said but she didn't respond

She has her air-pods on so she didn't hear me.

She's practicing a new dance at the moment.

Miss C. is too focused at what she's doing that she didn't realize I'm in the classroom, I decided to just wait for her and sat in one of the chairs on the side.

Few minutes later, she paused to catch her breath and when she turned around, she was pretty surprised to see me

"Lisa-ya! you scared me! I thought you're a robber or something" Miss C. said with her hand on her chest.

"I'm sorry Miss. C, I didn't mean to scare you"

She just smiled and nodded

"It's fine. So, how was the interview yesterday?" She asked

"I got the job Miss C.! I'm so happy, Thank you thank you!" I said excitedly.

I couldn't contain it any longer so I gave her a big hug

"Awww.. you're welcome Lisa-ya, but no need to thank me, it's all you"

I pulled away from the hug and shook my head 'no'

"No, if it wasn't for you, I wouldn't have gotten the job, Miss Momo is really nice and chill boss, she kind of reminds me of you actually" I said beaming

"I know, she's really cool and very good dancer, you'll learn a lot from her" She said

"I also made a new friend, her cousin Sana" I said

"Ahh yes Sana, I met her a week ago, pretty girl and she's a smiley person isn't she?" Miss C. said and I nodded

"Anyways Miss C. I gotta go to my first class before Miss Kim gets there and you know...See you later, 5th period" I said running out of her class

She giggled and waved her hand bye.

:
:

I got into my first period just in time. There's only a few students here and thank goodness they're good ones so they didn't do mess with me.

I sat down at the very back of the class and took out my notebook and pen, ready to start my day.

I texted Sana that class will start soon so I'll just text her when I

can, she replied right away and she said she'll see me later at work.

The bell rang and everyone is in the class room, except for Miss Kim, which is weird because usually she would be here by now.

The teacher started his lesson and we all started taking notes. I felt somewhat relieved knowing that Miss Kim isn't in class yet and I'm secretly hoping she doesn't show up today.

One day of no bullying from her would be really nice..

But of course, she wouldn't let that happen because 10 minutes later, she came in looking extra pretty.

The teacher didn't say anything, Miss Kim just gave him a note and continued with his lesson.

But before she sits down to her seat, I don't know if it's just my imagination but when she looked at my direction, She literally smiled and I swear I saw her whole body glow and her face lit up.

I wasn't sure though if she's actually smiling at me so I looked around but there was nobody there and everybody seemed to be engrossed with the lesson and not really paying attention to her (which is rare) >

I looked back at her direction again and this time she giggled and winked at me then she sat down next to her friend Miyeon.

My heart skipped a beat.

What was that for? She's trying to mess with my head again, like some kind of mental or emotional manipulation

I'm sure she's planning some kind of big prank on me.

I'm going to be extra careful and cautious today, knowing Miss Kim, she's not going to let me have a good day.

I'm not going to let her get to me

As soon as the bell rang signaling that our first period is over, I stood up right away and ran towards the back door of the classroom and didn't look back.

I sprinted towards my locker and took out the books that I need and ran towards my next class as fast as I could.

I can't wait 'til school is over so I can start working to earn money and get my hair dyed so Miss Kim wouldn't bother me anymore.

JENNIE'S POV

I'm tardy for my first period class.

I got up late because I was contemplating on whether or not I should go to school today, I'm not really in the mood.

But then Mino, my cousin and my friends wouldn't leave me alone. They kept calling and texting me, asking me about my whereabouts so in the end I decided to get up, dress up and show up.

I went to the Principal's office so he could write me an excuse slip and then I went on my way to first period.

As soon as I entered the class, I gave my excuse slip to the teacher. My eyes, for some reason, automatically searched for a certain orange-haired girl.

I spotted her right away sitting at the very back of the class, taking notes.

I continued to look at her until she felt my gaze and then she stared at me--I literally felt happy and excited.

I smiled at her genuinely, I don't really know why I did.

She gave me a confused look then she looked around her, probably to check if I was smiling at another person

When she confirmed that I was definitely smiling at her, she looked at me again and when she did, I winked at her and proceeded to sit next to Miyeon.

I thought for sure she wasn't going to show up today.

School isn't so bad after all.

I'm glad I came.

After first period is over, I went and looked at her direction again but she was gone.

She ran off so fast that I didn't even get a chance to really glance at her.

She's really trying her best to avoid me

HA! is she serious right now?

I run this school, she can't hide from me.

Good luck with that, Tangelo.

:

:

Lunch time is over, I was on my way to Dance Class when I saw Tangelo by her locker, smiling like a fool while looking at her phone, typing away.

Is she maybe playing a game?

It's not like someone is going to actually text her I mean, she's a loser.

She doesn't have any friends.

I decided to approach her to see what's up, She's so distracted by whatever it is that she's doing that she didn't even notice that I'm already in front of her.

I got annoyed so I snatched her phone away from her, I gave her phone a quick glance and saw an unopened message.

"Oh would you look at that, The Tangelo is actually using her phone for something else other than gaming. How cute. Did you finally meet someone who's as weird as you?" I said smirking at her

"Mi-Miss Kim. please give my phone back" Lisa said a bit surprised by my sudden action

"Hmm.. let me think about it...uhm..Nope!" I said while I look at her phone screen again

I opened the unread message and saw a text thread.

She's been texting a person named 'Sana'

That got my blood boiling but I didn't let it show and played it cool

"Oh wow..I'm a bit surprised right now. Looks like someone really is texting the School's Oompa-Loompa. I thought you're just sending messages to yourself. Does this person know that you're the biggest loser of the school?" I asked insulting her but she didn't seem to care, She's too focused on getting her phone back which made me more pissed off

The bell rang for 5th period

"Please Miss Kim...I need to go to class now, I'm going to be late" she said begging

"No! This is mine now" I said but someone came up from behind me and took Lisa's phone.

I turned to see who interrupted us and saw that it's my cousin Jisoo.

"Jennie, don't you have anything better to do than to mess with Lisa?" she said while giving Lisa her phone back.

"Here Lisa, go to your class now, I'll let your teacher know what happened, just let me deal with my cousin here" Jisoo said smiling at Tangelo-- she smiled back and thanked my cousin then she ran towards Miss C's class.

Jisoo turned her attention back to me and gave me a disappointed look

"What?" I asked with a raised eyebrow, crossing my arms

"What do you mean '*What?*' --what do you think you're doing again?"

"What did it look like I was doing dear cousin?"

"Looks like you're being a little bitch again, That's what" Jisoo said

"Tell me, Jisoo, do you perhaps have a crush on Lisa? because you're always ready to come to her rescue "

"Oh Please, I don't swing that way, I'm just tired of your constant bullying, what did she ever do to you Jennie? is she really that irritating or maybe there's another reason? Maybe..." she said with a stupid grin on her face

"Maybe what?" I asked irritated

"Maybe you're really the one who's crushing on her"

"Pfft. What a stupid joke. Jisoo, I don't know if you're aware but I've had a lot of boyfriends, even now I'm in a relationship with a guy and you know what? even if I was a lesbian, I would never, in my life, fuck with that Orange-haired freak."

She let out a sarcastic chuckle and shook her head

"Such a defensive answer, I almost believed you there"

"Shut the fuck up! why don't you just leave me the hell alone!" I said walking away from her

This is the second time Jisoo said that I'm crushing on that stupid freak!

Disgusting!

Give me a damn break!

That cousin of mine really thinks differently doesn't she?

I'm not some kind of snotty kid who's trying to get the attention of their crush by bullying!

I'm simply doing this because that stupid Tangelo is irritating me for some unknown reason!

She has that face and aura that just makes me want to punch her! but I won't, I'm still a lady after all, I'll just have another person do it for me.

Maybe before Christmas Perhaps?

A black eye would be a perfect present for Tangelo.

*"**smirk** I can't wait"*

6.) Yeoseot

JENNIE'S POV

I'm in my fifth period class trying my best to concentrate at the new steps Miss C. is teaching us but I couldn't because I'm too distracted by Lisa's constant smiling while looking at her phone.

She's seated in the front by the teacher's desk since she's the T.A. (Teacher's Assistant) so I'm in full view of everything that she does.

Why is she smiling so much?

It's probably because of that 'Sana' person.

I oughta wipe that stupid smile off of her face.

The idea of Tangelo being close to someone really bugs me so I raised my hand to get Miss C's attention

"Yes Miss Kim?" she asked

"Teacher, are we allowed to use our cellphones in class?" I asked

"Technically, No, you're not supposed to" Miss C. answered

"Are T.A.'s exempted to that rule?"

Our teacher shook her head and said "No"

I then stood up in front of the class and spoke up

"Then If that's the case Miss C, could you please tell your assistant to stop playing with her phone? She's distracting the whole class not to mention that She's making an impression that It's ok to use cellphones when we're supposed to be learning, Am I right or Am I right?"

As expected, the whole class agreed with me, with some guys saying '*Yeah! put your phone away you troll!*' or '*Jennie's right! you're distracting us!*' even though I know in reality that they're not even paying any attention to that orange dweeb.

I then turned at Tangelo's direction and saw the look of horror in her face when all the unwanted attention is now on her

"Lisa, please put your phone away" Miss C. said

"I don't think that's enough Miss C. you should confiscate her phone and report her to the principal for disturbing our class" I suggested while I give Lisa an evil grin.

"That won't be necessary Miss Kim, now please sit down, Lisa, give me your phone" Miss C. said

I rolled my eyes at Lisa and I sat down.

She's lucky she's the teacher's pet or else her phone would've been taken away

Her stupid smile eventually turned into a frown

That's more like it

For the rest of the class, Tangelo just sat in her chair staring blankly into space, She looks sad and bored

Who the hell was she texting anyway for her to be like this?

Is that person really that special?

She's not even paying attention to Miss C. anymore, She's just there sitting down being useless as usual.

I've gotta put a stop to this. I'm going to get that phone and throw it somewhere far.

As soon as classes ended, Tangelo immediately stood up from her chair and went to Miss C. to get her phone back, Miss C. gave it to her but not without getting a lecture

I heard Miss C. said that I was right, Tangelo really shouldn't be using her phone in class, especially that she's her T.A

Tangelo ended up apologizing and said that she wouldn't do it again.

:

:

I went out of the class and saw Mino waiting for me outside.

"Hey babe, how was dance class?" He said hugging me and kissed my lips, he then took my purse from me and carried it as he held my hand

"Same same, nothing special" I answered

"Do you want to hangout later?"

"I can't, we have cheerleading practice later after school and the girls wanted to go shopping when we're done with practice, and besides, I need to buy new stuff too so I agreed"

"But you just went shopping yesterday didn't you?"

"So? it doesn't mean I can't go and buy more things that make me happy right?" I said bluntly

He just chuckled and kissed my temple

"Alright, well, how about dinner tomorrow night?"

Ugghh..why is this boy so needy?!

"Fine" I replied just to shut him up

"Don't sound too excited now babe" Mino said sarcastically

"What else do you want me to say huh? I already said Yes didn't I?!"

"Whoa..Chill, I'm sorry baby, I'll pick you up tomorrow after practice?" He said as we reach the front door of my 6th period class

"Yeah, see you" I said taking my purse from him

"I love you, Jennie"

"You too. bye" I said then I went inside my class room and was immediately called by my team mates Dahyun and Seulgi

"Jennie over here!" Seulgi said while Dahyun is sitting beside her waving her hand

"Hello Girls" I greeted the both of them with a smile

"Hi babes, why aren't you wearing your cheerleading uniform?" Dahyun asked

"The real question here is why are you girls already wearing 'em? We still got an hour before practice" I said answering her question with another question

"Because we don't want to waste any time, we want to practice right away, remember we got that cheer competition next year and we can't lose" Seulgi reminded me---She's the co-captain of the team

Seulgi can be a bit aggressive and bossy at times but she's one of the best. I respect her hard-work and she gives her 100% to our team so I tend not to clash with her as much as possible.

"Alright, Alright, as soon as class is over I'll change. Happy?" I said giggling

"No. Not happy, you take at least 30 minutes just to change" Seulgi replied

I playfully rolled my eyes at her "I promise it won't take long this time, 5 minutes flat, I swear"

"Ok, I believe you" Seulgi said finally smiling and sat down in her

chair

Dahyun nudged me lightly and said "What a high maintenance beyotch"

"Hey! I heard that!" Seulgi said

"Ooooh! Daebak! Good for you! Your ears do work! Good Job!" Dahyun teased

Seulgi didn't say anything and she just rolled her eyes at Dahyun.

I giggled at my two friends' love-hate relationship, they've been like this for as long as I can remember.

We three were the only freshmen that got in on our first try for the cheerleading team.

Getting into Pioneer High's cheerleading squad is no joke. Even though I'm the founder's grand daughter, they didn't take it easy on me at all since Pioneer itself has the reputation of being the best.

During my first year on the squad, I sustained injuries on my wrists and ankles because I pushed myself to my limits and practiced relentlessly Every. Single. Day

My hard-work paid off and I eventually became the Team Captain last year

The three of us have been in the Nationals since our first year in the Cheering Squad.

Our Team-- *The Pioneer Jets*, is the the only High School Cheer Squad in all of Seoul to have won the Nationals 3 years in a row and this year, We will do our best to break our own record and get our 4th win before graduating High school.

My Team is already one of the Semi-Finalist on the Nationals, next competition will be on February and then Finals in March which is three months away from now.

Seulgi is right, we shouldn't be wasting our time.

The Jets will come out on top.

6th period started, I'm trying to take some notes and focus on our lesson but my mind can't help but wander..

I find myself thinking about Lisa once again.

I wonder what her relationship with that 'Sana' person really is..

Maybe her cousin? or just a really close friend from her childhood?

I'm curious but I don't want to ask her. I don't want her to get any wrong idea and she might end up thinking that I actually care about what she does with her pathetic life.

LISA'S POV

"Whew that was close" I whispered to myself as I walk down my 6th period class.

I have no idea why Miss Kim has such a problem with me and my phone when It didn't bother her before.

I've been using my phone in class since school started, and then out of nowhere either she takes it away from me or have someone do it for her.

I really don't understand that girl.

She's probably running out of ideas to torture me that's why she's coming for my phone.

What a strange person

I texted Sana about what happened, I really didn't want to vent to her but I just really need to let out my frustrations about Miss Kim.

Sana replies to my messages right away even though I was practically texting her a whole paragraph.

She doesn't say anything bad about Miss Kim though, she just tells me that it will pass, do my best to not let her get to me, just smile always and that she'll be with me soon and that she couldn't wait to hangout with me everyday.

I'm glad she's my friend, I finally found someone that genuinely likes who I am--orange hair and all.

:

:

I'm by my locker room right now putting away my books, I texted Sana right away as soon as 6th period is over since I couldn't text back earlier

03:05 PM

> Sana-chan, I'll be at J-trinity soon as I'm done helping my father

clean the classrooms, I'll see you later

03:06 PM Sana

> Lisa-chan I'm so sorry, something came up and I have to go to Busan for three days, I forgot I need to visit my grandparents there

03:08 PM

> Aww.. that's ok, I'll see you Monday then, by the way how could you forget that you're supposed to visit your grandparents? lol

03:09 PM Sana

> It was an honest mistake, it's your fault Lisa-chan, You're so much fun to talk to, I guess my schedule just became a blur to me

03:11 PM

> You're too honest you know that?

03:12 PM Sana

> I know, Momo-chan told me I should tone it down because people might misunderstand

03:15 PM

> Maybe to certain people, especially with a face like yours people might think you're interested in them

03:15 PM Sana

> Face like mine? what do you mean?

03:15 PM

> Oh stop it, you're just fishing

03:16 PM Sana

> No I'm not! what do you mean face like mine? am I ugly?

03:17 PM

> No! of course not, you have a really cute face

03:17 PM Sana

> Thanks. I know

03:18PM

> I knew it!

03:18 PM Sana

> You're too easy lol I knew I could get it out of you, don't worry, I happen to think that you're cute too

I was about to send her a sarcastic response when someone from behind snatched my phone.

Again with this?

What is up with people taking my phone?

This the third time today

I turned around to see who it was and to my surprise (not really) It's one of the basketball jocks with Miss Kim in her complete cheerleading uniform standing beside him.

He then gave my phone to the evil queen while she glares at me

"Thanks Jin-woo, you can go" She said never breaking eye contact with me then she proceeded to look at my phone, most likely looking at my inbox

"Miss Kim!" I said trying to snatch it back to her but she was too quick for me

"Uh-uh. No. stay right where you are" She said holding her left hand up signaling me to stop

She grimaced while scrolling through my text messages, like she's not too happy with what she's reading.

She then looked at me with a very angry expression on her face, her jaw is clenched and she's gritting her teeth

"Who the hell is Sana?" She asked with a dark tone of voice, she looks furious

"Sa-sana is a new friend of mine, please Miss Kim give me my phone back" I said to her

"A friend?!! Are you sure cos nobody talks to their friend like this! tell me the truth is she really just your friend, or is she something more?!" She asked again raising her voice this time

I'm so confused on why she's so mad at the fact that I can actually make friends.

"No Miss Kim, I just met her yesterday and---"

"Oh wow! you just met her and you guys text each other like a love sick couple!"

Miss Kim is full blown yelling now.

I'm silently thanking the Gods for the empty hallway because she's making a scene

"Miss Kim don't misunderstand. Please, can I have my phone back?" I begged her

"Why? so you can continue to talk with your stupid girlfriend?!" She said with a sarcastic, irritated tone.

"Please Miss Kim.."

"No! you know what?! I'm going to stop this nonsense right now!"

Miss Kim aggressively slammed my phone down on the floor and she repeatedly stomped on it until it's completely broken.

I just stood there looking at my non-functioning device because I'm too shocked of what she just did to it

I then slowly looked at her and she gave me an evil grin, looking satisfied.

I felt tears fall down my face.

I wanted to yell at her, hit her even..but I know there's going to be bigger consequences if I do that, and it's not in my nature to actually hurt people physically, violence doesn't solve anything.

She stared back at me and I could've sworn I saw a flash of emotion in her eyes

What was it? guilt? does she feel bad for me? I really don't know because it disappeared quick.

She then walked towards me and whispered to my ear

"You're not allowed to be close to anyone Lisa, I forbid it..not on my watch" She said as if she's giving me some kind of warning,

I stood frozen.

Jennie walked pass by me bumping my shoulders hard causing me to fall on my bottom.

I stood up slowly, wiping my tears away while I picking up my broken phone and then I went to the restroom to clean myself up.

I can't let my father see me like this, I just got to remember what Sana just told me, just keep smiling, she'll be with me next year, things will be better then, I just need to endure few more weeks of being lonely.

I looked at my reflection in the mirror and did my best to look OK.

You'll be alright Lisa

:

:

3 DAYS LATER

MONDAY

I just got done helping out my Papa clean the classrooms, I'm in the bathroom right now fixing myself as best as I could.

I lied to my papa about my phone, he was asking me about it Friday night because he couldn't contact me, I told him I lost my phone while rushing to go to the Dance Studio.

My Father felt bad for me and I hate lying to him..he said he's going to get me a new one as soon as he get paid but then I told him he didn't have to since I'm earning pretty decent money from my temporary Job.

We will have our class trip this Friday, I already asked Miss Momo if I can be excused on the weekends, she told me that it's fine since Miss C. also told her about the trip.

I haven't talked to Sana ever since that incident with Miss Kim happened.

I hope she didn't text me as much last weekend because I don't want her to think I'm ignoring her.

I'll just tell her what happened, I'll see her later anyway when I go to J-Trinity later.

:

:

I'm on my way to my locker but I stopped in my tracks as soon as I saw Miss Kim walking my way, she didn't seem to notice me though as she's surrounded by her cheerleader friends.

I turned my heels and was gonna go left when a familiar, giddy voice called my name

"Lisa-chan!"

I turned to my side and saw Sana wearing civilian clothing

She ran towards me and hugged me as soon as she got close enough.

"Lisa-chan. I've missed you! you haven't been responding to my text messages so I was hoping to run into you before your first period starts" She said pulling away from our hug, she looks genuinely sad

"Sana, I'm sorry, I was going to tell you what happened later when I go to the studio, come on let's go walk over there" I said pulling her away from Miss Kim's direction.

I looked around and I noticed that she caught other people's attention, I don't usually get greeted like this at school so I'm sure they're all pretty surprised

I saw Miss Kim giving us a cold glare, she looks angry.

I didn't want Sana to get hurt or made fun of so I dragged her

away as fast as I could..

As soon as I feel that it's safe, I slowed down and walked normally

"Sana-chan, what are you doing here?"

"Well, I wanted to check out the school myself so I decided to come in and have a look around" She answered excitedly

"I'm surprised they let you in, you're wearing civilian's clothing, this school is very strict you know that right?" I said matter-of-factly

"Uh-huh, I know, but my Dad spoke with the owner and he approved, besides, I'm only here for a week anyways, just going to sit-in, get a feel of everything, in fact, they let me choose which student I want to sit in with and of course, I chose you sister." She said as we walk through the halls

"Your Dad knows the owner? and Yay! that's good! I'll show you around later ok?" I said

"Yes. the owner is my only God-Parent, he's my father's best friend from college, and yeah ok, no rush, I'll be here for a week before winter break so.." Sana said

"Whoa, hold up..What?? you're kidding? Mr. Kim is your God-Parent?" I asked again just to clarify

She chuckled and nodded "I'm serious Lisa-chan, why do you think I got in so quickly? this school has a reputation of being one of the best in the Nation, I'm well aware of that"

"Wow.. that's pretty impressive" I said

"I know, I got lucky, you should see my grades though, you'll be more impressed, I might even kick the number 1 student out of his or her spot, so he or she better watch it." Sana said jokingly but for some reason I really do feel like she's a competitive person and she meant what she said.

"Ok, now you're just showing off" I said to her laughing

"Meh. you'll see what I mean, Anyways, mind telling me what

happened to you over the weekend?" She asked, this time with a concerned tone

I exhaled sharply and whispered but I make sure it's loud enough for her to hear

"It's Miss Kim..." I said looking down

"Ahh.. I should've known..what did she do this time?"

"She.. stomped on my phone last Friday, she had one of the basketball jocks snatch it away from me, she read our text threads and for some reason she got really upset.." I said feeling sad again

"That's not right, that's invasion of privacy, she's straight up bullying you, why don't you report her to the principal?" Sana suggested

"Sana, I kind of left out one crucial information from you.." I said timidly

"What is it?" She asked

"She's... the owner's daughter, She runs the school" I said feeling defeated

"Oh wow.. how clichè is that? seriously, and here I thought I already have an advantage being the owner's God-daughter and all" She said letting out a sarcastic chuckle

"You never met Miss Kim before?" I asked her

"No, it's just always my God-parent and his wife who visit us whenever they go to Osaka, although, they did tell me that they have a daughter who's the same age as me, her name is Jennie I think?" Sana said

"Yeah that's her.."

"Hmm.. maybe I should tell My God-parent about this, the way she behaves is very disturbing you know?"

"Sana, Please don't do that, I don't want any more drama, we'll be graduating in June, I only have to put up few more months and I'm

out of here

"Fine, But don't worry Lisa, this time, you have me, we'll get through this" Sana said smiling

"Thank You, Sana, for being a good friend" I said a bit teary eyed

She hugged me and said "Awww..No Please Lisa, don't cry ok? I'm your sister and I'll protect you, we'll be ok"

I hugged her back tightly..

Then the bell rang and we went on our way to my first period together

Little did we know..someone was behind the lockers..

Watching our every move..

and *SHE* doesn't look too pleased at what *SHE* just witnessed.

7.) Ilgop

JENNIE'S POV

I'm MAD..

I'm Really Really MAD..

I'M SEETHING!

Who the fuck is that girl with Lisa?? !

Why is she so clingy with that orange-haired freak?!

Where are these people coming from just showing up out of nowhere being friends with her?!

I don't like this!

I HATE THIS!

I'm behind some lockers watching Lisa talk with the new bitch.

I left my team behind as soon as I saw her approach Lisa and I followed them.

It's obvious that Lisa didn't want to attract attention but it's too late for that, she got other people's attention, Especially Mine.

And now, She's dead!

How dare her cling to Lisa in front of me!

The bitch is wearing civilian clothing and acts like she's the queen of everything.

They seem so close with each other and it makes me really angry!

She's touching and hugging Lisa like they're a fucking couple!

Enough of this nonsense!

I came out of of the lockers and approached them stomping my feet.

"Hey!" I said to the new girl with a sickly sweet fake-ass tone.

I looked at Lisa's direction and glared at her, then I looked back at the person she's with.

"Oh uh..Hi" the new girl said smiling.

I mentally rolled my eyes at her

"I'm assuming you're a visitor here since you're not wearing a uniform? That's not really allowed here Miss, you're practically trespassing. Shall I call security on you?" I said without giving it a second thought, I don't care if I'm being rude and aggressive.

I HATE HER ALREADY!

"Miss Kim don't!---- " Lisa said but I cut her off

"Shut your mouth and stay out of this Tangelo! do not get involve if you know what's good for you!" I scowled at her raising my voice.

She was taken aback from my outburst so she closed her mouth and looked down and didn't say anything anymore.

"Miss Kim, calling security isn't necessary, I got a pass from the principal see?" The girl spoke up while showing me the piece of paper signed by the school principal.

"I'm going to be a new student here next year, and I'm sitting in for this week and I chose my friend Lisa here to accompany me. My name is Sana by the way, Sana Minatozaki"

So this bitch is Sana huh?!

The one Tangelo's been texting.

I hate her even more now.

"I'm sorry for the confusion Miss Kim, anyways, Lisa and I will be late, see you later. bye!" That bitch Sana said beaming while she drags Lisa along with her.

I was going to follow them again to give her and Lisa a piece of my mind but somebody called me, stopping me from doing so.

"Yo Jennie! why did leave us all of a sudden? did something happen?" My friend Nayeon said with concern in her voice

"N-No, nothing happened, I'm sorry about that" I said getting back

to my senses

"it's fine, you ok there? you look a little.. off" Nayeon asked

I smiled at her "Yes babe don't worry, anyways I'll see you later at practice okay?" I said then hugged her goodbye

What the hell is wrong with me?!

Why am I so upset seeing her with someone?!

Why am I even wasting my energy on that stupid freak?!

She's not worth my time!

Jisoo is right, I should leave her alone.

I have the cheerleading championships to worry about and next year I'm going to New York to become a lawyer.

Lisa has no space in my life.

She's Insignificant!

:

:

I went to my first period class and saw Tangerine looking at me but I ignored her, I don't want to focus on the fact that her and Sana are sitting next to each other or else I'll lose my cool again.

I'm Jennie Fucking Kim and that dweeb Tangerine is a nobody!

She's useless to me!

The teacher came in then the new whore Sana stood up right away giving our teacher her pass.

Professor Yun just nodded and asked her to introduce herself in front of the class

"Hello Everyone! My name is Sana Minatozaki, I'm from Osaka, Japan. I'm going to be studying here on January to finish high school, it's a privilege to be here, let's all be friends! Arigatou gozaimasu" She said smiling from ear to ear which made me cringe.

I just want to smack her face like for real!

I actually heard a couple of guys whistling and complementing

how pretty she is and some girls actually clapped.

I'm not blind, of course I know she's pretty.

I'm not bitter about it, I'm just mad at the fact that she clings a little too much on Tan--

No! stop it you stupid brain!

Don't think about her!

"Wow She's really cute isn't she?" Miyeon whispered

"She is" I replied genuinely

"She looks really close with Manoban too, is she like her best friend or something? she's like an adorable sloth. It's cute, I'm glad Lisa finally has someone to hang out with" Miyeon said smiling

"Yeah, maybe." My reply was really short

I'm not interested in what kind of relationship they have--- I'm not gonna dig deeper into it

Tangelo is affecting me more than she should and that's just unacceptable.

I'm not going to let that freak get to me.

:

:

For the rest of the day, I just continued to ignore both Sana and Lisa like they don't exist at all, but when 5th period came, I couldn't help but watch them both as they talk to each other because that's all they did!

I was really tempted to call them out because they're disrupting the class.

Well, not really. To be honest, they're only disrupting ME, everyone else is focused on Miss C while I focus on them.

My heart is getting heavy as I watch how they interact with each other, I really don't know what's going on with me..

Tangelo would catch me looking at their direction, I didn't bother looking away though because if I did, that means that I'm guilty of something, and I'm not about to give her that satisfaction.

So instead, I just give her a really icy glare, resulting in her avoiding my gaze, ending our staring contest.

Sana would then look at my direction as well, I gave her the same treatment and she would just smile at me, and then turn her attention back to that stupid Tangerine weirdo

They're both getting on my damn nerves but I'm not going to let it show, I almost lost it this morning.

I'm not going to let Tangelo win.

:

:

After 6th period I went to my locker to put my books back and other unnecessary things that I don't need when I saw people with my peripheral vision approaching me

It's Irene, Tzuyu and Rosé

"Hey Jennie, what's up? we didn't see you during lunch earlier, did you go out to get some food?" Irene asked

I hugged them as a greeting

"Hi. No, I didn't go out. I was just in the gym practicing the team's new routine" I said to them but it was a lie.

I did go out and drove around to ease the tension that I'm feeling since this morning

"Is everything ok Jennie-ya? you know you can talk to us right? you've been a bit..distant" Rosé said worriedly

"I'm sorry girls, it's just that I really want to win the championships since it's our last year, I guess the pressure is getting to me" I lied again

"You'll be alright Jennie, you're a great captain and you're team always gives their 100%, there's no doubt in my mind that our school will come out on top, we'll support you" Tzuyu said smiling

"Awww my little Baby Chewy! I've never heard you say those words to me before.. I wuv you!" I said grabbing her face giving her small kisses on the cheeks.

Tzuyu is our youngest so we tend to baby her, especially me. She's my favorite out of all my friends.

"Ahhh!!! stop it! See this is why I don't say anything to you people! All you do is harass me!" she said swatting my face away

I giggled at her and gave her a flying kiss then winked, she just huffed and crossed her arms and didn't say anything anymore.

"You guys are silly, anyways Jennie I'm surprised you're not messing with Lisa today, change of heart?" Irene asked

I shrugged, I didn't want to think about that freak anymore but of course, The Universe wouldn't let me.

"I realized she's not worth my time anymore, I have other things to worry about" I said blankly

"You finally came into your senses babe, it really isn't worth it, just let her graduate in peace" Rosé said

"Speaking of, I saw her with some weird girl earlier, she's wearing civilian clothing, who does she think she is wearing that here? We can't even do that, I already don't like her" Tzuyu said sounding really annoyed which is kind of new because she usually doesn't give a shit about people

I smirked--I agree with what she said.

This is one of the reasons why Tzuyu is my favorite because we tend to dislike the same people.

"She *IS* weird right? She's all happy and smiling! It's not normal!" I added

"For real, they deserve each other, both are losers and freaks" Tzuyu

said bluntly

"I saw them too and what's wrong with being happy all the time? she's actually a quite a looker " Rosé said stating facts.

"We never said she was ugly!" Tzuyu and I both said raising our voice at the same time

"Whoa! was that really necessary to react like that to what Rosé said?" Irene said eyeing us suspiciously

"Yeah why are you guys so defensive? you both are acting weird" Rosé responded raising an eyebrow

Tzuyu and I looked at each other a bit ashamed

"Sorry" Tzuyu mumbled

"My bad babe" I said putting my hand on her shoulder "Anyways see you guys later? I gotta go to the field and meet up with my team, Seulgi will kick my ass if I don't show up on time, bye!"

I hugged them all and ran towards the gym at the girl's locker room so I can change into my cheerleading uniform.

:

As I was heading towards the Gym, two girls caught my eye.

It's that loser Sana and that Tangerine Freak.

Sana got her arm around Tangerine's shoulder, whispering something and the orange dweeb giggled while they're walking on what appears to be Sana's car.

My heart felt heavy again and I feel myself becoming frustrated and angry once more.

Im sick of this!

I quickly shook off the unwanted feeling and made my way towards the gym

Forget about her Jennie!
She's a Loser and Nothing More!

:

GYMNASIUM- Cheer Practice

"One and two and three and four, five! six! seven! eight!" I counted while rehearsing our routine

"Do it Again! Damn it! what's wrong with you guys?! we've been rehearsing this for a month now and you guys still can't get the routine right!" I yelled at them

I ran a hand through my hair getting frustrated.

To be honest, my team is doing really great, I'm just so mad at what I saw earlier and I needed an outlet, and they're the unlucky ones who's getting all heat.

I saw Nayeon stopped doing the routine, she approached me and said "Jennie-ya, we need a break, we've been practicing for 2 hours straight now and you're not letting us breathe or even drink water"

I closed my eyes and inhaled sharply to relax my mind, I then looked at her and nodded

"Break! 30 minutes!" I said and they all sighed and groaned with relief

When the coast was clear, Nayeon spoke up again "Jennie, what's wrong?"

"Nothing.. I'm sorry, I'm overdoing it aren't I?" I asked

She just gave me a sympathetic look and nodded

"Fucking Finally! what the hell was that captain?! are you trying to kill us?!" Seulgi said irritated

"Yea Cap, you're going to get us all injured" Dahyun added

"Ladies, A little respect, she's still Our Captain.. even though she's

power tripping right now" Nayeon said giggling

I glared at her but she just gave me her signature bunny smile, Nayeon knows I wouldn't be able to resist her toothy smile so I caved in and just giggled.

"Sorry, I know I'm giving you guys a hard time today...I apologize" I said

"Pffttt. how about you tell that to the whole team not just to us? they might think you're playing favorites" Seulgi said

"I will.. how about this..to show you how sorry I am, only 2 hours of practice and Pizza party tomorrow? my treat" I offered

"With soda?" Seulgi asked

*****Sigh**** Fine"

"Yay! best captain ever!" Seulgi said hugging me

"You're such a kiss-ass Seulgi" Dahyun said resulting with Seulgi giving her the middle finger

"Hey! That's not allowed here!" Nayeon scolded

"Then tell Dahyun's bitch ass to leave me alone!" Seulgi complained

"What the hell did you just say to me??!!" Dahyun said as she was about to hit Seulgi but the cheerleader bear ran away

They continued to bicker and I just watched them with amusement, Nayeon eventually gave up and went to the girl's restroom

My mind wandered off again to Lisa

I wonder what she's doing right now.. Is she still with Sana?

Ugghh!! I can't take this!

maybe I need to switch classes, I can't stand seeing them together!

I'm going to my counselor tomorrow and make him change my schedule

:
:

THE NEXT DAY

"What do you mean I can't change my schedule??" I asked my counselor demanding for an answer

"I'm sorry Ms. Kim but rules are rules, it's too late for you to change your classes now since it's almost the end of the quarter"

"Exactly! so why can't you do it? are you really that incompetent that you can't even do a simple request?!"

"Ms. Kim Please, there's no need to question my capabilities, It's just that it's always been the rules Ma'am, and besides there's only 3 days of school left and then it's going to be your winter break, you can change your schedule first week of our 3rd quarter" The counselor explained calmly

I stood up abruptly not wanting to listen to him anymore

"You'll regret this! Good luck with the job hunting!" I yelled storming out of the useless councilor's office

I heard him call out for me asking me to wait but I slammed his door shut

Great! Now I'm stuck with with them for another 3 days...

Shit! I just remembered, we got that trip with Miss C. on Friday..

Don't tell me Sana's coming with us too?!

Ughhh! just my luck! why? why is this happening? is this my Karma for bullying Lisa?

I exhaled sharply and did some deep breathing to calm my nerves

Tch. I'm being way too dramatic over this!

I'm the Queen of this School, they don't have any power over me.

I've decided that I'm just going to hangout with my friends during the school trip, I managed to ignore them yesterday and I know I can do it again.

That shouldn't be a problem, a lot of people are gonna wanna cling to me anyway.

I'm just going to use them as a distraction

SANA'S POV

It's my second day hanging out with my new friend Lisa at my new school.

I'm glad my God-father allowed me to actually Sit-in and check out Pioneer High and what it has to offer.

So far so good, I like it.

Except maybe for Jennie Kim.

My first encounter with her was a bit memorable. She actually wanted to call security on me because I wasn't wearing a uniform.

So today, I made sure I'm wearing the complete and proper attire, I don't want to cause any trouble for Lisa because I know she doesn't like getting attention and wants to keep it low-key.

:
:
:

I'm in front of Lisa's house right now, waiting for her so we can go to school, I texted her that I've arrived, 5 minutes later, I saw her running towards my car, I smiled at the sight of her.

Before you get any wrong ideas, no I do not like Lisa romantically, I'm an open minded person but I don't bat for the same team, I prefer the opposite sex, I just genuinely enjoy Lisa's company, She's a very nice and sweet girl.

She waved at me and I unlocked my car door to let her in

"Hi Sana-chan, good morning!" She said smiling widely

"Good morning Lisa-chan, you ready to go?"

"Ready as I'll ever be" She responded

"Alrighty then, seat belt please" I said

She buckled up and I drove off

:

PIONEER HIGH

"I hope Miss Kim doesn't bother us today" Lisa whispered

"I hope so too but I guess just expect it? so you won't feel too bad"

We were walking down the hallway while talking about random things and laughing together when I bumped into someone.

I wasn't really looking to where I was going

"Uuughh!! Look at what you did!" I heard a tall girl say, she has a light tan skin with long black flowing hair, lightly curled, she kind of look like Shay Mitchell from Pretty Little Liars

"I'm sooo sorry i wasn't paying attention, I didn't mean to---"

"Obviously you weren't cos if you did then this wouldn't have

happen! You made me spill my coffee all over the floor! It's a mess now!" She said raising her voice

"I apologize. Look, if you want I can buy you a fresh cup" I offered

"I don't want anything from you, loser!"

"You don't need to call me names Miss, I already said I was sorry" I said with a stern voice, she got a bit surprised that I actually talked back

"You have the audacity to sass me?! Who do you think you are?!" she fired back as she approaches me, She came right into my face staring at me with such intensity

"I'm a nobody, I don't want any trouble so please stop this" I answered, standing my ground

"Sana-chan, Let it go.." I heard Lisa pleading but I didn't respond to my friend.

I want to show this girl in front of me that she can't just walk all over me

We got into a staring contest when someone intervened

"Tzuyu, what's going on here?" Some girl said with concern in her voice.

She has a cute face and she kind of reminds me of someone

"This girl here needs to watch where she's going!" The tall girl said, apparently her name is Tzuyu.

Sounds like a Foreigner's name

"Chewy calm down, I'll get you a new one, we'll have someone clean up the floor" The other girl said holding onto Tzuyu's arm

She gave me one last glare before walking away

"I'm sorry about that Miss, my friend has a bit of a temper in the morning, but she's a sweet girl" S said apologetically while giving me a small smile

"It's alright Miss, no harm done" I responded

"That's good, I'm glad" she said smiling then she looked behind me and greeted my friend

"Hello Lisa-ya! Good morning"

"Jisoo-ya, Good morning to you too" Lisa said

"And sorry.. You Are?" The girl named Jisoo asked me

"Sana, Sana Minatozaki, I'm a new student here, pleased to meet you" I said extending my hand to her

She took my hand and shook it "Kim, Jisoo. Nice to meet you Sana, anyways, I'll see you guys later, Welcome to Pioneer High" she said waving good bye

"She seems nice" I whispered to myself, Lisa heard me though

"She is, she's the complete opposite of her cousin"

"Her Cousin?"

"Yep. She's Jennie's Cousin" Lisa answered

"Ahhh.. No wonder she looks familiar, The resemblance is there, they're both really pretty" I said to her according to my observation.

"True. Anyways let's go to class Sana-chan, before Jennie sees us"

I smiled at my friend and nodded, I clung to her and we walked together to class with the tall girl lingering in my mind

Tzuyu-ssi..

Interesting.

8.) Yeodeol

FRIDAY- Day of Class Trip

JENNIE'S POV

Today is the day we go on our Class trip. Miss C. said we really didn't need to go since it's only extra credit and it's voluntary but the thing is, I wanted to learn new dance moves/steps for my team from Miss C's mentor.

I'm trying to make sure we win the Nationals this year and this is a good opportunity for me to step up as The Cheer Captain.

We still have more than 3 months before the Championships so adding a little or maybe improve our dance routines would help us give more boost to lock in 1st Place.

We'll be leaving for the class trip after school, then, after the trip, It's Winter Break and I cannot wait.

I'm going to Iceland with My Cousin Jisoo and Nayeon next Wednesday and stay there for 7 days.

They've been to Iceland before and they told me about The Northern Lights and how amazing it was.

I really wanted to see it but I didn't want to go by myself so I begged them to come with me, thankfully, it didn't take a lot of convincing

:

:

It's Lunch time and I haven't seen the Orange-haired weirdo and that bitch Sana after our first period.

I've been doing my best to ignore the Tangerine but that doesn't mean I haven't been keeping a close eye on them.

"Jennie-ya, what's going on? you're so quiet babe" Irene asked

"Huh? Oh uh..my bad, I'm just in a mood right now" I said getting caught off guard

"Is it because Lisa's hanging out with Sana again?" Jisoo whispered barely audible but loud enough for me to hear

"What do I care who that Tangelo hangs out with?!" I said raising my voice causing our other friends to give me a weird look

"What's wrong? Who are you talking about?" Rosé asked

"Nobody, let's just drop it" I responded with an annoyed tone

Rosé just raised an eyebrow and held her hands up like she's saying *I surrender* while Tzuyu gave me a knowing look, she's very observant but she didn't say anything.

Irene just shrugged and continued to eat her salad while Jisoo gave me a smirk.

She's really annoying! If only we weren't blood related, I would've already ask my Dad to kick her out of Pioneer.

"Whatever I don't need to be dealing with this! I'm leaving!" I said standing up taking my stuff with me

"Aww come on Jendeuki, don't be like that..I was just kidding" my cousin said while letting out a mocking laugh

I ignored what she said and started to walk away but not without giving her the middle finger.

:

Ughh! Stupid Jisoo, why did she have to remind me about that Oompa Loompa!

If only I didn't care about the Nationals then I wouldn't be interested in going at all to my class trip!

Just then, my musings were cut short when a certain orange haired girl caught my attention-who else but the Tangerine girl, she isn't hard to miss with her having that bright hair and all

She's sitting under a tree by herself, writing on her notebook or something?

Should I go there and talk to her?

No I probably shouldn't, what am I going to say to her?

There's nothing to talk about, we're not friends like that.

Why am I even entertaining the idea of talking to her anyway?

Even though I'm arguing with myself whether or not I should talk to Tangerine, I find myself walking towards her direction anyway and before I know it, I'm right in front of her.

"Mi-Miss Kim" She said stuttering

"Lisa" her name was all I was able to say

"So-sorry Miss Kim, I was just uhm.. leaving" She said standing up quickly while she gathers her stuff

"Where's your girlfriend Tangelo?" I asked

I frowned internally.

Saying the words '*your girlfriend*' left a bad taste in my mouth

"Sa-Sana? she's not my gi-girlfriend..anyways, uhm she left early.. her cousin needed her for something.." She answered

"I see, you guys really do keep tabs on each other huh" I said, I felt myself getting angry again but I maintained my composure.

"No, it-it's not like that...anyways Miss K-Kim, I'm going now, sorry to bother you-uhmm.." she said as she walks away fast

"Wait!" I said

She turned around slowly looking scared

"Ye-Yes Miss Kim?"

Now what Jennie?

I'm speechless.

For the first time in my life I don't know what to say..
All I know is that I didn't want her to leave yet.

"Uhm..I-ah..are you ready for the uhm..Fi-fieldtrip?"

What?? did I just stutter?!

Lisa's giving me a weird look but she answered anyway

"Yes Miss Kim..I've been looking forward to it.."

There's another awkward silence between us

"Did you eat already Tangelo?" I asked not wanting to end our conversation yet

"Uhm..yeah I ate breakfast earlier Miss Kim.."

I furrowed my eyebrows "No Lunch for you today Tangelo?"

"No.. I don't have money for it, I'm used to skipping lunch.."

"Oh is that so.. you want to uhm.. have lunch with me then?" I offered

"Huh?" She asked giving me another weird look once again

"I mean you're alone.. I'm alone..and we still have 40 minutes..so uh..let's be alone.. together" I said while I cringe internally

Gosh Jennie what the hell's wrong with you?? That was really lame..

"Oh, that's ok Miss Kim, I don't think that's a good idea.."

"Why not?" I asked a bit offended

"You don't want to be seen with me..other students might think it's.. not normal"

Oh..Right..

"How about we go out then? there's a nearby Shake Shack here, their burgers are good.. my car is just over there."

"No, uh that's ok Miss Kim, I gotta go.. bye!" She said trying to runaway from me again

"Listen Tangelo, it's either you're coming with me to eat lunch or you're going to suffer for the rest of the day. Choose" I said crossing my arms, challenging her to say 'No' to me again

"Miss Kim.. I don't have any money.."

"Did I ask if you have money, Tangelo?"

"Well..No..but..I--" She started to reason out but I cut her off

"Let's go, follow me" I said then I walk pass her

After a few steps I looked back to see if she's following me

She is

I smiled to myself.

I don't know why I'm feeling so excited all of a sudden and I feel tingling sensation on my stomach

It's probably because I'm just Hungry.

Yeah. That's it. I mean..what else could it be?

Once we reach my car, I opened the passenger door for her, she looked at me unsure of what to do

"What are you waiting for? Graduation? Get in" I said

"Th-thank you Miss Kim" she said as she gets in, I just nodded and closed the door

I started the car and drove off

The car ride was completely quiet but for some reason, I wasn't feeling awkward at all but I can totally feel her being nervous

"So Uhm.. you.. like burgers?" I asked, I really don't know why I'm so eager to start a conversation with her.

"Ye-Yeah Miss Kim, I eat anything really.."

"Great, you'll like this one..uhm, I think it's the best fast food burger right now"

"Oh..ah..that's good to know, I don't get to eat burgers much since I can't really afford it haha.." she laughed awkwardly

"I see..well, get whatever you want ok? My Treat, here's my phone, look up their menu and see what appeals to you" I said looking at her direction giving her a genuine smile

"Miss Kim, I'll repay you I promise"

"Sure." I said

After a 10 minute drive, we finally reached the burger joint, I went to the drive-thru so it'll be faster, I'm actually starving and we don't have much time to eat

I stopped at where the speaker-box is at and someone spoke to take our order

"Welcome to Shake Shack, May I take your order?"

I looked at Lisa and asked her "Have you decided what you want?"

She nodded "Yes Miss Kim, Hamburger is fine.. that's the cheapest one they have"

I rolled my eyes at her and shook my head

"Yes, give me two Shack Stack, make that a meal, large" I said

"Ok, thank you, would that be all?"

"Hold on" I said to the guy on speaker box

"Lisa, do you want anything else?" I asked her

"No, you ordered more than enough Miss Kim, Thank you" She said shyly, and If I look at her closely, she's actually blushing

How Cute..

I feel the tingling sensation in my stomach again

Huh. I must be really hungry...

"Hello?" The man on the speaker-box said

"Yeah, Sorry. No that's it. thank you" I answered

"It's alright, that'll be \$25 even, second window please, thank you"

I didn't answer and just drove to the second window to pay for our meal

After a few minutes, they gave us our order

"Tangelo, do you mind holding our food?"

"N-No Miss Kim, here I'll take it"

I gave her the paper bag and then I drove off to a nearby park so we can eat our lunch. When we got there, I parked at a shady area under a tree.

It's a bit hot today and I get irritated when there's too much heat.

"Stay there" I said to Tangelo then I got off the car to open her door for her

"Let's go sit by the tables over there by the shady area" I said walking ahead of her

I sat on the left side of the table while she sat opposite of me,

we're facing each other.

She's looking everywhere except at my direction, totally obvious that she's doing her best to avoid eye contact with me.

She put the paper bag on the middle of the table, I grabbed it and gave her her meal

"Here Tangelo" I said, she finally looked at me

She's hesitant to get her food but she eventually took it

"Th-thank you Miss Kim.. wow.. this is a big burger.." She said

"Yeah it is, if you can't finish it then just save the other half for later, I, however can finish the whole thing, I love burgers" I said proudly

"Re-really?"

"Yep!"

"But.. you're so small.." She said out of nowhere

I raised an eyebrow.

She didn't seem to realize what she just said, but once she did, she covered her mouth and I saw horror and guilt written all over her face

"I-I'm so sorry Miss Kim I didn't mean to..Oh God! I'm in trouble aren't I?" She said looking a bit pale

"Uh-huh, you are indeed" I said blankly while crossing my arms

"Miss Kim please forgive me I really didn't mean it that way!" she said bowing her head over and over

"Hey Tangelo, relax.. I was kidding" I said giggling "anyways even though I'm *Small* .. I workout a lot and don't forget I'm the Captain of the Cheerleading team so I burn a lot of calories thus.. big appetite, either that or I just have really fast metabolism" I explained then I started unwrapping my burger taking my first bite

I heard a cute little sound coming out of her

She's giggling

"What?" I asked smiling while semi chewing my food

"Nothing.. I just find it amazing that a person of your stature can actually finish a whole meal this big"

I swallowed the food that I was chewing to respond to her

"Hey! are you low-key shading me again about my height? you're only a few centimeters taller than I am Tangelo, and besides let's not focus on height, I bet if we go toe to toe right now I could totally take you" I said smirking

"Toe to Toe? funny how you use that term, then you're going to have to look up to me" She said with more confidence this time while she laughs softly

"Oh wow Tangelo, just eat your burger before it gets cold! we only have 15 minutes so hurry up" I said pretending to be annoyed but on the inside I was having fun bantering with her

"Sorry Miss Kim, I couldn't help it, you were giving me the chance to tease you so I had to take it" Lisa replied

"Yeah Yeah, Just eat your burger you Tree" I said

After our little bantering session, we focused with our food and didn't say a word to each other, but this time it wasn't awkward for the both of us, it was just a comfortable silence

:

"You Hypocrite! You were teasing me about how I could finish a whole meal when you finished yours first!" I said laughing at her

She's blushing right now due to embarrassment

"Aww Tangelo just admit it, your appetite is as big as mine" I continued teasing her

"But I--the burger was too good! no fair Miss Kim!" She said pouting

Wow.. that was really.. Adorable..

"Miss Kim?" Lisa said

"Huh? Oh. what? did you say something?" I asked

"No, nothing, you just kind of.. spaced out" She said hesitantly

Shit, she probably caught me staring at her.

Seriously what's going on with me?

I cleared my throat

"What are you talking about? anyways let's go. It's almost time for 5th Period" I said then I grabbed her hand to lead her to my car

I opened her car door again for her and then I went to the driver's seat. I started my car and then drove off

I decided I want to play with her a little so I grabbed her hand and held it, linking it with mine

"Uh.. Mi-Miss Kim?"

"Yeah?"

"My ha-hand.."

"What about it?" I asked innocently

"I uh-- They're uhm.. they're sweaty.."

"They really are.. Am I making you nervous?" I smirked looking at her direction

She just cleared her throat and didn't say anything anymore

Let's have a little more fun shall we

I started rubbing my thumb with her own ever so slowly, I could tell that she's feeling uncomfortable because she's squirming in her seat but I pretended that I didn't notice.

To be honest, despite her hands being clammy, it's very soft and warm.. I felt comfort while holding it.

"Lisa, I'm dropping you at the back of the school so we're not seen together" I said to her, I know it's mean but my reputation is on the line

"Oh, Okay Miss Kim, thank you" She said like she understands why I have to do it.

A few minutes later, we finally arrived at our School and I automatically let go of her hand.

She was about to get off my car when I grabbed her arm softly

"And Tangelo, no one is to know about The Lunch that we just had, you understand? not even Sana" I told her

"Yes Miss Kim, I understand, Thank You again, drive safe" She said giving me a sad smile

My heart ached when I saw the look on her face but I chose to ignore it, I just nodded and looked ahead then she closed my door.

I parked my car at my designated parking spot.

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath, my thoughts went to the girl that I just spent my lunch time with

What Happened?

I have no idea what came over me..

I don't even like her...

So why...

****Sigh****

"Lisa..what did you do.."

LISA'S POV

I'm on my way to my Fifth Period, I'm just grabbing some stuff from my locker for my 6th period class so I don't have to come back here since it's out of way.

My mind is all jumbled up. I just had lunch with Miss Kim. When she came up to me earlier I got really scared, I thought she was going to do something to me again.

Sana went home early so I really didn't have anybody, I was getting used to her presence that it felt so weird not having her around.

When Miss Kim asked me to eat lunch with her, I really didn't know how to respond.

I tried getting out of it but she was persistent, well, more on she kind of didn't give me any choice, it's either I eat with her or I'm dead meat--- I'm not dumb, I know what's good for me, so I chose to go with her.

It was really awkward at first because well, it's Miss Kim, what the hell am I supposed to talk with her about? ...but we kind of eventually warmed up to each other and at the end, It was quite pleasant

Except for the part where she was holding my hand.

I know that she was teasing me and she's trying to mess with my head, she couldn't really go a day without torturing me

I'm going to be honest, I wanted to jump off her car because my heart was racing and I'm starting to feel things I shouldn't feel.

But when she told me she was going to drop me off at the back of the school grounds, I understood, she didn't need to say it out loud but I know that she's embarrassed to be seen with me

I did feel hurt but she has her reputation to protect.

*****Sigh*****

I should just be thankful that she fed me..

I walked to my fifth period class, when I got there, almost all the students are already present, but I didn't see Miss Kim anywhere.

I greeted Miss C. and then I sat down in my assigned chair.

10 minutes later and she's still not in class.

Where could she be? she's going to be late if she's not here in 5 minutes..

Just then, the door swung open. It's Miss Kim together with her boyfriend Mino, he opened the door for her then she gave him a quick peck on the lips before saying good bye.

I looked away quick, I don't know why I'm feeling an ache on my chest.

She entered the class and walked pass me, she didn't seem to notice my presence, but I figured it's nothing new, it's not like she says Hi to me on a daily basis.

The class started with Miss C. telling us what to expect on the field trip, telling us how much fun we're going to have and how much we'll learn from her mentor, everyone seems to be excited, even Miss Kim.

I couldn't help but look at her direction, if you look pass her evil attitude, she's really beautiful, I mean there's no denying it, anyone with working eyes can see that

She never looked my way though, she's just focused on what Miss C. is saying

I inhaled sharply and just focused on double checking the lists the list Miss C. gave me, making sure that she has everything she needs for the field trip.

There's a lot on the list but this is better than staring at Miss Kim.

:

:

Classes are over and we're meeting up in front of the Gymnasium for roll call.

The bus that we're going to be riding in is already parked in front, the driver is just doing his last minute checks and clean ups and we're good to go.

The whole class, including Miss Kim is already here and we're just waiting.

We're leaving in about 20 minutes and I'm really stoked!

I already know that this is going to be the highlight of My Senior Year.

"Lisa-chan!" I heard a familiar voice calling me from behind, there's only one person who calls me that, I turned around and to my surprise, it was Sana.

"Sana-chan?" I said. She ran towards me and gave me a bear hug

"Lisa-chan, sorry I needed to leave early, Momo-senpai wanted me to go grocery shopping with her, that woman, I thought it was something important" Sana said breaking off our hug

"Oh, that's ok, but what are you doing here?" I asked

"I came to see you off, I wanted to say bye, I'm going to Osaka for Winter break" She said

"Oh wow! that's great Sana-chan! have fun!" I said feeling excited for my friend

She rolled her eyes playfully "I'll try, I mean I haven't even been away for a month and my parents are already insisting for me to come back, anyways that's a huge ass backpack! how long is this trip anyway?" Sana asked

"Oh, well.. it has extra clothes, water bottles, my food for this whole trip, first aid kit--"

"Ok, stop. I shouldn't have asked" she said laughing "Anyways, I don't have a Christmas present for you yet but I'll get you something nice, I promise"

"Sana-chan you don't need to do that..I--"

I was about to tell her that I didn't have anything for her either when someone stood in between us.

It's Miss Kim.

"Sana-ssi. what are you doing here? " She said with a friendly tone but you could tell she's giving out a not-so-friendly aura.

"Oh, Hi Miss Kim, I'm just saying bye to Lisa-chan" Sana said giving her a sincere smile

"Well, Say it then. It shouldn't take too long, right? I don't see the reason why it's taking you more than 10 minutes to do so" Miss Kim said moving on the side standing really close next to me.

"I'm sorry Miss Kim but, what's going on here?" Sana asked

Miss Kim stepped forward again, positioning herself in front of me, she's acting like a wall between Sana and I.

She has her arms crossed, I moved to the side and saw that she's giving an ice cold glare to Sana.

"Sana-ssi, I don't know if you're aware, but you're probably not since you're new here, so I'll explain, no students are allowed on school grounds except if you're a member of any sports team or the student council or..if you're going on a school field trip like Lisa and I, so technically, you're officially trespassing."

"I'm really not Miss Kim, I have my pass" Sana said smirking which caused Miss Kim to scowl

"That pass only applies for classes, it doesn't apply for after school shenanigans" Miss Kim spat back

The tension between the two girls is so thick you can cut it with a

knife

What's going on here?

Sana just gave her a smile and then she looked at me

"I see. I apologize Miss Kim, thank you for that info." Sana said

"No problem. Now Leave" Miss Kim said with venom in here voice

"I will, let me just say good bye to my friend Lisa" Sana replied then she approached me

"Lisa, I'll go now, I'll see you when I get back from Japan arraseo? Have fun, take care of yourself and be careful with the green-eyed monster" Sana said

"Huh?Green-eyed monster?" I asked

Sana just laughed softly and shook her head, she proceeded to give me a tight hug but she pulled away quick and then she kissed me on the cheek.

It's usually what she does when she says goodbye to me so it's not anything new but apparently... it's frowned upon for some people..and by some people I meant Miss Kim.

She was surprised-- her eyes widened.. but then, Her demeanor suddenly changed.

She gave me an unforgiving glare, burning holes through my head, her jaws and her fists are clenched and I can feel rage coming out of her body..

She looks really really upset.

Then out of nowhere, She walked pass us bumping my right shoulder hard, I almost fell but Sana caught me

"Owww.." I said while I rubbing the affected area

"You alright there sis?" Sana asked worriedly

"Ye-yeah.. anyways Sana what did you mean by Green-eyed monster?" I asked, I really don't know what she meant, is there a monster to our destination?? I'm freaking out a bit now..

She laughed and shook her head while patting my left shoulder

"Oh sweet, innocent Lisa, it's for you to find out.. anyways, gotta go. bye!" She said then she walked away without looking back

I sighed.

I'm so confused and scared..

I hope the green-eyed monster doesn't get me..

9.) Ahop

A/N: Guys!! I'm sure you already know this but let me just officially say that this Jennie is Very Confused, Dramatic, Sensitive and She's Very Immature (When it comes to Lisa hehe)

NEW READERS: DO NOT ASK ME FOR UPDATES BECAUSE I WILL MUTE YOU.

That's All.

JENNIE'S POV

I put on a calm face and went to my locker to get a few things, while doing so, My Boyfriend saw me and greeted me with a back hug and a kiss on the cheek.

"Hey babe, Where have you been? I was looking for you, I was calling and texting but you weren't answering.."

"Hey. yeah, sorry about that, I actually went out to eat"

"Oh ok. Well, I'll walk you to your fifth period then" he offered breaking off the hug and then I faced his direction

"Sure." I said giving him a tight lip smile

"Here baby let me carry your things for you"

I smiled again and gave him my purse and my books

I didn't want to see Lisa yet so I told Mino I want to take a detour to a longer route.

Apparently, he got the wrong idea and he asked me if I wanted to have a make-out session

"No.I'm not in the mood Mino"

"Come on please? 5 minutes? I miss your lips babe, and besides, we have a game today and kissing you gives me good luck " He

asked pouting

I playfully rolled my eyes at him, he's full of shit but he's cute when he begs

"Fine, no longer than 5 minutes okay?"

"Yes! Ok I promise. that classroom looks empty, let's go" he said as he pulls me gently.

We went in the empty classroom and locked the door to do our thing.

We stayed there longer than expected, I had to push him away in order for him to stop attacking my lips

"Stop. I said 5 minutes" I said slapping his face away from me

"Aww come on babe"

"No. You need to control yourself" I said while fixing myself up, I'm using my phone's camera to check my make up.

"Sorry baby, it's just that, you'll be gone for the weekend and I'm feeling a bit needy" he said

"So? What's that supposed to mean?" I asked pretending to care

"It means no sex for two days"

"And? Why don't you do what guys usually do? D.I.Y. Mino"

"Or.. maybe I could find a willing volunteer to fill in the void" he teased but that shit doesn't work on me.

I'm not a jealous or possessive person when it comes to my boyfriends, My Parents raised me better than that. I don't beg for people to be In My Life.

I'm not worried. I know who I am and I know what effect I have on people, Especially with men. There's lots of guys out there who are more than willing to be my next victim so I really couldn't care less if he cheats on me, He's not special.

I just shrugged then I smirked at him

"Go ahead Mino, nobody's stopping you, if you want to fuck

around with some slut then be my guest, it's not like you're irreplaceable" I answered him then I walked out the classroom

"Wait! Babe! I'm just kidding!" He said grabbing my arm

"Let Go of Me" I said coldly

He was surprised by my response and he hesitantly let go of my arm.

"Grab me like that one more time Mino and we're done. You're not good enough if you think you can man-handle me so do not flatter yourself, do you understand? This will be your first and final warning" I told him and he just nodded

"Good now carry my stuff and let's go"

"Babe? I'm so sorry I didn't mean to say those things to you, You know I'd never cheat on you.." he said but it just came out as noise to me.

What doesn't he understand? He's not a loss but I really don't want to deal with his sentimental ass so I let it go

"That's fine Mino" was all I said to him.

"I Love You Jennie, I hope you know that" he said sincerely

I didn't respond.

I do know that.

I know he loves me and he would never in a million years cheat on me.

A lot of girls throw themselves at him but he never gave them the time of day, I know I'm his priority.

If anything, I'm probably going to be the one who's going to do the cheating first, I mean, I've done it before, It's not hard, and besides, he doesn't have the guts to mess up the chance that I gave him, not to be conceited but he's practically kissing the ground that I walk on.

:

"We're here baby, I'll see you later before you go on your weekend trip" he said, we're in front of my 5th period class

"You don't need to do that"

"You don't want me to say bye?" He asked sadly

"No. We don't need to be around each other all the time"

"Jennie, please don't break up with me because of what I said, I would never ruin us" he said with a pleading voice

"Mino quit being clingy, seriously you're suffocating me" I said rolling my eyes at him

"I'm sorry Jennie" Mino said as he opens the door

I felt a little bad for giving him a hard time so I gave him a peck on the lips which seem to brighten his mood a hundred fold

I entered the class and I saw Tangelo but I pretended that I didn't notice her. I felt her eyes on me but I just ignored her.

For the whole class I never dared to look at her direction, I'm just doing my best to concentrate on what Miss C's telling us.

I hate to admit it but I had a good time with Tangelo earlier, she has a calm and welcoming aura, I enjoyed her company but I would never in a million years tell her that, Her world is far different than mine and I'd be damned if I let her in.

:

:

We're by the Gymnasium waiting to get in the bus for our weekend trip.

I was talking to a couple of my classmates who I became friends with when I noticed that Tangerine is talking to someone

Is that.. Sana?

What is she doing here? And how long is she gonna be here?

10 Minutes..

10 Long Minutes!

That's how long Sana's been here.

I've been watching them ever since they caught my attention

They've had enough interaction for today and I for one am getting tired of looking at them

It really irritates me when the freak Tangerine is being friendly with someone. I don't like it one bit and because of that, I find myself walking towards their direction and I ended up standing in between Tangelo and Sana to cut off their conversation.

"Sana-ssi. what are you doing here?" I asked her sounding friendly but my aura says otherwise

"Oh, Hi Miss Kim, I'm just saying bye to Lisa-chan"

I hate it when she calls Tangelo '*Lisa-chan*' we're not in Japan for Fuck's Sake!

"Well, Say it then. It shouldn't take too long, right? I don't see the reason why it's taking you more than 10 minutes to do so" I said coldly

She doesn't need to stay here and hog the Tangelo's attention all to herself because some people might want Tangelo's attention, and by someone I meant *Me*.

I moved to the side and stood really close next to Tangelo making sure Sana doesn't do anything stupid like make a move on her.

"I'm sorry Miss Kim but, what's going on here?" The Japanese bitch asked

How fucking clueless.

I want you to leave Tangelo Alone!

I stood in front of Tangelo again, blocking her view of Sana. Tangelo doesn't need to be looking at her for more than 10 minutes, Tangelo's eyes should just focus her attention at the back of my head, it's much better to look at than Sana's stupid face anyway.

"Sana-ssi, I don't know if you're aware, but you're probably not since you're new here, so I'll explain, no students are allowed on school grounds except if you're a member of any sports team or the student council or..if you're going on a school field trip like Lisa and I, so technically, you're officially trespassing." I said with a smug tone

"I'm really not Miss Kim, I have my pass" She said proudly

"That pass only applies for classes, it doesn't apply for after school shenanigans" I spat back

She's really pissing me off!

I want her to leave!

I don't want her around Lisa!

We stared each other down, I'm not going to back off, she needs to know her place and back the fuck up.

"I see. I apologize Miss Kim, thank you for that info." She said but I know she was being sarcastic.

"No problem. Now Leave"

"I will, let me just say good bye to my friend Lisa" Sana replied then she turned her attention on the Tangelo

She's saying something to Tangelo, I tried to eavesdrop but It was barely audible, all I heard was something about green-eyes and then all of a sudden, Sana did something unexpected that would most likely ruin this whole trip for me..

She Kissed Tangelo's cheek right in front me!

I couldn't believe my eyes.

I know it's only on the cheek but it made me feel really angry

I wanted to slap the both of them!

I couldn't take it.

I can't be around them anymore so I walked away from them making sure I bumped shoulders with that Stupid Tangerine Freak!

I Hate You Lisa!
I Really Really Hate you!

:

:

On The Bus

Stupid Tangelo! What was she trying to do?!
She's making me mad that's what!
Why does she hang around with that..that Japanese Whore anyway!

And don't even get me started on that bitch!
What was that kiss on Tangerine's cheek about? And she did it right in front of me too like she's doing it on purpose!
What the hell is her problem?!
She liked it didn't she?
Tangerine liked the Kiss.. and it looked like she's used to getting those kisses from Sana..
Tangerine wasn't even surprised when she did it!
Are they dating? does Tangelo even like girls?!
Is Sana her type?

But what does that bitch have that I don't?
I'm more beautiful, rich, popular and I'm sure I'm way smarter than her!

Stupid Tangerine weirdo! You're going to pay for that little stunt that you pulled!

Tangelo is sitting in front of the bus next to Miss C., She's on the aisle side taking a nap, I'm sitting right behind her, making sure I'm close enough.

I'm not letting her out of my sight.

"Jennie?"

"Huh? What? sorry, did you say something?" I asked the person next to me, it's Kai.

He chuckled "I've been talking to you for the past 15 minutes and I just now realized that I'm talking to myself"

"Yeah. Sorry about that" I said but I really don't feel bad at all.

"How are things with you and Mino?" He asked

"Good." I replied shortly, I really don't want to have any small talk.

He chuckled "You really like Mino huh?"

I looked at him irritated. I slept with him *once* over summer vacation at one of our common friend's party.

I got really drunk, Mino was not around and I was in need, He was an easy target so I chose him and he's been bugging me to be with him ever since instead of Mino.

"I'm sorry but I don't see why it's any of your business" I answered him annoyed

"I-My bad Jennie, it's just that.. I uhm.." Kai started but he stopped

"What? get to the point" I said getting impatient by the second

"Jennie, I know I already told you this but I'm going to say it again, I have strong feelings for you, I love you.." He said sincerely

Seriously? I don't have any time for this!

Un-freakin-believable, You sleep with the guy once and he's in-love.

What kind of a person falls in love after having sex?

How Stupid.

If only I knew that he'd get attached like a puppy then I would've chosen someone else.

"Kai, I don't know if I was clear to you before but I'm going to say it again, I'm not interested with your feelings alright? Let's move on, you're only hurting yourself" I said bluntly

"But Jennie I--"

"Look, this is not really a good time and place to be confessing your love for me, if you haven't noticed we're on a bus, leave me alone Kai. I don't like you, I never liked you"

"You mean that one night we had together never meant anything

to you?!" He said raising his voice a little

He has a lot of girls fawning over him and wants to sleep with him, but I know what this is about though, he just wants me because he can't have me.

How do I know? Have you ever heard of the term *Talkers = Doers*? That's exactly what I am.

Tch. I can play this game better.

Just then I saw Lisa making a movement and turning her head a bit to where Kai and I are seated.

I didn't want her to hear about my one time summer fling with Kai. I need for him to stop talking or Lisa might think Something's up

"Lower your voice! No! it never meant anything to me! it happened only once and now you're telling me that you love me?! I'm pretty sure I wasn't the first girl you had sex with and right now you're really embarrassing yourself! you're acting like a love-sick virgin!" I angrily whispered at him.

Good thing other students are sound asleep as well while others mess around at the back of the bus so no one really noticed what was going on between Him and I.

Kai didn't say anything anymore and just sulked in his seat

"Sit somewhere else. I want to be left alone." I ordered him

He reluctantly stood up and went at the back of the bus.

That was close, I hope Lisa didn't hear anything.

Stupid Kai, why does he have to be so dramatic?

:

:

3 more hours and we finally reached our destination.

"Alright Class! I want you guys to line up and go down the bus one by one in an orderly fashion" Miss C. said and then she went down the bus with Lisa following her.

I got off the bus as well standing at the front of the line.

"Ok before I introduce you guys to my mentor, I'm going to assign you to your rooms, you're going to be rooming in with one of your classmates, same sex of course"

When I heard that, my ears perked up.

I'm Hoping I'll get paired with Lisa, not that I want to be roommates with her so we can have some sort of bond, No, I don't have any intention on being friends with her, that's gross! more on..I want to mess with her more while where on this trip.

Yeah.. that's it.

"Miss Jennie, since you're already in front, I'll start with you, I'll have you room in with...Miss Yeri. "

My mood went to slump right away, but I didn't let it show.

I just smiled and nodded, Yeri came up to me and said Hi, she's one of the people that I became friends with while I'm in dance class, she's a pleasant and sweet girl but I can't help but feel disappointed.

After I found out who my roommate's going to be, I listened carefully on who Lisa's going to be paired with, maybe I can talk the person into switching with me but unfortunately, she was paired with one person I couldn't persuade

"...and Lisa? You're rooming in with me" Miss C. said.

I saw a sigh of relief on her face and she smiled at our teacher.

"Ok guys, let's go to the hotel, It's going to rain hard tonight and we don't want to get ourselves wet. Check yourselves in. Get some rest because we're going to start our day early tomorrow" Miss C. added

"Jennie-ya, let's go" Yeri said as she pulled me in the Hotel.

:

:

After we checked in, everybody went in their rooms to get some rest including Yeri, I was feeling a bit antsy so I decided to walk around the Hotel, while doing so, I saw the Tangelo sitting by the Lobby with her huge backpack,

She's probably waiting for Miss C. since they're the ones who checks in

last.

I walked up to her, not really sure what to say or do once I get near her.

I just want to see her up close.

"Hey." I said, she looked at my direction a bit surprised but she smiled at me anyway which made my heart flutter..

I cleared my throat to calm my nerves

"Hi Miss Kim, can I...help you?" Lisa asked

"It's really pouring outside isn't it?" I started

Wait a minute, did I just seriously talk about the weather? How lame can I get?

"Uh..yeah.. There's supposedly going to be a thunderstorm tonight, good thing we got here just in time" Tangelo responded which made me feel relieved.

She didn't give me any impression that she was weirded out about my chosen topic.

There's a long pause between us and It was getting a bit weird.

I'm just standing awkwardly in front of her and she just kept clearing her throat and scratching her nape

"I'm surprised Sana didn't come with us on this trip" I started

I'm well aware that I'm stirring up drama again but I couldn't help myself

"She actually wanted to but Uhm..it was a bit too late since everything's already set and there's limited slots" The Tangelo said with a hint of sadness in her voice causing a pain in my chest

"You really want her to be here don't you?"

"Miss Kim.. Please I don't want any trouble.." Tangelo said with a hint of worry in her voice

I chuckled and asked her "Trouble? I was just asking if you wanted her here, why are you so defensive Lisa?"

"Ok, fine. I do want her here, there I said it, please Miss Kim let's have a peaceful weekend"

"You just assume the worst in me don't you?!" I asked her feeling hurt and offended

Tangelo's eyes softened and there's a look of guilt in her eyes "No, It's not that Miss Kim..I apologize I didn't mean to make you feel that way"

"Well You're too late! Tell me something and be honest with me, do you like her?!" I asked raising my voice

"Who? Sana?" Lisa asked confused

"Are you really that Slow?? Who else are we talking about here?! Now quit stalling and answer me!" I asked now with more aggression

"Miss Kim Please there's no need for you to get upset.." She said with a calm demeanor

I sighed and closed my eyes while massaging my temple "You not answering me makes me really think something's up with you two"

"There's nothing going on between her and I Miss Kim" Lisa said but I know she's lying

"Then why can't you answer me if you like her or not?!" I demanded

"But Miss..Isn't it obvious? Of course I like her"

"You..Like her like her?" I asked again, I couldn't believe what I just heard.

"Yes" she said without even hesitating

As soon as she confirmed to me that she has feelings for Sana, I ran out the Lobby and went outside, I don't care if it's raining hard or how dark it is

I don't know where I'm going but I can't stay with her for one

more second.

I don't care if I'm being overdramatic over this whole situation, all I know is that I can't stand that Stupid Tangelo's presence anymore and I need to be as far away from her as possible.

She said she likes Sana without even hesitating. If that's the case then I hope they'd be happy together

Lisa You Fool!

I Hate You!!

10.) Yeol

LISA'S POV

"Miss Kim! Wait! Don't go outside it's dangerous out there!" I yelled but she didn't hear me

I ran outside to chase her but she's too fast.

I'm doing my best to keep up with her pace but it's hard because I'm also carrying my backpack with me.

"Miss Kim! Stop! Please! Don't go by the woods!" I yelled again but nothing, she just kept going

The Location of the Hotel that we're in is miles away from the city and is surrounded by trees.

This place is supposed to be for retreats and relaxation but nobody could've really predicted this heavy rain.

It's really dark and the rain is pouring really hard, I could barely see anything now but I kept my eye on the brunette so I don't lose her.

I've been chasing her for God knows how long and I'm running out of Stamina.

Damn, that woman can run.

"Miss Kim Come on! This isn't funny anymore we're already in the middle of the woods! Stop!"

And she did stop, but not because I asked her to but because she tripped

"Miss Kim!" I said hurriedly running towards her

"Oh no.. Miss Kim Your right ankle! It's bleeding really bad!" I said to her

"Leave me alone you stupid orange dweeb! Aaahhh!!" She said as she grimaced in pain while she covers her right ankle with her hand.

"Miss Kim here, let me help you, can you stand up?" I asked her

"No! I said leave me alone! Why don't you go to your whore!" She yelled again

Whore?

Who is she talking about?

"Miss Kim, come on you're injury is pretty bad, let me help you" I said putting her arm around my shoulder while my other hand on her waist, I stood up slowly so I don't hurt her more but it didn't work

"Ahhh! Shit my ankle!" She cried

"Sorry Miss Kim! I'll be more careful this time ok? can you walk a few steps?" I asked

"Ye-Yeah.. I think so..uugghhh!!" She groaned

"Put your weight on me Miss Kim, I'll support you, try not to put any pressure on your ankle" I instructed her and she nodded

We walked for about 30 minutes hoping that we could find our way back but it was so dark that I can barely see and the heavy rain isn't really helping either.

I feel like we're going around in circles, until I saw a little light coming from what looks like a Cabin

"Miss Kim! There! Hold on I think I see a place that we could stay

in, bare with me alright?" I said to her.

The walk to the cabin is pretty steep, it was a struggle since I'm carrying my backpack and supporting Miss Kim as well but I powered through until we reached our destination.

"Hello?! Anyone there?! Hello! We need help! My friend is injured and she's bleeding pretty bad! Please!" I yelled but nobody's answering, even when I'm knocking really hard, still nothing

"Lisa, I don't think anybody's in there" Miss Kim said

"But there's a little Lamp and the fire place is burning"

"The owner probably left but they didn't anticipate the heavy rain either, they're most likely stuck somewhere too" she said

She has a point. It's been raining hard non-stop for hours now and I'm not going to be surprised if there's going to be a flood after this.

I looked at Miss Kim and she's really in pain

I gotta do something

I barged in the door hoping I can break in.

I threw my body against it with all my might multiple times and after many attempts, it finally opened

"Can't believe that actually worked! ---Come on Miss Kim let's get inside" I said as I carry her, this time bridal style

"Tangelo no, we're invading someone's privacy"

"I'll explain to them later, I'll take the blame, but for now we need to tend to your injury" I said while I go in carrying her.

The cabin was pretty small, like it can only accommodate 3 people max.

It's clean and cozy but it looks like there are no supplies whatsoever, It does have a twin size bed with two pillows and a blanket and a fireplace and a tiny kitchen with sink.

I really don't have time to survey the place because my focus is to help out my injured classmate.

"Miss Kim, I'll sit you down by the bed alright?" I said and she nodded

"Uunngghh! Owwww!! Fuck!" She said as I sit her down gently

"I'm sorry Miss Kim, May I take a look at your right ankle?" I asked her

"Ye-Yes but please, be gentle, I hurt it pretty bad" She asked

"I will, don't worry.." I said as I assessed how bad her injury was

She sustained a big and deep cut on her right ankle and it's swelling a little bit.

"Miss Kim the cut is pretty deep but I don't think you sprained it" I said to her

I saw relief written on her face as soon as I told her that it probably wasn't a sprain

"Let me just close the door okay? It's getting pretty cold and we don't want wild animals coming in here" I said then I stood up and closed it.

The door was still ok, the locks are just a little old that's why I was able to break in but other than that, I'm still able to close it.

I saw a wooden chair on the side and I tilted it by the door knob so it can serve as extra lock, this somehow gives me a sense of security for Miss Kim and I.

I opened my backpack and took out my first aid kit, It was a gift from my dad.

Him and I used to go camping a lot when I was little so first aid kits

are a must, and carrying a first aid kit around always comes in handy and that proves to be true, given the situation Miss Kim and I are in right now

"Ok Miss Kim, I'm going to clean it and then I'll put a gauze on it and wrap it with Kerlix, please do your best to endure the pain because it will hurt" I explained to her

She didn't protest or anything so I took that as my 'Go' signal

I took out one piece of gauze and folded it twice then I poured a bit of alcohol

"Ok Miss Kim, here I go" I said giving her a heads up

"Aaaahhh! Fuck! That stings so bad!" She cried out in pain for the nth time

"Sorry Miss Kim, I'll do my best to keep it clean and make it quick" I said as I wipe her ankle.

I folded another gauze and put a bit more alcohol and repeated the same action, again, she cried in pain but I ignored it.

I repeated this about 3 more times then I topped it with a clean gauze and wrapped her right ankle with a Kerlix wrap

"Is the wrap too tight Miss Kim?" I asked her

"No, it's just right.. Thank You, Lisa." She said as she wipes her tears

"You're soaking wet Miss Kim, I have extra clothes and a towel in my backpack, I suggest you change before you catch a cold" I said to her

"Yeah, that's a goo-good idea, I'm free-freezing right now"

I then took out my extra shirt and pajamas and my towel when I realized something

"Miss Kim, this is going to be uhm-awkward but uh..I don't have any extra underwear, do you mind go-going commando?" I asked awkwardly

She looked at me and she turned pale but she knows she doesn't have any choice so she just nodded, I then handed her my extra clothing

"Turn around Tangelo, I don't want you seeing me naked" she said with a demanding tone

"Way ahead of you Miss Kim, ju-just let me know when you're done so I can pick up the used gauze(s)"

She didn't say anything but I heard movements.

After about 10 minutes, she's finally done

"Tangelo, I'm finished."

"Ok Miss Kim, can you give me your clothes so I can put them near the fire place to dry them up"

She nodded and gave her wet clothes to me, there's another extra chair so I laid down her clothes on it and put the chair near the fire pit

"Aren't you going to change Tangelo?"

"I-uhm about to, I'm just going to clean up so the owner doesn't get upset" I replied as I pick up the used gauze(s) and wraps.

I have extra plastic bags in my backpack, it's meant to be my dirty clothes.

"Wow, I should probably change your name from Tangelo to Dora, that backpack has everything"

"Ye-yeah, I know it's weird but this is just how I do it..me and my dad used to go camping a lot so this kind of stuck on me" I said to her but she didn't say any more comments

When I finished cleaning up, I went to the toilet room to change, It's a bit cramped but it will do..

Just then I heard my stomach growling, I didn't get to eat yet since I was helping out Miss C. with organizing the activities

"Miss Kim? Are you hungry?"

She nodded shyly as a response

"Ok, I packed sandwiches for this trip, I also have a couple of cup noodles with me and some hard boiled eggs to go with it..which one do you want? Or do you want both?"

"Cup noodles, I need something to warm me up.." she said

I gave her a small smile "Ok Miss Kim, coming right up"

"Don't tell me you have a thermos of hot water with you" she said

"Uhm-yeah, I actually do.. just in case they didn't have a microwave.." I answered shyly

"Wow..that's it, tell me the truth, you're the real life Dora aren't you?" She said

I just blushed and smiled at her

I started preparing her noodles and then I handed it to her

"This is pretty great Tangelo, you make some mean cup noodles" she said

"I'm glad you're enjoying it Miss Kim, just let me know if you're still hungry, I still have my sandwiches" I said to her

"What? You really think I eat that much?" She asked raising an eyebrow

"N-no of course not Miss Kim! It's just that we didn't have any dinner yet and you're injured so I figured you need more food, I'm very sorry I don't mean to offend you" I said feeling bad

"Whatever. Anyways aren't you going to eat?" She asked

"No, I'm fine Miss Kim, I ate earlier" I lied.

The food that I packed is just enough for this whole trip and If I eat now then we'll be short of food, who knows how long we'll be here,

and besides, I'm used to skipping meals anyway.

She just looked at me suspiciously but then she gave up and continued to eat quietly, I went to sit by the fireplace to warm myself up, I'm really worried, we might get in trouble for running away and Miss C. is probably wondering where I am right now..

"Tangelo.."

"Yes, Miss Kim?" I stood up to approach her

"I uhm.. here, I'm done eating, you can have the rest"

"Huh? but you barely ate half of it Miss"

"I had a big lunch earlier, I tend not to over-eat during dinner time"

"A-are you sure Miss?" I asked her just to be sure

"Yes. I'm sure, now eat."

"Ok...then I guess I'll eat this, I don't want it to go to waste.."

"Hey Tangerine, do you happen to have an extra toothbrush and toothpaste with you? I want to brush my teeth before going to sleep.."

"Yes Miss, hold on let me find it, it's somewhere at the bottom of my bag" I said as I rummage through my stuff

Oh, there you are

"Here Miss, I have extra water bottles too if u want to use it for brushing"

"Geez Tangelo doesn't your back hurt by carrying all these stuff with you?"

"It does make my back hurt a bit but I'm used to it Miss" I said smiling at her

She just shook her head and took the stuff that she asked for and went by the sink.

When she was done, I brushed my teeth as well.

I'm tired.

Today was a really long day, considering we were coming from school, went on a 4 hour trip and the marathon that we just did?

I need to sleep bad

"Miss, can I have this pillow?" I asked her

"Yeah, you don't need to ask Tangelo"

"Ok, goodnight Miss" I told her and then I positioned myself to lay down on the floor

"What do you think you're doing?" She asked me

"I'm.. going to lay down on the floor to sleep.." I said timidly

She looked at baffled "Are you serious? the floor is really dirty and it's cold, how are you supposed to get a good night sleep?"

"Oh, that's ok Miss, I'm used to laying down on the floor" I reassured her

"No, you're laying here in bed with me" Miss Kim demanded

"It's alright Miss I swear I---"

"Tangelo, why do you insist on laying down on the floor? I'm not going to sexually harass you if that's what you're thinking"

"N-No! of course not Miss, I don't think that way" I said defensively

"Good, now lay down, and don't do anything funny or you're dead" she said threateningly

"I-I won't Miss.."

She glared and rolled her eyes at me then proceeded to lay down on

the bed with her back turned against me.

I laid down and I turned opposite of her as well and closed my eyes,
I drifted off to sleep right away

:

:

"Unngghh..Ugghh..***Hah****Hah***"

I woke up to the sound of someone groaning.

I looked to my side and saw Miss Kim breathing heavily and She's shivering, her face is red and she's sweating profusely

"Miss? Miss!" I shook her a little, I put my palm on her forehead and she's burning up

"Miss Kim! wake up! please!" I yelled and shook her a bit

She opened her eyes but she looks like she's in a daze

"Ta-Tangelo.. I'm no-not feeling so well.." She said as she continues to breathe heavy

"I know Miss Kim, keep your eyes open okay? I need you to take medicine for me, I have tylenol on my first aid kit, let me go get it"

I got off the bed as quickly as I could, I opened my first aid kit and took two 325mg Tylenol and a bottled water

"Here Miss , drink the tylenol, this should help with the fever, open your mouth for me" I said as I help her sit up so she can take the medication properly

Miss Kim did as she was told, I put the tylenol in her mouth and help her drink water

"Did the medicine go down Miss?" I asked and she nodded and closed her eyes again

"Good, I'm glad" I smiled feeling relieved, I then helped her lay back down on the bed

"Get some more rest Miss, I'll watch over you" I said

"Tangelo, hold my ha-hand, I'm scared..don't le-leave..okay?"

"I won't Miss, I'll be right here.." I said then I took her hand as she drifted back to sleep

:
:

It's been approximately 3 hours since Miss Kim took the Tylenol. She's still a bit warm so I decided to just monitor her just in case she might need another dose of medication.

I have a towel on my hand and I would wipe the cold sweat off of her forehead and her neck, she would still groan every now and then but at least she didn't sound like she's in pain anymore.

It's still raining hard outside, the wind is blowing hard and I heard some branches falling off the trees.

I'm scared because I don't know what's going to happen to us but I know that I need to get it together for Miss Kim's sake.

:

3 More Hours Later

I felt on Miss Kim's forehead again, her temperature went up once more. I decided to wake her up and forced her to eat my packed sandwich so she could drink tylenol, she protested at first because she wanted to get some more sleep but I insisted

"Miss come on, you won't get any better if you don't eat" I said

"No..I want to sleep! leave me alone Tangelo.." she said weakly

"Miss, I promise, after you eat and drink your medication I'll leave you alone and you could get some more sleep but for now just please.. you still have fever"

"Uuughh..Fine.."

I helped her sit up and then I fed her the sandwich, after that I gave her another 650mg of Tylenol.

The Rain has no plans of stopping at all, I went to look outside earlier and there's high levels of water, Good thing the cabin is perched a bit high up or else we probably would've been swept by the water and drowned.

There's no obvious trail, everything is either completely covered by water or trees that have fallen because of strong winds.

Miss Kim is still sleeping, I checked her earlier and she didn't feel warm anymore. I then checked her right ankle, the dressing is still intact but there's traces of dry blood outside of it, and her ankle still looks a bit swollen as well

I'm gonna have to change the dressing again as soon as she wakes up, I did the best I could to clean up her wound, I'm hoping it didn't get infected..

It's probably around 9 or 10 in the morning already and Miss Kim is starting to wake up, She sat up slowly and stretched her arms while yawning and then she looked around looking a bit confused

"Good Morning Miss" I greeted her

She looked at me a bit surprised

"Oh no.. it wasn't a dream, I *AM* stuck in a cabin" She said

I mentally laughed because I would never dare do it in front of her face, I got lucky when we had lunch together yesterday but I wouldn't repeat that again.

"Miss Kim, are you hungry?" I asked her

She nodded "Yeah, a bit.."

"Oh Ok, well uhm.. I still have some cup noodles and eggs..would that be alright?" I asked cautiously

She nodded "I'll eat it, I'm really not a picky eater"

"I'll prepare it for you then" I said

"What about you?" She asked furrowing her eyebrows

I smiled at her "I'm good Miss, You need it more than I do"

"We're sharing Tangelo" Miss Kim said

"It's alright Miss Kim I promise" I re-assured her

"And I'm telling you it's not alright, you're going to get sick too if you don't eat"

I didn't say anything anymore so I just nodded a 'yes'

:
:

"Tangelo. Say ahhhh..." Miss Kim said

"Wh-what? No Miss..I can do it myself.." I said to her

"Come on please?" She said giving me a puppy dog look

"It-it's really alright Miss.. you don't need to do that.." I said shyly

"You're grossed out is that it? because you don't want to get sick"
She said sounding offended

"Wha-what? no! not at all! I happen to have a strong immune system.. it's just that you might get more sick if we share utensils" I explained to her

"Whatever, I bet you'll share with Sana though am I right?" she said with a dark tone of voice

What's her problem with Sana? she doesn't even know her..

"I won't Miss Kim.." I said

She beamed and said "Then prove it, say ahhh"

I exhaled sharply and opened my mouth, I figured it's best to just do what she says, that way, she won't get pissed off and I'll have my peace, Arguing with her is the last thing on my mind.

I really need to get us out of here, I bet they're worried sick about Miss Kim being gone and I feel bad for her because she's injured and she needs proper treatment for her wound..

****Sigh****

I hope this rain would stop soon..

11.) Yeolhana

A/N: Cringe Ahead

JENNIE'S POV

"Oooww.. Tangerine do it slowly will you? that really hurts" I said grimacing in pain

Lisa's changing the wound dressing on my right ankle

"I'm sorry Miss..it's almost off.." She said as she concentrates

"Ok Miss, I'm going to clean it up, it's going to sting a lot so do your best to bare with it.."

I didn't respond to her anymore so she started cleaning my wound with alcohol and gauze.

She did it very carefully but it was still painful.. I had to bite down on my knuckles to prevent myself from screaming

After about 5 minutes, Tangelo's done. She's just now wrapping my ankle and securing it with tape.

"How's that Miss?" She asked

"It-it's good, thanks.. owwww..."

"Miss are you alright? Would you like some pain relievers?" She asked, her eyes full of worry.

My heart started fluttering again

Why is she so nice to me when all I did was torture her for the past months that we've known each other..

"No, I'm fine, I can tolerate the pain, I don't want to keep taking tylenol, I might end up damaging my liver, thank you though" I said to her and she just nodded

"It's still raining hard.. they're probably worried sick about you Miss.." Lisa said in a daze

"Worried about *US* you mean" I corrected her

"Ye-Yeah.. I guess so.." Lisa said giving me a sad smile and I felt bad for her for some reason..

"My phone died on me, it looks like it sustained major water damage"

"Don't worry Miss, as soon as this rain stops, I'll look for help"

"Tangelo, You're not planning on leaving me here by myself are you?"

"No of course not Miss, I would save you first before I save myself" She said with so much sincerity in her voice.

I couldn't believe she would actually say something like that

"Lisa.. I'm sorry, it's my fault we got into this mess.." I said teary eyed

"No Miss, it's not your fault alright? don't blame yourself.."

She sat down next to me patting my right shoulder

"How's my ankle?" I asked her changing the subject

"Still a bit swollen but it's looking much better than how it was last night" She said smiling which made me feel relieved

"Good.. I can't afford to be crippled"

"The Cheering Competition right?"

I looked at her a bit surprised she knows about it. She looks like the kind of person who doesn't really care about any after school activities

"I-ahh.. I'm sorry I didn't mean to be invasive Miss.. I know you're the team captain and you're competing for the Nationals so I--"

"No, it's fine, yeah you're right, it's because of the Nationals, I want my team to be the Champions before I graduate"

"I see.. but no worries Miss Kim, you'll heal after winter break is over just make sure to take care of your wound.."

"Yeah.. thanks again Tangelo..for..taking care of me"

"No problem Miss, I do owe you after all, you fed me good burger"
She said beaming

I giggled

"When we get out of here I'll buy you a dozen" I told her

She blushed and said "No it's alright Miss you don't need to do that..I was just kidding"

"I insist. it's no big deal, Tangelo. You've been sharing your food with me so It's only right that I do the same" I told her

"But I wasn't really helping you to get something back, I guess it's just my nature to help.."

"And you're doing a really great job"

"Th-Thanks Miss Kim.. that really means a lot.."

"So. Since it looks like we're going to be stuck here for a while.. how about..we get to know each other a bit?"

"Oh ok.. sure" She said a bit hesitant

"I'll go first.. what's your favorite color?" I asked her

"Yellow" She answered

"Oh, I thought for sure it was going to be orange" I said jokingly

She let out a genuine laugh and shook her head

"No.. if anything orange is an eyesore"

"Then why is your hair like that then Tangelo?"

She sighed deeply "It's because of my co-worker. I worked at a community pool as a lifeguard and a cleaner over the summer, my co-worker thought it'd be funny if I had orange hair so he mixed orange dye in my shampoo"

"Oh.. so that's the reason...Why didn't you just have a professional dye it back to black or at least a less brighter color?"

"I tried Miss.. but it's going to cost me a fortune, I can't really afford it" She said sadly

"Is that so.." was all I could say to her

"Yes, but I finally earned enough money to have it dyed back to something a little less bright"

"Oh that's good news then, you work?"

"Yes Miss, I work temporarily at a dance studio after school, I'm thankful for the job 'cos I'm actually helping my father now with bills"

"Good, I'm glad"

"My turn to ask, what's your favorite color Miss?"

"Mine is Black" I answered her

"K, your turn Tangerine. Do you listen to any K-pop group?"

"Yes, exclusively BlackPink" She said proudly "How about you Miss?"

"BlackPink for me too, Who's your favorite?" I asked her

"I like the Main Rapper Ruby Jane, You?" She answered

"The Main Dancer Pranpriya, she's actually the one who inspired

me to give dancing a Go" I said smiling

She smiled and nodded "Oh..I like her too because she's Thai, like me"

"Wait what? You're Thai?" I asked

"Uh-huh, I mean..Im Half Thai, Half Korean.."

"Ahh.. so Manoban is a Thai last name, Cool. Do you know how to speak Thai?"

"Uhm, only a little bit Miss, I understand it completely though.. my father would talk to me in Thai most of the time but I respond in Korean"

"Interesting.."

"Do you speak any other languages Miss?"

"English"

"How cool.." She said amazed

"Meh.. it's alright, I mean I was born in New Zealand and lived there 'til I was 8 and I go there to visit my friends and family often so of course I'm going to learn it"

"Nice.. I didn't know you were born outside Korea, that's awesome"

"It's not a big deal Tangelo, chill" I said giggling then I asked her another question "When is your birthday?"

"March 27 Miss, how about you?"

I rolled my eyes at her "January 16. Anyways this is boring me Lisa, are you just going to copy my questions? ask something original"

"Ok.. uhm.. do you have any siblings?"

I sighed and just shook my head at her but I answered her question anyway "Wow.. how exciting..No, I don't have any, I'm an only child"

"My turn! Let's make this interesting shall we Tangerine? Are you a virgin?" I asked bluntly

She blushed profusely and looked away

"Wha-what are you saying Miss, Why ask me that?" She said

"Don't answer my question with another question, now come on, answer me properly, and in return you can ask me something personal as well, I won't hold back, no lies, this is just going to be between the both of us, I promise, it's not going to come out, I swear" I said sincerely

She looked at me a bit skeptical but she answered anyway "Yes. I'm a Virgin"

I felt a bit relieved, for some reason, I felt glad that she's still a Virgin

Good for her

"Ok, your turn, ask me anything Tangelo"

"How old were you when you lost yours?"

"So you just assume that I'm not a Virgin anymore?" I asked her with a serious tone to make it seem like I'm offended but in reality, I'm really not.

"N-no Miss! sorry I--"

I started laughing

"Calm down Tangelo, I was kidding, I was 16 when I first did it" I said to her and she just nodded, no hint of judgement whatsoever.

"So, you're a virgin right? but have you ever kissed anyone before?" I asked, I'm really curious about her being intimate

"Uhm.. I did, it was with a childhood friend.." She said hesitantly, My heart felt a little sting but I ignored it

"Oh..was the person any good?" I asked again

"I mean, I really wouldn't know, she was my first kiss after all.."

"She?" I clarified kinking my eyebrow

"Yea-yeah.. we were fooling around and she kind of dared me.." She said looking away again

"How old were you?" I skipped her turn again, I'm aware that I've been asking a lot of questions but she didn't seem to mind so I kept pushing as much as I can.

"We were 14 years old" She answered

I nodded "Where is she now?"

"Her and Her Family moved to Canada" Lisa said with a hint of sadness in her voice

"Is that so.. anyways I've been asking a lot of questions, your turn Tangerine"

"Oh ok.. hmmm.. how many boyfriends have you had?"

"More or less 4? not sure, but the number is right around the ballpark, what about you?"

"I never really had any.." She answered

"Well, what about girlfriends?"

"None" she answered right away

"Are you..interested with anyone at the moment?" I asked her, I'm probably crossing the line with this one but then again, I already did when I asked her if she was still a virgin

"Hmm.. no not really, I only ever had a crush on one person which is my childhood friend who moved to Canada" Lisa said and I felt a tight pain in my chest again

"What about Sana?" I asked abruptly

She shook her head and chuckled "No, I don't see her as anything other than a friend"

"That's funny, you guys seem to be really close to just be friends" I said sarcastically.

She just smiled "Sana.. she's just really clingy I guess.."

I mentally rolled my eyes

Yeah, too clingy.

"So are you like, a lesbian or bisexual?"

"I.. would say I'm bisexual since I get attracted to both boys and girls, hmm.. have you tried kissing a girl Miss?"

"No, Never" I said looking straight into her eyes

"I-I see.. anyways, sorry Miss but I really need to go to the restroom, excuse me.." She said standing up slowly then walked away

I inhaled sharply and closed my eyes.. feeling relieved that the little Question and Answer Session between us is over..

I'm not one who gets interested in one's personal life not unless they willingly tell me, but for some reason, I wanted to get to know her more..but like I said earlier I'm glad that it was over because who knows what would've happened if I keep being invasive and I could tell she was feeling uncomfortable as well.

I admit I can be the biggest bitch but one thing I pride myself on is that I'm trustworthy..

When I said to Lisa that whatever we say to each other will be safe, I meant it.

So, she's Bi huh.. I'm not really surprised.

Rain and Thunder just kept rolling in and it doesn't seem like it will stop any time soon so I decided to take a nap.

I'm feeling a bit sleepy because of the weather and I kind of what to

avoid Lisa..

:

:

4 Hours later, I woke up from my nap.

I sat up slowly, I looked outside the window and it was getting dark, I then looked in front of me and I saw Tangelo dancing in front of the Fire Place.

I tried not to make any sound so I don't interrupt her

Wow.. she dances really well.. I thought to myself as I continue to watch her.

Lisa moves so gracefully, she's such a natural. I admit when I first saw her dance I was really jealous of her talent.

I know it's not her fault that she's a dance genius but I guess it was just to hide the feelings of admiration that I have for her.

She's so Sexy when she dance..

Few minutes later she stopped and then she catches her breath, I couldn't help but clap and cheer for her

"Bravo! Great Job Tangelo!" I said beaming at her

"Mi-Miss Kim!" She said looking shocked and she's red as a tomato

"You're really Good Lisa" I said then I tried standing up which is a bad idea, I forgot about my injured right ankle..

"Owwww..!" I said and I almost fell but Lisa caught me

"Miss, don't try to do any sudden movements.." She said worriedly

I giggled "Whoops.. I totally forgot.."

"Are you ok Miss?"

"I am, help me stand up straight for a bit, I need to move this around and not baby it"

"But Miss.."

"Teach me the dance that you just did earlier"

"Oh, that.. I was just dancing with random steps.."

"I'm sure you can do it again, You are a dance genius after all, now come on, I might get something from you that I can add to my Team's routine.. I promise I'll give you credit" I said to her but she didn't say anything

"Please Lisa? I came on this trip to maybe get some inspiration but unfortunately we're stuck here.. help me out yeah?"

She looked at me and gave me a warm smile which caught me off guard again. My heart skipped a bit and I was speechless for a moment.

I cleared my throat and looked away from her

"So Ummm.. that's a Yes right?"

"Yes Miss.. but let's do it slowly so your wound wouldn't bleed" She said and I nodded smiling

:

:

"So like this Tangelo?"

"No.. not like that, like this Miss Kim.." Lisa said as she repeated the dance step

"Oh I see. ok let me try again.. 1 and 2 and 3 and 4..1 and 2.."

"Yes! yes just like that! you're a fast learner Miss" she said while clapping

"Don't Patronize me!"

"I'm not, I swear, I'm just being honest, you're very good Miss"

"Whatever Tangelo, let's start from the beginning"

"That's probably not a good idea Miss, you're limping"

"No I'm not! I can stand up straight now see? Oooww..ouch! shit!" I cried in pain and fell on my knees

"Miss Kim! oh my goodness, are you alright? I told you we should stop, look what happened" Lisa said as she tries to help me up and sat me down the bed

"Shit, your ankle is bleeding again, this is my last kerlix wrap, let's clean your wound and then we'll call it a day. we've been dancing for almost an hour now anyway"

"I want to take a shower" I blurted out

"What?" She asked confused

"I stink, I haven't had a shower for more than 24 hours now, I'm sure you have a soap with you" I said it as a joke but she answered confidently

"I do"

I scoffed "Figures, Share it with me"

"But Miss..Your ankle" Tangelo tried to protest but I sat closer to her, invading her personal space

"Come on Lisa.. share it with me, or do you want to take a shower together?" I said sensually,

We're sitting really close next to each other right now-- I observed her face without realizing it, she has big cute doe eyes, prominent nose.. full lips..

I found myself leaning in but she moved away quickly, I myself was surprised at what I just did but I kept my cool

What the hell?? was I about to Kiss her??

"I Uhh.. let me just.. get the soap Miss.."

I didn't say anything, she handed me the soap and the extra clothes

that she's letting me borrow as soon as she found them

I walked to the bathroom to clean myself up and wash away the thoughts that's been going on in my head.

I admit I am curious about her.. but to what extent? I don't exactly know..

Lisa, you're really messing me up.

:

I stayed in the bathroom for quite a while just thinking.

When I'm done showering, I dried myself up and changed inside the bathroom so it wouldn't be more awkward between her and I.

When I got out of the shower, I saw Lisa laying down on her side of the bed, sleeping, I decided to wake her up to let her know I'm done

"Hey, Tangelo..wake up, I'm done" I said softly, I didn't want to startle her

She opened her eyes right away and sat up quickly

"Here. Miss Kim let's wrap your ankle now" she automatically said which caused me to giggle

"it's fine, it's not bleeding any more" I said to her but she insisted anyway

"Yes but it's still open, Please Miss Kim, you don't want your ankle infected"

"Fine."

I sat on the bed and she did her thing, when she was done, she cleaned up and then she took out some clothes from her backpack and went straight to the bathroom.

:

The fire finally died on us and we ran out of wood to burn, it's really cold and the blanket that we have isn't thick enough to make us warm

I'm shivering, tossing and turning because I'm too bothered with the coldness of the cabin and the stupid rain still wouldn't stop

"Miss Kim? is everything alright?" Lisa asked

"N-no. I'm free-freezing he-here, can't you see? I'm shi-shivering like crazy, aren't you co-cold?"

"A bit.. but I'm used to it since we don't really have a heater at home"

"Lu-lucky you..shit! I'm super cold, Come here Tangelo and share your body heat!" I demanded

"Miss Kim I--"

"Cuddle with me before I freeze to death! now!" I said, I'm not playing around anymore, I really need some heat before I pass out.

She reluctantly came closer and she engulfed me in a big hug

"Ahhh.. that's better.." I said snuggling closer to her as humanly possible..

I hugged her tight and stayed in place for a while until my body got used to how her body feels against mine..I then buried my face on her neck to get more heat

"Mi-miss Kim.."

"Hmmm...You Smell Nice Tangelo.. " I said as I continue inhaling her scent

"Miss.."

"Your carotid pulse, I can feel it.. is this making you uncomfortable Lisa? do I make you nervous?" I asked her

"Don't.."

"Don't what? I haven't really done anything...Ms.Manoban.." I said seductively.

I don't know what's going on with my messed up little head again,

the cold is probably getting to me but I started kissing her neck

"Je-Jennie.."

"Oooooooh.. I like.. that was sexy" I said then I sat down and moved in closer to her, our lips almost touching

"Say my name again.. Lalisa" I whispered to her lips

"Jennie.." She whispered back, even though it's dark I could feel the lust coming out of her body and that's when I lost my control

I grabbed her face crashing my lips with her own, we both moaned as soon as we made contact, her lips are so soft, full and warm, and tasted sweet, I've never kissed such luscious lips before

I straddled her and grinded my body with hers, her hands are all over the place, she doesn't really know where to touch me so I guided both of her hands to my waist to get her started

I bit hard on her lower lip which caused her to groan in pain. I couldn't help it, she has such thick lips it's impossible for me to resist, I then saw this as an opportunity to stick my tongue inside her mouth to get a better taste of her and she did not disappoint

Her hands then rubbed my thighs up and down slowly, I could tell she's trying to be as gentle as possible. my arms are wrapped around her neck while I continue to kiss her lips.

We would break off the kiss every now and then to catch our breaths but after a few seconds we're back at it again.

I don't know what's going on with me as to why I'm making out with Lisa all of a sudden but I do know that I'm not stopping any time soon

Lisa then took the initiative to rub on my back sensually and then proceeded to grope my right boob

I gasp at her sudden bold move

"Oh my! Oh go-gosh I'm so sorry Miss I didn't mean to..I'm sorry I ruined with didn't I??" Lisa said removing her hands quickly

"Sssshh! You're ruining it by babbling, put your hand back to where it was" I instructed her and then I kissed her lips once again

I wanted to kick it up a notch because Lisa is taking too long, so I took the initiative of taking off my shirt, I do not have any bra on so She's is in full view of my breasts, she was really shocked at what I did and I smirked at her reaction

"What? You've never seen boobs like this before?"

"I've never seen another woman's boobs before..ever.." she said as she stares at my chest

I leaned close and whispered to her ear seductively "Suck on my breasts.. Lalisa.."

And without another word, she did what she's told. she's very obedient.

She put her lips on my left breast while she massages the other with her free hand

She's sucking on it expertly that I'm getting extra aroused, I can feel myself getting wetter by the second

"Fu..fuck Lalisa..don't stop.. that's so good.." I said, I keep moaning her name more than I wanted to. She then slid off her left hand down to my pajamas and since I'm not wearing anything down there either, she's going to have full access to my womanhood

I got off her Lap slightly to give her a bit of space so she can properly touch me, she started to rub on my clit and she hit the spot right away

"Shit!" I yelled and then I kissed her lips feverishly, Lisa's touching me in the right places that it got to a point where I don't even know what to do with myself anymore.

She then suddenly made a swift move and laid me down, my back hitting the bed.

Lisa broke off our kiss and then she started giving light feathery kisses on my jawline, then she breathes warm, soft air on my left ear and gives it tiny lick which gave me goosebumps, then she

moved lower to my neck, kissing and sucking on it ever so lightly

I've never been touched like this before, it's like I'm something Fragile that needs to be handled with care, I'm so turned on..not to mention her hand is still on my pussy..

I'm feeling so much pleasure right now---A feeling that I've never really felt before.

Lisa then went down at the Valley of my breasts, then she moved her warm mouth from one breast to another, this time, giving both of it her attention

"Lisa..ah.. You're so good at that.. keep going.."

she wasn't aggressive or eager.. she takes her time with both while caressing my body with her free hand, then she moved down to my stomach until she reached my pajamas

"Ma-May I?" She asked

I bit my lower lip and gave her a nod as a go signal

She slid me off of her pajamas, and now, I'm fully naked..She didn't stop though, she started kissing on my inner thighs, giving full licks..

"Fu..fuck! Lisa..you're so..aahhh..shit"

She continued doing it for a while and then without any warning, she gave my cunt a long slow lick starting from the bottom working her way up.

"Fucck!...."

Lisa kept going, She's eating me so good that I started to grind my pussy on her face to get more contact, her tongue is so warm and slick that it's driving me to insanity

"Shit.. Lisa.. aaaahhh..ohh.. yeah right there...you're doing great.. keep going..Lisaa.." I encouraged her while moaning

She's lapping and sucking on My wet cunt like there's no tomorrow, I writhe and moaned with so much passion and pleasure.

She's making me feel all kinds of heaven that I've never experienced before, and I'm not even a virgin anymore but this is the first time I've ever felt like this

I'm so wet for her that I can actually hear her slurping on my juices, then out of nowhere, she made another move that I didn't expect from her

She inserted two fingers in me so deep that my eyes rolled back in delight

"Aahhhh...!! Fuck.. Oh My God..that feels so fucking good..ahhh.."

Lisa pumped her fingers in and out of me, she started off slow and shallow but it eventually became hard, fast and deep while she's still sucking on my wet cunt

Oh shit..I'm about to lose it..

"Fuck....Lisa! Aaahhhhhh keep going, keep fucking me like that..aahh yesss..Lisa.. I'm cumming.. I-fuuuuckk.."

I came..hard.

I came so hard that I trembled and squirted which is something I didn't know I was capable of.

I felt it coming though, I wanted to make it stop but my body was too honest with its response to Lisa's touch

I've never had such intense orgasm before and Lisa..

She made me feel all kinds of things that even I don't know how to describe.

All I know is that I feel really really great and I want to do it again...

And Again...

And Again..

12.) Yeoldul

Title: Love Hangover

Artist: Jason Derulo

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

JENNIE'S POV

"Oh..shit..Lisa..I'm cumming..faster..do it faster..aaaahhhh..ffuucck....!!"

I moaned loudly as I came for.. I don't even know, I honestly lost count

it's probably around 4 or 5 in the morning already..

I'm quiet exhausted but the high that she gave me is overpowering that I forget about my body aches..

She then got off of me as we both catch our breaths

**Hah* *Hah* *Hah*.....*

Lisa and I have been going at it every 30 minutes or so ever since we had sex the first time. We never really stopped, either I initiate it or she does, but to be honest, it was mostly me who starts it but oh well..nobody's complaining or protesting.

That..was so amazing.. she gets better and better.. I thought for sure she just had beginner's luck the first time she gave me that mind blowing orgasm but she proved me wrong...

over and over and over

"Mi-Miss..I'm really tired..I need to sleep this off.."

I was kind of disappointed when she said that, I wanted to do more rounds with her and return the favor but I guess it can't be helped.

She was bleeding earlier the first three times I entered her with my fingers. I admit I was a bit rough on Lisa but it's her fault, she was moaning so sensually that I got carried away and lost control. thankfully she recovered and started to enjoy it as well

"Oh.. alright..go ahead, I'm just gonna go wash up.." I responded, she just nodded and closed her eyes.

The rain finally stopped, it probably did hours ago but we were so caught up fucking each other that we didn't even notice.

I stood up lazily and went to the bathroom to ease some tension "Oooww.." I groaned a bit loud but covered my mouth immediately

I totally forgot about my right ankle, good thing the dressing is still intact. I covered it with some plastic I found inside Tangelo's backpack so she doesn't need to re-do it again.

I washed myself to refresh my mind, like a reset of some sort. The coldness that I felt from last night melted away from my body, now all I feel is overwhelming heat and longing..

This is ridiculous, I just came.. we just got done having sex and I want to do it again? considering we've been doing it for hours..

Sigh...

I need to control myself, I'm acting like a needy virgin.

I stayed in the bathroom for a while, just thinking about her and I and the things that happened between us. I'm worried that Tangelo might get attached to me because I'm her first.

I don't want any attachments.. I should clear things up with her when she wakes up before she gets any wrong ideas..

This is just a one time thing, it's never going to happen again.

I went back to where Tangelo was and saw that she's already sleeping soundly.. letting out soft snores, her hair is disheveled and she has kiss marks all over her body, I didn't leave any visible ones on her neck though, only on her breasts, stomach and her inner thighs..the parts that she can cover.

I decided to take a little nap as well, I'm starting to feel the soreness from the deed that we've been doing, I laid down next to her, turning my back on the opposite direction, I closed my eyes and drifted off to sleep..

:

:

4 HOURS LATER

I woke up from the sound of the wind blowing from outside and the warm sunlight hitting my face. I opened my eyes and sat up slowly to prevent getting dizzy, stretching my arms while yawning. Even though I just took a nap, I still feel tired.

I looked behind me and saw Tangerine fixing her backpack, she's already dressed and looks like she's ready to go. I cleared my throat to get her attention because she was too fixated on the thing that she's doing.

"Oh! Ha-Hi Miss, sorry, did I wake you?" She asked worriedly

"No, you didn't, what are you doing right now?" I asked her

"The rain finally stopped Miss, the water from outside has gone down as well, so I figured we could finally make our way back to the hotel, the sun is out too so that's good" She said smiling

I just stared at her, not saying anything

Looks like she's a little too excited to go home

"Miss?"

"What?"

"You ah..you alright there?" she asked while giving me a weird look

"Of course, why wouldn't I be?" I said a bit irritated for some reason

"So-sorry Miss.. anyways I heated up some water already for your cup noodles, do you want me to prepare it for you?" She asked

"I'm not hungry, I'm fine." I replied coldly

"Are you sure Miss because we don't know how far we'll walk and---" S

"I said I'm fine okay?! why don't you just eat it so we can go ASAP" I said raising my voice a little which startled her.

She didn't say anything and just nodded, she finished up fixing her backpack and then she ate. While I'm waiting for her, I decided to get dressed as well, my clothes should be dry by now anyway.

"Here are your clothes, Thank you for letting me borrow them" I said to her

"No-no problem Miss, I'm done eating, let me know when you're ready to go" She said

"I'm ready" I answered right away

"How's your ankle? can you walk fine now?" She asked concerned

"Yes, oh you know what, hold on. before we go, we need to have a little talk" I said crossing my arms

"Su-sure Miss.. It's about what happened between us.. right?" She said hesitantly

"Yes. Tangelo, I want you to know that what happened last night and earlier doesn't mean anything, we were just caught up in the moment, and there was nothing better to do, I don't want you to think that just because we got intimate doesn't mean our relationship has changed, you understand? I don't want you getting involved with my business and you can be certain that I don't have any interest getting involved with yours"

"I.. understand Miss.. I wasn't really expecting anything.." She said

"Good. forget this ever happened, and never tell anybody you got that? I'm going to deny it and you're going to get in big trouble.. not just you but everyone around you, no exceptions, are we clear

Tangelo?"

She gave me a warm smile and nodded "Yes Miss, Crystal."

Good, at least she understands.

"Anyways, we should get going, I already cleaned up, let me just fix the bed and then we can go before the owner gets here" She said

I didn't say anything, I just walked out the door.

I went outside and saw how muddy and gross it is, but now at least we can go home, it's bright and sunny so it should be easier to find our way back.

"Ok, Miss, Let's go" She said beaming and I just rolled my eyes at her which made her frown a bit

I walked ahead of her, I'm still limping but I just didn't want to be too close to her

"Miss, slow down and be careful, your dressing might come off and your wound might get infected!" She yelled, I'm about 15 feet away from her.

"I'm not stupid alright?! I re-enforced the dressing earlier! now walk faster you slowpoke!" I said to her

:

:

We're walking for about an hour now and still nothing

Damn, where the hell is the way out of here? this damn phone died on me when I needed it the most, How freaking convenient, if it would've work the first night we got stuck in that stupid cabin then I..the sex wouldn't have happened

I shook my head vigorously

Snap out of it Jennie, you're not supposed to be thinking about it anymore

Few more miles later and we heard someone calling our names, the person sounds like a man

"Jennie-ssi! Lisa-ssi! Hello??!!!"

"Did you hear that Miss?!" Tangelo said excitedly

"Yes I did!" I responded with the same mood

"Over Here! Hello! we're here!! Help us!!" I shouted as loud as I can and Lisa did the same

"Jenni-ssi! Lisa-ssi! Stay right where you are! and keep calling out! we're coming!" the man said

"Help Us! Heellppp!! Over Here! Please come quick!" I continued yelling

After a few minutes, we saw a group of people coming to our rescue, I squinted my eyes to see a little better.. there were Police officers with their dogs.. Miss C...and..

Is that Mino? ..wait a minute..is that..My Mom and Dad??

Oh my God..I'm in big trouble now

"Jennie Honey! You're alright! Oh.. my sweet baby.." My Mom came running and hugged me tight as soon as she saw me

"Baby.. we thought for sure some thing bad happened to you, are you alright dear? come here love" My Father said hugging me just as tight

Both My Parents are crying

"Owwwww.. you're squishing me.." I said as I try my best to pull away from them

"Sorry Dear, we were just so worried about you..." My Mother said wiping her tears

"Are you hurt honey?" My Father asked

"Yeah Dad.. I hurt my ankle but I'm okay" I said smiling

"We're so happy, we wouldn't know what we'll do if you..you.." My mom said but she started sobbing and hugged me again

"Mommy..stop, this is so embarrassing.." I said to her but she didn't care

When they finally calmed down, Mino greeted me giving me a kiss on the cheek, his eyes were red and full of worry, it looks like he's been crying as well, he told me how scared he was and how he haven't had any sleep yet because he was worried sick about me, I was so touched by him that I ended up giving him a hug and I kissed him on the lips.

Then..My eyes searched for the certain orange haired girl and I saw that She's with Miss C., Tangelo is crying and so is our Teacher but she's doing her best to comfort her student.

Miss C. gave Tangelo a hug while rubbing her back.

Was that really necessary? Why is she hugging her like that?

For some reason, I didn't like how the two were so close to each other, I know it's ridiculous to suspect that Miss C. might be interested with Tangelo because she's already married but I don't like the idea of people getting near her.

I felt myself glaring at them, I couldn't help it

Aren't they a little too close? they've been hugging for a while now!

"Babe? hey babe? Are You Alright?" I heard Mino say

"Ye-Yeah, I'm fine, thanks" I said giving him a tight lip smile

"Honey, let's go, you're coming with us, we'll take you to the Hospital and get your wound treated properly" My Father said

"Oh..Ok Dad..what about Lisa?" I asked

"Lisa?" My Mother asked

"Yeah. the girl I was with, she's the one who helped me with my wound.."

"Oh, right. we'll make sure to reward her honey, but for now, you're our priority, now come on love, Our car is not too far from here" My Father said

"Can you walk fine baby? let me carry you" Mino offered

"No, I'm fine, I just need a bit of support" I said

We walked passed Lisa and Miss C and they followed us, I looked back and saw Lisa looking at me, she gave me a smile that says she's relieved we're safe now, I didn't respond though, I just looked in front and kept walking.

:

:

After my trip to the Hospital, we went straight home so I could get rested properly. I slept the whole day during My first day back to my house, My Parents would come and check on me often, My friends did the same, they scolded me of course, especially Rosé and My cousin Chu.

My other friends slash team mates Nayeon, Dahyun and Seulgi were crying but nagged me at the same time, they told me they're not letting me do any dance routines until they're sure my right ankle is healed, they're basically treating me like I'm not able to walk anymore.

Second day (Day before Iceland Trip): Nayeon and Jisoo came over to help me pack for our trip to Iceland, we're leaving tomorrow and I haven't started anything yet.

"Jen, are you sure you're ok to go to Iceland? I mean your ankle is still trying to heal" Nayeon asked worriedly

"I'm fine babe, I've been wanting to go to Iceland to see the Northern Lights and I'm not about to let this little injury stop me" I said confidently

"Jendeuki, can I just say you look different somehow" Jisoo said

"Different? like how?" I asked confused

"Yeah, I was gonna say, you're aura is glowing, your face is brighter and your cheeks are rosier than usual.." Nayeon added

I shrugged "Well, I haven't used any new skin product, it's probably because I slept good last night"

"No, No.. you can't have all that just by sleeping.." Nayeon said

"Maybe great sex perhaps?" Jisoo said out of nowhere which made me freeze

"OOooooo.. Jennie-ya, is Mino really that good?" Nayeon asked wiggling her eyebrows

"What?! No! how can we have sex if my parents and you guys were here almost the whole day yesterday"

"I don't know, maybe he sneaked in in the middle of the night?" Nayeon said laughing "Anyways I gotta go to the restroom, I need to pee bad"

As soon as Nayeon Left, My cousin spoke again

"Mino huh? I was thinking of someone else.." Jisoo said smirking

"What are you trying to imply Chu?" I asked her raising an eyebrow

"Oh nothing..hey, how do you think Lisa is doing?" She asked

"How should I know? We don't talk to each other like that" I answered defensively

"Whoa there chill.. I'm just wondering if she's okay you know?" My cousin said

"Geee I don't know, why don't you go to her house and find out yourself" I said getting annoyed

"Meh. that's ok, I'm sure Sana's taking care of her" Chu said nonchalantly

I feel myself getting automatically angry, The thought of Lisa and Sana being too close to each other is making me want to strangle somebody.

This winter break is 2 weeks long..and I'm afraid Lisa might get swept away by that..that whore!

No, she won't be swayed easily... right? I'm the first one who had her, she's not going to betray me like that!

Breathe Jennie..

I need to Relax..

I left my marks all over her body.. she's not going to forget me right away.

"Jennie, have mercy on your Chanel purse! it didn't do anything to you, that's vintage cousin! if you plan to ruin it because of your jealousy then just let me have it!" Jisoo said then she grinned.

I didn't realize how hard I was gripping the flap of my purse almost to a point where I want to tear it in two

"Jisoo shut the hell up alright?! I'm not Jealous! I don't care what that bitch Sana and that freak Lisa do with their free time! I don't! fuck them both!" I yelled

"What's going on here?" Nayeon asked looking confused

Jisoo laughed even harder "Nothing, Jennie is just being a monster again, as usual"

Nayeon looked at me with concern in her eyes "Jen? are you ok? why are you teary eyed?"

"I'm fine, excuse me" I said, abruptly standing up and went straight to my bathroom

I looked in the mirror and stared at my reflection and before I knew it, a tear fell down from my eye, I wiped it quick but then they kept falling.

I feel pain stabbing through my chest

Lisa.. she's not going to do it with her right?

Why do I even care anyway?!

she's a freak! a loser! she can have sex with whoever she wants!

I hate her.. I hate her for making me feel this way

That's what I kept telling myself but I don't understand why my heart beats uncontrollably and I feel so much pain to a point where I couldn't breathe with the thought of her being intimate with someone.

No, this can not be..she shouldn't affect me this much!

it was only for one night..that's it!

Her and I were stuck in a cabin for almost 48 hours.. it was cold, we were bored, and we just kind of got into this.. sexual cabin fever.. if that's even a thing, that's all there is to it, nothing more.

She's not the only person I can have sex with, I have my boyfriend, I can fuck around in Iceland too..

That's it, that's what I need, some good fuck from a man from a foreign country.

That's what I need to forget about that stupid Lisa.

:

:

ICELAND

We finally made it to Iceland.

We were on the plane for 15 hours and our butts are sore from sitting too much.

As Expected, the weather is really cold, it's snowing right now, and Capital of the country Reykjavik is looking extra pretty.

They're definitely ready for a White Christmas

The city has a lot of Holiday feels to it, everybody's looking happy, no signs of sadness or loneliness whatsoever

But why do I feel.. empty..

I'm somehow longing for someone that I shouldn't long for..

She's been occupying my mind ever since we flew here to Iceland

The thought of being thousands of miles away from her makes me feel miserable...

All I could really think about is Her..

I can't get her out of my Head..

Lalisa...

I kept wondering what she's doing, who is she spending the holidays with, is she eating right? is she okay in general?

I want to know..

But I have no way of getting that information. I instantly regret breaking her phone just because I didn't want her texting other people

I wonder if she has any social media account

I checked instagram, facebook, snapchat, and there was nothing..

It's not like she'll be able to update regularly anyway since she doesn't have a working phone and I'm boldly assuming she doesn't have any laptop either..

Uggghhh! Stop Jennie! this isn't you.. I told myself

But I couldn't stop.. my heart hurts from..missing Tangelo..

There. I admit it.

I miss her

I miss her so much that it's hard to even breathe..

What the Hell is going on with me??

I never yearned for anyone like this.. not to my boyfriend, not even my parents

How can I stop.. How..

"Jendeuki, why aren't you eating? your food is getting cold, aren't you hungry?" My cousin asked

"Yeah babe, eat, you didn't touch your food when we were on the plane, all you did was sleep and stare into space, get excited! we might see the northern light tonight or tomorrow!" Nayeon said with so much enthusiasm

"Oh-uh no, you got it all wrong Nayeon, I'm totally excited! I'm sorry I'm still a bit tired you guys" I lied

"Is your ankle okay?" Nayeon asked

"Yes it's fine, thank you" I smiled at my friend

"Let's go to the Blue Lagoon, and get our Hot Spring on, I'm beat and I need to warm up my body" My cousin suggested

"Yeah let's do that" I said trying my very best to smile

I'll try to make this trip worth while, maybe I'm just a bit confused, I didn't have any sex with Mino before Lisa and I got intimate and she was just there to fill the void.

that's probably it..

Right..?

13.) Yeolset

LISA'S POV

Dance Studio

Today is my last day at the dance studio, The person that I was relieving came back yesterday, I'm a bit sad that I'm leaving but I'm more thankful for Miss Momo for giving me the opportunity.

I was able to save enough money to dye my hair so I won't get kicked out of Pioneer High and also, I'm finally able to get My Papa a brand new pair of working shoes. He has been complaining that his feet are hurting whenever we get done cleaning the school.

My next goal is to get a new phone, I'm going to apply for another job, maybe at a fast food chain where I can work during the weekends.

****Sigh****

I honestly didn't want to get a new phone, if only Miss Kim hadn't broken mine then I wouldn't have to waste money on getting a new one.

Miss Kim

It's been 5 days ever since that day--The day I lost my Virginity to her.

It was honestly very memorable to me, she made me feel really great and I hope I made her feel the same even though it was my first time to actually pleasure someone.

I admit, I miss her and her touch.

She made me feel alive and important even just for a short while, the way she held me and kissed me passionately was so convincing I actually thought I felt that there was love involved but sadly, It's just me and my ridiculous mind imagining things that would never happen

The day we left the cabin, she made it clear that her and I shouldn't be involved with each other and that I should forget about the whole thing.

What happened in the cabin, stays in the cabin.

Yes I was hurt when she said that but what do I expect? I mean, who am I to her anyway?

She's a Princess and I'm a Pauper.

It's not like I fell in love with her or something, It's just that, I guess I just wanted my first to be special and do it with someone I actually love, but it already happened and I can't do anything about it now.

I inhaled sharply.

I need to stop thinking about Miss Kim, what happened between us is only a one time thing, nothing more.

You mean nothing to her Lisa, Move on from whatever it is you feel for her.

:

:

I just got done teaching my last class for today when Miss Momo called me to her office over the speaker.

I went to her office and knocked to her door
"Come in" Miss Momo said

"Good Evening Miss Momo.. you wanted to see me?"

"Yes Lisa, come here, I wanted to give you something.." She says as she rummaged through her drawer

I approached her confused of what was going on

"Ahhh! There it is! Here you go!" She said smiling While she hands me a white envelope.

"Uhm, Miss Momo? What's this?"

"Open it"

I did what she has told me and I saw a paycheck worth \$500, I stared at the paycheck and then I looked at her direction with a confused expression on my face

"Uhm Miss Momo? There must be a misunderstanding, I already got paid yesterday and--"

She chuckled and shook her head "No, No dear.. that's your Christmas Bonus"

"My wha-what? Christmas Bonus? I don't understand Miss.."

"Well, every Christmas I give my employees a bonus for doing a great job, and since you're an employee of mine, then it only makes sense that you get a bonus as well right?"

"But Miss Momo, I'm only temporary here you didn't need to--"

"Oh about that.. I was wondering if you're interested.. I want to offer you a part time position here, Friday to Sunday, is that something you'd be interested in?"

"What?! Are you serious Miss Momo?"

She laughed softly "Yes I'm serious Lisa, ever since you started working for us, our customer ratings improved by 30% and a lot more boys and girls are enrolling here at J-Trinity"

"I..don't know what to say Miss Momo.."

"Just say Yes and it's done"

"Yes! Yes! I'm interested! Thank you Miss Momo! You don't know how badly I need this job!" I said feeling so emotional

"Aww.. come here Lisa" Miss Momo said standing up from her chair giving me a hug "don't mention it ok? You're like a little cousin to me like Sana, we're family here okay?"

I couldn't speak anymore from being overjoyed, I just hugged my boss back as I continue to cry tears of Joy

"There there.. anyways since you're on vacation from school, do you mind working Monday-Friday? Except Christmas and New Year of course, and there's also a \$3 bonus per hour if you say yes and a \$50 gift card"

"Yes Miss Momo! I'll take it!"

"Awww..Lisa I knew I could count on you, keep this up and you'll most likely be our Employee of the Month"

"Thanks Miss Momo for this opportunity, I really love dancing and I don't mind working extra for it."

"You're welcome, anyways go home, it's almost 9pm, you might miss your Bus"

"Oh! Right! Totally Slipped my mind! Bye Miss Momo! I'll see you tomorrow! Goodnight!"

"Good night Lisa-chan! Close the door when you leave please! Thank you!"

I smiled at her and nodded then I closed her door

I walked happily with the biggest smile on my face on my way to the bus stop.

I came in to work today being all sad because I thought for sure it was going to be my last day working for J-trinity but it was totally the opposite

"Papa would be really happy about this, I can finally help him with our bills and I can finally put some food on our table."

This is probably one of the best days of My Life in Years!

JENNIE'S POV

Reykjavik, Iceland

Ughhhh!! this is the worse week of my life so far!!

We've only been here in Iceland for 3 days and I'm honestly itching to go back home to Korea

I'm really trying my hardest to have fun, Nayeon and Jisoo have been a great company but my mind kept wandering back to a certain orange-haired girl

Lisa...

Lalisa..

What is she doing now?

Is she at her work teaching some bimbo or perhaps a man-whore how to dance sexy?

or is she with that Slut Sana?

Is she perhaps Sleeping? It's 7 pm here in Reykjavik so it's 4 am in Korea..

Is she dreaming about me?

Does she even think about me the way I'm thinking about her?

All these and other thoughts are flooding my mind, I haven't gotten any sleep yet because I'm thinking about Lisa excessively. I've been awake for the past 32 hours because of her.

I couldn't stop thinking about her lips, her eyes, her scent.

Everything.

Mino has been texting and calling me since I got here, telling me that he misses me and how much he loves me but I couldn't bring

myself to give him the same response because I'm totally hung up on Lisa.

I'm missing her so so much!

The worse part is I can't really tell anyone about my yearning for her because I myself don't understand why I'm acting like a Lovesick Puppy.

Wait.

Did I just think that I was *Lovesick*?

No, that can't be it!

That's not it at all!

That's gross!

She's a gross human being!

I shook my head at the thought, I need to stop myself from thinking about that Stupid Tangerine.

I need a Distraction.

:

:

AUSTUR NIGHT CLUB

Reykjavik, Iceland

My Cousin, Nayeon and I ended up here at a nightclub in Iceland, We're having the time of our lives, we're drinking and dancing with each other and with some other guys

The Men here are attractive, they've been buying us drinks but we're smart enough not to drink them, we buy and drink our own liquor, this isn't our first Rodeo going to a club, we do this quite a lot back in South Korea every other weekend and mostly during breaks from school.

I have been dancing with this one particular guy, he's tall, has thick lips, brown doe eyes, and he has hair with a really dark shade

of orange which is the main reason why he caught my attention in the first place.

He reminds me of someone

Someone I've been desperately trying to forget but miserably failing to do so

I'm a bit tipsy and I've had one too many drinks and while we were dancing together, I saw Tangelo's face in him, and when I did, I ended up kissing him.

I've longed for Tangelo so much that I'm even willing to have sex with the guy just to fill the void of not being touched by Her.

"Jendeuki, that's enough. Let's go" My cousin grabbed my arm harshly

"Chu No, I'm having fun here with Tangelo" I said giggling

"Jennie, he's not the same as *Your* Tangelo, now let's go. You're too drunk you can barely stand up" I heard my cousin say but I wasn't able to really comprehend what she said.

Nayeon is as drunk as I am, My poor cousin had to babysit us, I wanted to forget about Her but the more I try, the more she drills back into my Head and she's going to stay there until I'll finally get to see her again.

I'm counting the days of when I'll get to finally go back to school just so I'd get to see her at least five times week, that should be enough, I'm sure when we get to the routine of seeing each other often then this longing in my heart would be gone.

We have more than a week before winter break is over and we officially start a new quarter, besides, I'm going to be really busy next year, I'm going to have a big birthday party, Then there's the

nationals, prom, then graduation.

She was something new, it was my first time having sex with a girl, that's it, other than that, there's nothing really special about her, so I shouldn't be freaking out over nothing.

There wasn't any feelings involved when we had sex nor there will ever be.

I do not have any time for Her.

LISA'S POV

Seoul, South Korea

5PM

It's Christmas Day, I finally got my hair dyed but it didn't go as I expected.

The salon lady said that since my hair was too orange and that It needs at least 2-3 more sessions in order for it to be completely black or at least dark brown.

They advised me to come back in 2-3 months instead of next month because chemicals would ruin my hair and worst case scenario is I'm gonna go bald if we dye it too soon.

My hair isn't as bright as before So I guess I just need to explain myself again.

I actually had to ask (beg) the salon manager if she could give me some kind of statement letter about my hair situation, thankfully I got it even though it took a lot of convincing (and some tears)

My Papa and I are having a simple Christmas Celebration, we're gonna be having Traditional Thai Food for this occasion: Chicken Satay, Pad Thai, Roasted Lemon Grass Chicken, Pineapple fried rice and Mango sticky rice for desert.

I know for some this isn't much but for Papa and I, this is luxury, and since I got that Christmas bonus from Miss Momo, I figured I'd treat My Papa to some good food.

"Lisa, Thank You for cooking and for the delicious food"

"You're welcome Papa, Let's eat! I'm starving" I said smiling while rubbing my stomach

We were just about to take our first bite when someone suddenly knocked on our door

Who could that be?

"I got it Papa, I'll answer it"

I opened the door and to my surprise, It's Miss Kim.

"Mi-Miss? Wh-what are you doing here?" I asked, really surprised.

She didn't say anything and she just stared at me for a few seconds for some unknown reason but she caught herself and gave me her signature gummy smile

"Whoa, look at you, I guess I shouldn't call you Tangelo anymore huh?"

"Huh?"

She raised an eyebrow

"Your Hair Lisa, it's not orange anymore" Miss Kim said pointing

out the obvious

"Oh! Ri-right! Of course Haha.. Duh? I'm really slow.. I apologize" I said as I rub the back of my neck

She chuckled "You are, but I'm not surprised"

"Lisa? Who's at the door?" I heard my papa say as he approached us

"Oh! Miss Kim, what brings you here?" My papa asked a bit surprised as well but he gave Miss Kim his biggest smile anyway

"Hello Sir, Merry Christmas, anyways, I'm here to give Lisa My Christmas Present for her"

My Christmas Present?

I kinked my eyebrows and I looked at her hands, she's holding a big pink gift bag, I didn't even notice because I was too surprised at her being in front of my door

"Aww that's so nice of you Miss Kim, Merry Christmas to you too, would you like to join us for an early Christmas dinner? we don't have much but I assure you they're delicious"

I'm a bit skeptical about inviting Miss Kim to dinner because I don't know if My Cooking would pass her standards

"Papa, I don't think Miss Kim eats Thai Foo--"

"I'd love to sir! Thank you!"

"Come In, You can just put the gift bag on the Sofa" My papa said to her

"Ok sir" She said as she sets down the gift bag on the sofa

"Sit down Miss Kim, do you eat Thai food?" My Papa ask

"I've had some before Sir, I like *Anything* Thai" Miss Kim said suggestively while she looks at my direction biting her lower lip

My papa didn't catch it but I certainly did, I just cleared my

throat and looked away from her.

"Mi-miss would you like to try some Pad Thai?" I offered her

"***smile*** Sure Lisa"

I offered her Pad Thai but I gave her a little bit of everything except for the Mango Sticky Rice since we're not eating desert yet.

She seems to be enjoying the food as she was asking for seconds, My Papa was really happy with her company as well.

Miss Kim has lots of random topics to talk about which got my Papa's interest.

"Oh Miss Kim, you're fun to talk to, I'm glad Lisa has a friend like you"

"Thank you sir" she smiled at him

"How's your ankle by the way? Lisa told me what happened.."

"It's better now sir Thanks to Lisa, she really took good care of me, she has great survival skills" she said as she looks at me again

I really don't know what to say so I just smiled at them.

:

An hour and a half later, we're finished with Dinner and I was done cleaning up, Miss Kim helped with the dishes and she wiped the tables as well.

My Papa said that he'll go to bed since he sleeps really early

"Lisa, why don't you take Miss Kim to your room, it's really cold here in the Living room, there's no heater"

I was going to go against the idea because I didn't want to be left alone with her and I'm pretty sure she doesn't really want to be in the same room with me either, it's just going to be really awkward but then Miss Kim suddenly spoke up.

"Yeah Lisa, I want to see your room" She said grinning.

"Oh but it's really..me-messy Miss I don't think you'd---"

"***shrug*** I don't mind"

***Sigh..** I guess I have no Choice.
If I say no I'm gonna come off as rude.*

"Oh ok then" I said weakly, I can't really do anything now

"Don't forget your gift Lisa, here" Miss Kim said handing me the pink gift bag

"Oh, right, Thank You Miss but you really didn't have to-"

"Let's go? Where's your room?" She asked changing the subject

"Uhm, r-right over there..down the hall to your right"

"Alright, anyways goodnight Mr. Manoban" Miss Kim said to My Papa

"Good night Miss Kim, Good night Lisa"

"Good night Papa"

:

When my papa went to his room, Miss Kim started walking down the hall to where my room is at

"This one right?" She confirmed

"Ye-Yes Miss, Excuse me let me just uhm..open it for you" I said while turning the door knob

I went in first and then she followed closing my door, I don't know if it was my imagination but for some reason I heard the door make a **click** sound

"Nice room, it's not even messy at all Tangelo, and it smells like fresh Laundry"

"Oh thank you Miss, I actually uhm did do my laundry earlier so that must've been the reason, it-it's usually not like this"

She just nodded and didn't say anything more, she walked around my room and looked at the pictures on my drawer.. and she's smiling..?

After that, she looked at my direction

"Aren't you going to open your present?"

"I-uh.. Is it alright?"

"Why not? It's yours"

"Miss Kim Tha-Thank you by the way..I didn't get you anything at all.."

"It's fine Tangelo, I didn't do this just so I could get something back, go ahead, open it"

I smiled at her and sat down on my bed then I proceeded to opening the gift bag

"Wooooowww!! These are all for me??"

She laughed softly "Yes, all yours"

"Thank You Miss! I love Chocolates!"

"I figured you do Tangelo"

There's lot of assorted candies and chocolates and also some souvenirs like key chain with my name on it and some fridge magnets that says "Iceland"

"You..went to Iceland Miss?"

"Yep, for a week."

"How was it? Did you like it?"

"Of course"

I smiled back at her and nodded then I continued rummaging through the Pink bag when I saw a black little box.

Huh? What's this?

I took it out and I realized it's the latest iPhone

"Uhhh.. Miss? I think this one got lost in the bag"

She shook her head "No, that's for you Tangelo"

"Whaa?? But I..No..you already got me some chocolates and souvenirs..I-"

"Those were just decoys"

"But..this is too much I can't accept this Miss.."

"Take it, It's not really a gift, more like, A replacement for breaking your phone"

"Miss I didn't ask for a replacement, I was actually gonna get me a new one next week and besides the one that I had was really old"

She scoffed "It doesn't matter, just take it okay? You know it's rude when you say 'No' to people who give you stuff and it's Christmas."

"Miss Kim.. I don't know how to repay you.."

"You don't have to--" she said but she stopped all of a sudden and then she looked at me with a wide grin on her face while she approaches me slowly swaying her hips

"...Actually... I know one way you can repay me.."

I gulped hard

"Wh-what is it Miss Kim?"

She didn't say a word, she just cupped both my cheeks and tilted it up as she kiss my lips aggressively

14.) Yeolnet

Title: B.U.D.D.Y.

Artist: Musiq Soulchild

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

JENNIE'S POV

"...Actually... I know one way you can repay me.."

"Wh-what is it Miss Kim?"

I didn't say anything and I just cupped both Lisa's cheeks and started kissing her, I've been wanting to do this ever since we got back from Iceland.

Me dropping off her "gift" was just an excuse, I mean I could've waited until we're back in school but that's more than a week from now and I couldn't wait that long.

I wanted to see her as soon as possible.

I've been craving her kissable lips since we parted, I didn't want to admit it before but I figured it's easier to just accept the fact that I love kissing her instead of me denying it and right now, I'm not about to miss my chance.

She's already in front of me so why deprive myself?

She's sitting on her bed, I wanted more body contact with her so I sat on her lap, straddling her, wrapping my legs around her waist.

She broke off our Kiss and held onto my arms pushing me gently away from her. I almost whined at the lost of sudden contact but I

restrained myself.

"What's wrong? Why did the kissing stop?" I asked feeling offended, I didn't even bother hiding it

"Mi-miss Kim, I thought you said---"

I smirked "What? I'm helping you repay me, this is how I want to be paid"

"Bu-but.. You said what happened in the Cabin wa-was just a one time th-thing.."

I chuckled at her shyness and then I leaned closer to her, our lips almost touching

"It's not like we're having sex Lisa, not unless.. you want to? We can go all the way again, it is Christmas after all"

"Miss Kim.. No.."

Lisa saying 'No' to me definitely hurt my pride and ego but I'm not about to let her win, I'm here to get what I want.

And I want her.

"Why not Lisa? Haven't you thought about *US* ever since that night? remember our first time? because I could not, for the life of me, get it out of my mind. I know you want me Lisa.."

"Miss Kim.."

I know she's about to protest again so I gave her lips and neck small kisses resulting with her letting out soft moans.

I then whispered to her ear

"You like that don't you?"

She nodded her head slowly

"Hmm.. Lisa.. you smell like peach..you smell so good.." I said inhaling her scent that I missed so much.

"Say My Name Again Honey.."

I'm aware that I called her '*Honey*' I know I took it too far but I really don't give a shit.

"Je-Jennie.." She whispered

"No..not like that.. say it with more confidence.."

"Jennie" She whispered again

And with that I attacked her lips once again and this time, Lisa responded with the same eagerness as me. I knew she wouldn't be able to resist me, she wants this as much as I do.

We both want this

We both need this

Lisa started taking off my shirt, I start unbuttoning her pants while we continue to give each other hot breathy kisses as we both moan to each other's taste.

"Jennie, let me lay you down on my bed.."

I giggled

"Wow, that's very courteous of you"

She just smiled and then she switched our positions laying me down gently on her bed, she took off her shirt and she unhooked her bra giving me full view of her breasts and abs

I bit my bottom lip unconsciously

She has such a great body, I never realized how toned her arms and her stomach is

Lisa leaned down and started kissing and sucking on my neck while she unhooks my bra

"Aaaahh.. Lisa..."

She continues to kiss me while she caresses my breast gently, she also started whispering sweet nothings in my ear, telling me how

beautiful I am and how gorgeous my body is.

My heart is beating so fast it's driving me crazy.
It feels like our first time all over again

Lisa then started licking me all over my neck and then went down on my breasts sucking and licking my nipples ever so gently.

I love the feel of her full lips, her slick tongue and warm breath on my skin especially on my sensitive areas.

I can't get enough of her.

"Jagiya, You're so good, that feels so nice.." I continued to moan then I wrap my legs around her waist possessively.

She doesn't react to my terms of endearment, she probably didn't want to lose the momentum and make things awkward for the both of us, which is good because I don't want her to stop just because I'm calling her sweet names

Lisa is kissing me all over now, she went back to my lips, then my ears, my jawline, my side boobs, ribs, my stomach, until she reached the middle part of me.

She looked at me, like she's asking for permission to take off my pants and my underwear and I nodded.

She started unbuttoning my pants then slid it off of me.

She didn't take off my red laced t-back yet, She just started stroking through it slowly while putting pressure enough for my body to react and be more damp down there

I rolled my eyes back because she's making me feel so good that I'm having butterflies in my stomach.

I wanted to moan really loud but I needed to be mindful because her father might hear us.

"Ohhh.. Honey.. take my panties off and eat me now.. don't make

me beg.."

She was silent but she obeyed and she finally slid me off of my underwear throwing it somewhere on her bed then she spread my legs a little wider and positioned herself in between.

Tangelo started kissing my thighs and then inhales the scent of my lady part, she then spread my labia and gave it a long hard lick using her skillful tongue

"Aaaahhh fuhhh...Ahhhhh..." I knitted my eyebrows and covered my mouth with my right hand while my other hand on the top of her head.

Tangelo hit the spot right away again without putting so much of an effort, I honestly feel like She have already memorized my body because She knows exactly where and how to pleasure me.

Lisa continued to give my pussy long, slow, pressured licks, she's treating my privates as if it was the most tastiest lollipop she's ever licked.

"Fuuckk.. Lalisa.. ahh..I'm aaah..I--cumm--ahhhh.."

I feel myself already about to explode in her mouth

Fuck Fuck Fuck.. Jennie control it.. it's too soon to cum! don't embarrass yourself!

I held in my orgasm for as long as I could, my stomach and my bladder are starting to feel heavy from the pressure that's building up inside me

But when she inserted her long slim fingers, I knew that was it for me, I'm done

"Shit! Shiiit! Shiit!.. ahhh fuck! Lisa!...No you're going to make me cum fast---ahh stooppp.."

She only got to pump in and out of me at least 5x and then I lost it.

I squirted again.

I felt my cum dripping in between my legs that it felt like I urinated.

My body convulsed and my legs are trembling from the overwhelming sensations that she made me feel, I could've sworn I saw stars

My breathing is really heavy and my heart is beating uncontrollably- I feel like I might need to take a 30 minute nap.

:
:

After we got it together and went back to our senses, Tangelo sat up and she wiped her mouth with her fingers, She doesn't really know what to do next and neither do I so I just sat up slowly and covered myself with her blanket.

She started looking for her shirt and her underwear and she put 'em on, she then handed me my clothes so I can dress myself as well

"So uhmm.. now wh-what Miss?" Lisa asked

I'm already done dressing myself up, I'm just checking if she left any hickeys that would be visible, My family is about to have Christmas dinner in an hour so I need to look decent.

"Nothing, Same same Tangelo"

"Oh, alright.." Lisa said nodding weakly

"You're not expecting anything from me are you?"

"Of-of course not Miss.."

I looked at her for a while and then I realized something, I remembered I wanted to make my Senior Year a memorable one and maybe Lisa would be one of the pieces for my *"Memorable*

Senior Year" Experience.

Hmmm.. maybe I could make a little deal with her

"Tangelo"

"Ye-Yes Miss?"

"I have a proposition for you"

"What is it Miss..?"

"Do you want to be Friends with Benefits?" I asked with no hesitation

"Friends with Benefits Miss?" Lisa questioned innocently

I exhaled sharply and massaged my nose to control my temper

We already had sex and all and she's still clueless.

"Yes, you know? friends who have sex every now and then, no strings attached, it would be purely physical and nothing more, no feelings, no commitments, just plain sex"

"But..we're not.. exactly friends Miss.. You don't like me at all.."

I mentally rolled my eyes at her, I was going to argue but I do not have any strength right now so I decided to just go along with her.

"True. Well, let me change it then, how about Fuck buddies. is that better?" I asked sarcastically.

I don't understand why it's a big deal but whatever, she's a weirdo and I don't think I'll ever understand her.

"But Miss.. don't you have a boyfriend?"

"So?"

"So..you know?.. isn't that being unfaithful?"

I let out a sarcastic laugh

"Isn't it a little too late for you to be questioning me about being unfaithful? we already had sex, plenty of times during our first time and now it happened again, that makes you an accomplice, you wanted it to happen too."

"Yes but---"

"Just admit it Tangelo, you like it.. No, *you love* having sex with me, don't be ashamed of it, you're not going to be the first one to do so"

"This is a one time offer Tangelo, make sure you give me an honest answer...an answer you won't regret"

She didn't say anything, she's really thinking hard about it

What is there to think about? like really?

"Come on, I'm not getting any younger Tangelo, is it a Yes or a No?" I said crossing my arms while tapping my left foot impatiently

A few minutes later, she finally answered

"Ok Miss" She said but she still sounded unsure-

Oh Well.

"***grin***Good Choice. Now, since you agreed to be my Fuck Buddy, we gotta set some ground rules, I already thought of 10" I said cockily

"Alright that's fair..what are the rules Miss?"

"Ok **Number 1:** No Catching Feelings

Number 2: No Jealousy

Number 3: No Expectations

Number 4: No "After sex" Cuddles, I seriously HATE that one the most.

Number 5: No staying at each other's houses, once we're done having sex, that's it. go home.

Number 6: No updating each other about where we are or how our day went, we only text each other when we want to have sex

Number 7: Actually scratch number 6, I'm only available every Sunday since I'm busy, so it's not bad right? you'd feel less guilty since we're only gonna have sex once a week, that's it.

Number 8: No Living Soul will ever know about this deal, it's just between you and I.

Number 9: We can still have sex with whoever we want, I'm not exclusive to you and you're not exclusive to me, we don't have that kind of relationship.

Number 10: When we're at school, no interactions whatsoever, you go on with your business and I go with mine, act like this deal is non-existent, we're not doing it on school grounds either.

The advantage of this deal for you is that, I won't be bullying you anymore *ANNND* you get to have sex with the one and only Jennie Kim. how's that?

Do you agree with the conditions?" I asked her

She didn't say anything, she still looks like she's thinking twice about the sex deal, I was a bit worried she'd take back her 'Yes' but thankfully, she didn't.

"Yes Miss, the rules are reasonable"

I smiled widely "Good, alright then, I'll text you"

"Oh. do you have my number already Miss?"

"Of course, I did buy your phone didn't I?"

"Oh R-right.."

"Anyways, I gotta go Tangelo, I have a family dinner to attend to, I'll just see you around school"

"Ok Miss, I'll walk you out"

"That's ok, you don't need to do that. I know my way out. bye. And Oh! Merry Christmas" I said winking at her as I walk out her door.

:

:

I walked back to my car and smiled to myself

I got my Sex Fix and I also got Tangelo to agree to be my *'Fuck Buddy'*

I shouldn't really be surprised though, I knew she'd be easy, I mean she was a virgin when I fucked her and now that I got her wrapped around my finger, She's not going anywhere now.

She's mine to play with how I want and when I want.

I control her.

"This School Year just keeps getting better and better" I said to myself smiling with satisfaction.

I then drove off and went home, my family is expecting me for our traditional Christmas dinner and I can't be late or else I'd be in trouble.

LISA'S POV

Oh No.. what did I get myself into? I actually said yes to being Miss Kim's Fuck Buddy.

I never in a million years would think that I'll ever be in this position. She's really good at persuading people it's No wonder she's the Queen

Bee of the School.

She can really make anyone do her bidding for her.

My head hurts just thinking about the deal again, it's like I just signed my soul to the devil.

Ahhh! Lisa why are you like this?!

I mentally scolded myself while massaging my temples laying back down on my bed

But really though, we just had sex again?

I didn't think she'd want to repeat it with me since I was inexperienced.

I guess I'm good enough in bed for her to make me her Fuck Buddy, either that or I'm too easy.

Yeah it's most likely the second one, I'm such a pushover I swear.

But then again she could've made anybody her Fuck buddy but instead, she chose me.

Another voice suddenly popped into my head

What makes you so sure you're the only one?

That's right, She has her boyfriend too, It's not not just me who she gets intimate with, that's probably the reason why she only wants to do it once a week.

Is it too late to back out now? I mean it's not like we signed a contract, but then again if I do that she's going to make my life a living hell.

Part of the deal is that she's not gonna be messing with me anymore

and if I pull myself out of this deal.

I'm sure she's going to torture me 10 times worse.

Fuck!

I'm so screwed.

I need to take a shower, that would help me clear my mind.

I stood up from my bed and grabbed my towel, I already know that I'm going to need a long, hot shower

:

:

I stayed in the bathroom for about 45 minutes, when I got back, I saw a text message from an unknown number

8:00 PM Unknown Number

> Hey Blondie. It's Jennie. Save My Number but don't use my full name

Blondie? Ahh cos of my hair, got it.

8:50 PM

> Hello Miss. Ok, I'll save it

Miss Kim replied almost instantly before I could even save her number

8:50 PM Unknown Number

> Good. Nice hair by the way 😊

8:54 PM

> Thank You Miss

8:54 PM Gungdung-i

> I won't be able to see you this Sunday because I'm going back to school shopping with my friends

8:57 PM

> Ok Miss

8:57 PM Gungdung-i

> Wow, even in text messaging you have no personality whatsoever

🙄 Bye.

9:05 PM

> Goodnight Miss, Merry Christmas.

Hmmm.. I should probably install my social media accounts.

But wait, this is most likely prepaid.

I should save my data, I'll just connect to WiFi at work so I can talk to Sana and Greet her Merry Christmas.

:

:

One Week Later

Monday

We're Finally back in School, I'm a bit nervous because I have an appointment with my counselor regarding my hair.

I don't know if they'll accept my statement letter from the Salon lady but I'm hoping for the best, I can't afford to be kicked out of this School.

This is my ticket to go to College and also, if I get expelled, It's going to break My Father's Heart.

Sana is still in Japan but she messaged me that she'll be back on Wednesday, So until then, I'm going to be all by myself.

Miss Kim is meeting her end of the bargain, she hasn't made any insulting remarks or pulled any pranks on me, she's just going about her day, not making an effort to look at my direction or anything.

It's been a week since we had sex in my room, I hate to admit it

but I'm actually looking forward this coming Sunday, but that doesn't mean I'm not nervous.

I'm still not confident with how I perform when we have sex, I really want to give it all so I could please her properly, I promised myself that I'll do my best on the sex department so she won't toss me aside like an old toy and bully me again.

:

Counselor's Office

"Ms. Manoban, this is not going to work for us"

My counselor said when he finished reading the statement letter from the Salon Lady

"Bu-but Sir, I swear, it's the truth, it's out of my control..How about if I buy a black wig sir?"

"No, that's prohibited. listen, you're getting your education for free Miss Manoban, some students might get offended and think that we're tolerating you and their Parents might question the school's reputation, they're paying good money for their kids to have high quality education and they don't even dare break the rules, Pioneer High is a highly respected establishment and it's not about to be ruined just because of your hair issues"

"But I- it's not going to damage the school's reputation sir, I'm going to wear the wig right so it doesn't offend other students"

The counselor gave me a skeptical look and then he exhaled sharply

"I'll talk about it with the Principal, but until then, you're suspended for a week"

"No! Sir! I can't afford to be suspended! My grades are going to slip if I-"

"Rules are rules Miss Manoban, you're lucky we're even considering your plea, now gather your stuff and go home"

I nod understandingly and got up from my chair

"Tha-thank you sir for yo-your time, Have a Ni-nice day" I said as I bowed my head to him

He didn't say anything and he just dismissed me.

After the meeting to my counselor, I went to my lockers to get the books that I need, I figured if I'm going to be suspended then might as well do some self studying, this way, I can catch up somehow

As I'm riding the bus on my way home, I couldn't help but shed tears, I don't want to see the look of disappointment in my father's eyes once he finds out I'm suspended.

If only we have the money..

But I there's no use of complaining about being poor

I just gotta deal with the consequences of not having enough.

15.) Yeoldaseot

JENNIE'S POV

Monday- 5th Period

Where is she? Class already started 20 minutes ago and she's still not here, it's not like her to be late

I find myself waiting for Tangelo to show up to our fifth period class, I'm wondering why she's not here but she showed up on our first period earlier or was I just hallucinating?

No, I saw her come in and out of our first period so where could she be?

Should I text her?

Wait.

Ewww! No!

Why should I?!

What do I care anyway if she skips class?!

She's being irresponsible.

She probably thinks She's cool for skipping classes.

Idiot.

What a turn off.

I hate students who are slacking, It's not like she gets high marks like Jisoo and I.

Whatever, That's on Tangelo and not mine.

It's none of my business.

:

WEDNESDAY

Tangelo is still nowhere to be found. First period is almost over so there's no way she's going to show up now.

That's really weird? What's going on with that freak?

She shows up on our first day of class and during first period on Monday but I didn't see her after that.

Not like I'm looking for her or anything, it's just unusual

Tch. What's Her Problem?

:

Lunch Period came and I'm sitting with my clique at our usual table in our School Cafeteria.

Mino texted me that he's going to be shooting some hoops with his team mates since they have a game today and we're going to cheer them on later.

"Jennie-ya, how's your ankle by the way?" Rosé asked

I smiled at my friend "It's fine, I can actually walk around now, it should be ok before My Birthday Party"

"Our Birthday Party you mean, you selfish bitch" Jisoo said rolling her eyes while eating her sandwich

"Ughh! I don't understand why we have to throw one birthday party! I hate your idea! And I hate you even more for talking my parents into it!"

"Quit being a brat you moron, My parents are forcing me to do it and I really hate organizing parties since I have a lot on my plate, YOU however, doesn't have as much responsibility as me so it only makes sense that we do a one time- big time party"

"But you never help me with it! I've been doing all the work Chu!"
I whined

"Hey! I'm older than you! So do as I say and just organize our birthday party! And besides Jendeuki, you throw really great parties" Jisoo said hugging me

"Whatever Chu"

"Oh come on Jendeuki, I promise I won't steal your spotlight"

I rolled my eyes at her "Fine."

My cousin will stay true to her word, she hates the spotlight so

either way, it's still going to be about me.

"By the way Jennie-ya, whatever happened to that freak you were with when you were stuck in the cabin?" Tzuyu asked

I shrugged

"Nothing, she's just.. sort of everywhere I guess, being boring and weird, as usual"

"I haven't seen her though, usually she would be here after class right? Since she helps her dad cleaning up the classrooms?" Jisoo said

"Aww I'm worried, what if she's sick or something?" Rosé added, genuinely feeling bad for Tangelo.

She has a kind heart so it's not new that she gets concerned even to people she doesn't know very well.

"She happens to have a strong immune system" I blurted out of nowhere

They all gave me a weird look

"How do you even know that Jennie?" Irene asked raising an eyebrow

Shit!

Busted!

Think Fast Jennie!

"She told me when we were stuck in the cabin, remember I told you how we got rained on and I had a fever and she didn't? It's like nothing to her, She's a freak of nature babe" I answered

"Oh...Right. I thought you guys are having some sort of secret friendship now or something"

"That'll be a dream come true for her" I said laughing and Tzuyu gave me a high five

My cousin then leaned in and whispered something in my ear "But isn't that your type anyway Jendeuki? You like a freak, it's like your weird fetish or something"

I whispered back at her "Keep talking shit Chu or you'll be celebrating your birthday alone"

She moved away from me laughing and shaking her head while I give her the middle finger.

"Hey, Look, it's the other freak" Tzuyu said eyeing someone in front of her

I turned to my side and I saw Sana looking lost like she doesn't know where to sit

Couple of minutes later, some guys approached her asking her to come to their table but she refused.

She ended up walking away from the cafeteria

"Sana without Lisa isn't normal at all, I'm so used to seeing them all clingy" Jisoo stated her observation innocently

I was going to say something mean about Sana when Chewy Spoke up

"Well, maybe they both need to grow some balls and be independent once in a while. Two weirdos coming together is just too much too handle, they make me cringe with their closeness"

"You took the words right out of my mouth Sister"

"**grin** Oh I love it when people get Jealous and they're in denial about it" My cousin said out-loud

Tzuyu and I visibly froze

"Heh? What are you talking about weirdo?" Irene asked

"Nothing, you know me, I'm random like that, anyways I gotta go meet up with my boy toy, see you later girls"

Jisoo stood up, exiting the cafeteria

We didn't say anything and continued to eat our lunch as more people approached our table to say Hi or have a little chit chat with us.

Good thing Rosé's focused with her studies while Irene was busy texting her boyfriend so they didn't push through Jisoo's random outburst

But even then, my mind kept wandering back to Tangelo. I'm really tempted to text her to see what's going on but my pride won't let me.

It feels so weird without her here, I somehow feel something heavy on my chest.

I haven't seen her for at least 72 hours now and I start to feel that longing again.

*Maybe I should ask Sana? I'm pretty sure she knows something.
But that would make me look like I care or maybe even desperate.*

What do I do?

I made up that rule about not updating each other and she's very compliant about it.

Ugggh! I should've thought about the rules that I set first.

We didn't get to have sex last Sunday and I was hoping we could make up the lost day on one of the weekdays but there's no sign of her anywhere.

:

After School, I was on my way to the Gym to meet up with my team with Lisa still on my mind when I saw Sana walking to her Car.

I should ask her, This way, I'm not breaking any rules

I approached Sana because I'm desperate to get answers.

She was about to get in to her car when I greeted her.

"Hey Minatozaki, what's up?" I said which caused her to startle

"Hey uh..Kim? do you need something?"

"Miss C. is concerned, Lisa hasn't been in school for 3 days and she's wondering where she is"

She smirked and let out laugh but she stopped and gave me a knowing look which made me uncomfortable but I didn't let it show

"Miss C. huh? interesting.."

"Yes. do you find this funny?" I spat back, crossing my arms

"I mean yeah, Miss C. being a teacher and all should've been the first one to know about her student's status right?"

I mentally facepalmed myself

Fuck!

She's right!

Why didn't think I think about asking Miss C.first instead of asking this bitch?!

This is what I get for being so careless and eager.

"Well, if *She* must know, Lisa is suspended from school"

I was surprised by the news

What is the reason she got suspended?

"She..She's what? why?"

*****sigh**** They suspended her because of her hair. They gave Lisa until end of winter break to dye it to a much darker color but since

her hair was too orange, dying it back to black would be impossible to achieve all at once, they didn't want to accept her ash blonde hair since it's not her natural hair color-she's a candidate for possible expulsion"

*So she's been suspended just because of her hair?
And she might get expelled because of it?!*

Somebody needs to explain this shit to me and they better come up with a really good reason for suspending Tangelo or else their job is going to be in jeopardy!

"Kim? hello? you there?"

"Yeah. Thanks Minatozaki" was all I said and then I walked away

:

I went to the Gym to have a little talk with Seulgi.

"Seulgi, can you take over babe? I won't be able to go to the game, something important came up"

"What happened babe? Is everything ok?"

I smiled at her "Yeah, I just need to address something ASAP before it gets out of hand"

"Go do your thing Jen, we'll be ok, I hope everything goes well with you" She said hugging me

"Oh it will, I'll make sure of it"

"Thanks Seulgi. I gotta go, let the team know alright? Bye and Take care"

:

After the talk with my friend, I went straight to my car and drove to Lisa's House.

72 hours of not seeing her face is too long for me to bear

I'm missing her so much

I need to see her..

I need to be near her..

I need to kiss her before I completely lose it!

I reached her house in record time, I drove as fast as I could because I want to see Lisa as soon as possible

I knocked desperately at the door, I know her dad is still at school so it's just going to be us here.

After a few minutes she finally answered the door and when she did, a surprised look was painted all over her face

"Mi-miss Kim what are you--"

I ignored her and went straight in to her house and closed the door behind us making sure I lock it.

I stared at her for a minute and then I grabbed her hand and I lead us to her bedroom.

When we reached our destination, I locked us both in and then I pushed her down the bed with her falling on her back.

"Miss--"

"Shut up and Fuck Me!" I demanded then I positioned myself on top of her pinning her down kissing her lips and neck desperately.

She responds right away and kissed me back just as much but she suddenly stopped

"What's the matter?! Why are you not kissing me back?!"

"Mi-Miss Kim, It's not Sunday"

I gave her a baffled look

Is she seriously rejecting me right now?!

I came all the way here just to see her, I talked to the one person that I didn't like just to know what's going on with her.

*I ditched and lied to my team just so I could get some alone time with her because I'm missing her so much and she says 'No' to me because **it's not Sunday?!***

There's seriously something wrong with this chick!

"Ughh! Are you an idiot or what?! Here I am throwing myself at you and you say 'No' to me?!" I yelled as I get off her lap

"Miss, I'm just following the rules that you set, I'm sorry, I didn't mean to offend You.."

I ran a hand through my hair and paced back and forth due to my frustrations with her

"Where have you been Tangelo?!" I asked her even though I already know what happened

She looked at me with a very sad facial expression--Tear threatening to fall from Her eyes

"I've been Home, Miss. School suspended me because of my hair and I might even get expelled because of it.." Tangelo answered then tears stream down her face completely

Seeing her cry caused a pain in my chest.

Before her and I got involved, I would've found this scene hilarious, But now, It's just making me want to hunt down and kill

whoever caused her this much distress.

I crouched down and I hugged her tight while rubbing her back to comfort her

"Sssshh...Don't cry Tangelo. I'm here, I'm not going to let them expel You"

I'm not going to let them take you away from me

She continued sobbing while she clings on to me desperately.

I felt myself getting emotional as well because I know how important this is for her but I held it in.

I broke off our hug and kissed her lips passionately causing me to feel like there's thousands of butterflies in my stomach.

I pulled away from our kiss slowly and I gave her a warm smile and then I wiped her tears away

"I'm gonna fix this Tangelo, alright? Don't cry anymore, I don't like seeing you like this"

Lisa nodded and She unintentionally did a small pout.

She looks like a cute, adorable baby duckie.

I wanted to squeal but She might think that I'm not taking her seriously so I stopped myself from doing so.

I really can't control my actions with Tangelo anymore.

I'm never one to be this affectionate and concerned to my past boyfriends let alone with my flings but with her? It just comes out naturally.

It looks like she doesn't mind anyway, Either that or she's just too scared to point out how I'm being sweet to her all of a sudden.

"Did you eat already, Tangelo? I could order us some food if you want"

"N-no Miss, I haven't eaten yet.."

"Ok, Do you want to eat some pizza or maybe burgers?"

"No, that's ok Miss..We have left over rice and vegetables and couple of eggs, I could make bibimbap out of it"

"If you want to eat some rice then I'll order something else, like Thai food or Korean, but you're not eating the left overs, I don't want you getting sick"

"I won't Miss I'm used to eating left overs"

"I'm ordering us something, and don't you dare say No again Tangelo"

"Oh..uhm.. alright I'll just repay you then Miss"

"Fine, you can repay me by giving me orgasms after we eat" I said nonchalantly

"But Miss it's not-"

"If you say '*it's not Sunday*' one more time you're dead, let me remind you that we didn't get to have sex last Sunday and this is Us making up for it, I'm just trying to keep my end of the bargain"

"Ye-yeah.. I guess that makes sense, Miss.."

"One more thing, when we're alone, Call me Jennie"

She gave me her warmest smile and nodded "Ok, Jennie"

My heart fluttered.

I love how my name just rolls out of her tongue effortlessly.

Honey or Jagiya would work too..

WAIT.

NO!

NO!

DISGUSTING!

I ordered some Thai and Korean food for us, and while we're waiting, I decided to make out with her to warm her up.

We're still in her room, Tangelo is still sitting on her bed while I straddle her.

I really love this position because I get the most body heat and contact from her, and it feels more intimate and romantic.

My top is off and I'm just wearing my black bra with my matching black laced panties, I want to to give her something she can look forward to.

I want to excite her and I want her to lust over me.

I love kissing Tangelo

Her lips are so full and thick, Her breath is so warm but it taste of mint and strawberry at the same time.

She taste so good and I can't get enough of her.

"..Lalisa, You have such delicious lips.." I said dreamily as she continues to kiss me on my lips and on my neck.

She's driving me Nuts!
Her Lips Are Mine..
She's Mine!

I was never the possessive type.
Why?
Because I never had the need to
...Until I met Her.

I'm not trying to be narcissistic but my past flings and boyfriends, even Mino, they all submit themselves completely to me without me having to ask

I NEVER come to them, They come to me.

But even though Tangerine also submits herself to me, I still have this need to own her.

Before, I didn't understand why some girls would want to be with their significant others almost 24/7--

But now I..

Possessive
--I'm starting to be one because of Her

In fact, I think I already am.

I never would've thought that I'd become like this and I'm not even really trying to do anything about it.

I don't want to stop being possessive because I'm afraid that If I did, Tangelo is gonna slip away from me and there's no way in hell that I'm gonna let that happen.

I'm aware that I'm developing a sense of entitlement towards her and frankly, I don't care.

I pulled away from our Kiss and looked at her intently while I caress her cheek

I studied her face without realizing

Her eyebrows are a bit all over the place but still cute.

She has pretty eyelashes, It's so thick and long.

Her eyes are so big and round and if I look at it closely, Tangelo's eye color is actually light brown.

She has the most adorable nose--

I then traced my thumb on her bottom lip

And her lips--

Her lips are so seductively sexy.

I gave her another quick kiss and I whispered to Her.

"You're Mine, All Mine..You understand me?"

I looked deep into her eyes because I want her to see how serious I am.

She didn't say anything but she nodded in agreement.

I smiled and made out with her some more

"Mmmmm..Hey.. I'm horney. Actually, I've been horney since I got here, let's do a quickie"

"What's a--mmppphhhh!!!"

I kissed her to shut her up, I already know she's going to ask me what a quickie is, so instead of explaining it to her, I'm just going to show her

This little dork of mine has a lot more to learn about being intimate, lucky for her I'm her willing volunteer, she's welcome to practice on me as much as she wants.

Or should I say, As much as I want

Poor, Poor Lisa.

I know I said that we're allowed to sleep with other people but in Reality, that rule only applies to me

You're not allowed to have sex with anyone else except for me.

You and Your body are only exclusive to me.

I'm keeping you for as long as I want.

Lisa, Life isn't fair.

I know I'm not being fair but,

That's just how it is.

And You're about to find that out.

In the sweetest and the most pleasurable way

16.) Yeolyeoseot

JENNIE'S POV

I didn't go home from Lisa's house until it was around 11pm. We were just eating some food and then she eats me and then repeat that times 10...or more? I'm not really sure, but who's counting?

Anyways I told her to go to school tomorrow, I'll deal with her situation and re-assured her that she doesn't need to worry anymore. She was skeptical but I eventually convinced her to trust me.

:

I'm in my room right now, I just got done taking a hot shower and my nightly routine then I went to my bed and texted Tangelo to remind her about attending her classes tomorrow.

I know I already told her over and over but I just wanted to make an excuse so I could text her goodnight.

12:00 AM

> Hey. Are you awake?

12:03 AM Orange 🍊

> Yes Miss

12:03 AM

> Don't forget to come to school tomorrow okay?

12:08 AM Orange 🍊

> Yes Miss, my uniform is ready

12:08 AM

> Good.

I waited for at least 10 minutes for her to reply but she didn't, I was hoping she'd make an effort to make our conversation longer but I guess she doesn't have any plans to do so

12:18 AM

> Thank You for tonight Tangelo, Let's do it again Sunday 🙏

I waited for another 10 minutes but still no reply from her.. I'm feeling rejected all of a sudden

Am I doing too much? but I only wanted to say goodnight to her..

Is she sleeping already?

Or probably texting someone?

Is it Sana? But she said she doesn't like Sana like that..

I'm not usually one to initiate conversations through texting

I ignore text messages.

It doesn't matter if they're my Family or Friends, I don't usually bother replying but when it comes to Lisa, I get excited and my heart flutters, so her not replying to my texts is making me a little paranoid.

12:30 AM

> Fine. Don't Reply. I Hate You.

I slammed my phone on the side table and put it on mute.

I'm so frustrated with her! She's acting like we didn't just have sex almost 2 hours ago.

Even before I went home I let her have me and now she's treating me like I'm some cheap slut.

Does us having sex mean nothing? Am I just a play thing to her?

I know in my mind I said that I'm willing to be her practice dummy but...doesn't she feel anything for me...like at all?

Not that I want her to.. Do I?

I don't like this...We've only just begun and I already feel like I'm becoming too invested with our deal and she's just enjoying it as much as she can until she gets bored with me..

Wait.. What if she does get bored with me? Then what? Is it the End for Us?

No...

Oh No...

What do I do?!

I can't let that happen..

What if she realizes she doesn't want me anymore because I keep throwing myself at her

I mostly initiate it when we have sex, what if she's getting turned off because of it??

No, that's impossible---She responds almost instantly to me..

Uughhh! Stop it Jennie! You're getting Paranoid over nothing

In the end, I put her on "Hide Notifications" so my phone won't alert me if she texted me or not, and I also turned on the "Send Read Receipts" So when she text back tomorrow, I'm just going to read but I won't reply so she's going to know that I'm deliberately ignoring her.

..But even then, I still waited for about an hour for her to text me back until I fall asleep.

:

I finally received a text from Tangelo

4:32 AM Orange 🍊

>Miss! I'm so sorry I didn't get to reply last night, I fell asleep, I was really exhausted, I hope you're not upset Miss..

Ahh.. so she did fall asleep..

I left her on read, She fell asleep without saying Good night last night so I'm not going to reply to her, I know I'm being Petty as fuck but I don't care.

I hate being ignored.

I then got up from my bed and decided to get ready to start my day, I'm going to see Lisa at school later so today should be a great day

:

:

I decided to come a little bit early because I know she helps her dad clean up the classrooms.

I wanted to see her right away so I rushed to go to school

When I got there, I texted her

6:15 AM

>Where are you?

I waited for 10 minutes but no reply, she's probably busy with cleaning so I decided to call her

After 5 rings she finally answered

LS: Yeoboseyo?

JN: Did you receive my text Tangelo?

I asked her with an antsy tone

LS: I probably did Miss but I haven't read it yet, I'm sorry, I haven't checked my phone since I'm cleaning

I huffed in frustration, She just wasted 10 minutes of our time when we could've been making out.

Fine, I'll let it go..

JN: Is that so? Where are you now

LS: Oh, I'm in room 315 Miss, I'm halfway done

Good, that room isn't too far from where I'm at right now

JN: Ok. bye.

Was all I said to her and then I hung up, I hurriedly went to where she's at.

When I got to room 315, I peeked inside and saw her wiping the white board. I smiled to myself unconsciously at the sight of her, I feel so happy seeing her in the morning

I then went inside and locked the door behind me, making sure I close the blinds. She heard what I did and looked almost instantly towards my direction looking surprised

"Mi-Miss, Good Morning, what are you doing here so early?" She asked with a confused look on her face.

Good Morning indeed, Lisa

I gave her a warm smile

"I came here to see you" I answered truthfully then I approached her

When I got closed enough, I kissed her lips with so much intensity and without giving it much of a thought then I wrapped my arms

around her neck so we can have a closer body contact

I Miss Tangelo A Lot.

I know I just saw her yesterday and stayed late at her place but it's still not enough for me

I pulled away from our kiss to catch my breath

*"*hah* *hah* Lalisa.. *hah* "*

And then I went back to kissing her again.

Tangelo gives me the best kisses and I seriously would never get tired of it.

She rubbed my back then she slid her hands down my butt and she cupped both cheeks which caused me to moan

But after a few minutes of touching and kissing, she broke off our Kiss all of a sudden. I looked at her confused for a second, then I leaned in once again to capture her lips but she totally avoided me.

"What's the matter now?" I asked trying to control my temper

"Mi-miss we're in School.."

"So? I locked the doors and closed the blinds Lisa"

"But you said we're not doing it on school grounds Miss.."

Omg! She's so annoying!

"Ugh! We're not having sex! I was just kissing you!" I said irritated

"Yeah but it might lead up to us doing.. you know.." she says shyly

I scoffed "So what?"

"But Miss You're the one who said that--"

"Tangelo shut up! Can you forget about the damn rules for like 2 minutes?!" I raised my voice getting more and more frustrated with her

"So-sorry miss... please don't be upset, I just don't want us to get in trouble.. I can't really afford to mess up again.."

I sighed deeply and ran a hand through my hair and just sat down in one of the chairs

"Mi-miss?" She called out cautiously then I glared at her

"What? Don't tell me I'm not allowed to sit on the chair either? Let me remind you that My Family owns the school, so this chair is in my possession"

"N-no not that Miss.. I was just gonna say that I'm done cleaning and I'm moving to the next room before class starts"

"Then Go Tangelo!" I said rolling my eyes at her

"Will you be alright here Miss?" She asked worriedly

"What do you think?! You left me high and dry and you're going to ask me if I'm going to be okay? And what did I say to you last night, when we're alone, call me Jennie!"

"I apologize Jen.. I'll clean the next room as fast as I can and maybe I could give you uhmm..a uh.. quickie.." She said then she clears her throat while looking away

I was a bit surprised when she said that because it was a pretty bold statement considering it's Tangelo.

I will say yes to that of course but I'm going to play hard to get first, I don't want her to think that she could get me easily even though in reality she can have me whenever she wants.

"What? Pity Sex? Is that it? What do you take me for?!" I said acting insulted

Her eyes widened in surprise and covered her mouth briefly, she really thought she offended me

"Wh-what?? Oh my goodness.. no! I didn't realize that it's going to come out that way! I'm sorry Miss! I mean Jennie! I take back what

I said!" She said panicking

Stupid! She's so gullible! I have to intervene quick before she changes her mind

"But!! Uh.. if you insist then yeah ok, I'm up for a quickie" I said trying not to sound too excited

"No.. but, that was really disrespectful Jennie-ya.. Sorry I really didn't mean to-"

Oh My Lord...This Mandarin Orange Freak Talks Too Damn Much!

"Shut up! I already said yes didn't I?! Now hurry up and clean the next room! I'll help you so it'll be faster"

"Je-Jennie you don't have to--"

I didn't let her finish and I just walked out the room and I waited for her outside,

"Hurry Up Tangerine! Jisoos!" I said crossing my arms while tapping my foot impatiently

I saw her take a deep breath then she followed me

It took about 15 minutes to clean the next classroom and as soon as we're done, I dragged her to the nearest restroom and I locked ourselves in. We only have 25 minutes left before the School Gates open and I want to get as much action as I can.

:

:

"Oh Fuck.. fuhh..uungghhh..ahhh.. Lisa fuck me harder.. shiit.." I'm seated on the sink of the girl's restroom while Lisa is semi-kneeling, eating me out while she fingers me.. I already came twice and this is our 'Round Three'

"Oooh.. Lisa fuck.. that feels so fucking good.." I said as I bury her face deeper in between my legs "I'm almost there..ahh fuhh....I'm cumm-"

And before I know it, I came all over her mouth for the third time

"...Aaahhhh... **hah* *hah* gulp *hah** Li-Lisa.. tha-that was fucking intense.. **hah**" -I said out of breath as I lean back on the mirrored wall, Lisa supported me first making sure I'm steady and safe before she stood up awkwardly while slowly wiping her face with her forearm

I stared at her with a dazed expression but I'm still able to make out her cute face.

She's so Adorable..

"Come here Honey.." I said whispering while I held out my arms

She approached me and when she was close enough, I put my arms around her neck hugging her tight and then I kissed her lips deeply

"Mmmmm..." I moaned while kissing her but after about 2 minutes she pulled away from me, I was going to yell at her again but then she reminded me that classes are about to start.

"Jennie-ya, We need to get ready, The school gates are about to open" She says

I sighed and nodded slowly

She helped me put on my underwear and carried me off the sink

"Are you ok Jennie-ya?" She asked worriedly

I smiled at her and cupped her cheek while I look deep into her eyes

"Yes..I feel great actually, all thanks to you"

She cleared her throat and she just nodded

"Uhm.. I uh, I'm gonna get my tooth brush in my locker so Uhm.."

"Go ahead, I'll stay here and fix my make up and my hair.." I said as I continue to stare at her longingly

"Oh ok.. uhm..See you first period then.." Tangelo said shyly

"See you..Honey" I said winking at her then I bit my lower lip

She just gave me a tight lip smile and scurried away.

I, on the other hand, can't stop smiling.

I wish for my mornings to be like this all the time but I know it's not possible since I had to make up those stupid rules like not doing it on school grounds

*Why the hell did I do that? And now I'm paying for the consequences..
Tch. Me and My Damn Pride.*

I fixed myself up making sure my make up is flawless and my hair is perfect, I want to look good for her.

I want to impress her even though she just fucked my brains out not even 10 minutes ago.

Lalisa..

Just thinking about her makes me feel so happy, nervous and excited all at the same time, She makes me feel good.. not just with sex but my overall mood changes to a more positive one.

LISA'S POV

After Miss Kim and I finished our "Session", I quickly went to my locker to grab my toothbrush and toothpaste and then went to the nearest restroom to brush my teeth.

Don't get any wrong ideas though, First of all, I've always brought toothbrush and toothpaste with me since me and my papa come here early, I brush my teeth twice in the morning, first one is after me and my papa eat breakfast, second is after I clean the classrooms

How was I supposed to know that Miss Kim and I would have an unexpected.. intimacy in School?

:
:

I'm by my locker to grab my books from first period when I suddenly felt arms around my waist

"Lisa-chan! Oh my gosh! you're here!! I missed you!" Sana greeted me hugging me from behind

****Ooof**** "Sa-Sana-chan, I can't breathe, you're hugging me too tight" I said to her

My Friend pulled away from me giggling

"Whoopsies, sorry boo, but for real, I've missed you a lot! did they finally consider you back?" Sana asked concerned

"Uhm.. I'm not really sure yet, I'm just taking my chances Sana-chan.."

I can't exactly tell her the real reason why I'm back here in School, Miss Kim told me no one is to know about her and I having any kind of interaction whatsoever.

I don't want to get in trouble with her and I don't want my friend to get involved.

Sana looked at me like she didn't believe a word I just said. She's a smart woman, I know she didn't buy my excuse but she chose to give me an understanding smile anyway.

"I'm sorry Sana-chan for not being in school.."

"Why be sorry? it's not your fault Lisa-chan, I'm just glad you're back, I felt lonely without you sis" She said pouting

I chuckled

"Lonely without me? I happen to know a lot of people want to be friends with you but instead you choose to hangout with a loser like

me"

She shook her head looking disappointed "Tch. I hate it when you say things like that, I happen to love your company, you're really funny and never boring to talk to"

"Thanks Sana-chan, I'm glad I have you"

"Me too sis" She says and then she hugged me and I hugged her back

While me and my friend were having out little reunion, someone suddenly cleared their throat loudly

****AHEEEEMMMM!!!****

Sana and I got startled and broke off our hug immediately. we both looked at the direction where the sound came from..

It's Miss Kim with her friend Chou, Tzuyu---Both are looking really upset.

"Manoban, Minatozaki. Public Displays of Affection are Prohibited on School Grounds" Miss Kim said as she glares at the both of us

"Minatozaki, We know you're new here but we also know you're not an idiot, so this is just you being defiant right? Who do you think you are and What are you trying to prove?" Tzuyu added crossing her arms giving an exclusive dirty look at Sana

Sana smirked at Jennie's friend and went toe to toe with her

"Tsk tsk, Tzuyu ssi, I'm not trying to prove anything at all, don't look too upset now.. it doesn't look good on you.." Sana said to Tzuyu with a certain tone

Tzuyu-ssi looked uncomfortable and she looks like she's blushing?

Okay?

What's going on with Sana and Tzuyu-ssi?

Did I miss something?

Sana then looked directly at Miss Kim.

"And Kim, you got it all wrong, we were just having a little friendly reunion, it's not like we're making out" My friend said smugly.

Oh no..no. Sana-chan.. don't talk back!

Miss Kim's going to kill the both of us!

I hesitantly looked at Miss Kim and I regretted it instantly.

If I thought she was upset earlier, well, right now, she looks really really angry and she's not even trying to hide it.

Miss Kim went and pulled back Tzuyu-ssi gently behind her away from Sana as she steps forward---and now, She's the one who's now toe to toe with My Friend invading her personal space while glaring at her.

"Listen Minatozaki, I don't know who the hell you think you're talking to but if you think you can continuously get away from smart-mouthing me then you couldn't have been more wrong. You're messing with the wrong person. **Do Not** Cross Me" Miss Kim said warning Sana

I stood on the side not really knowing what to do, I'm a bit shaken up with what's going on.

I admire Sana-chan for standing her ground.

Sana shook her head letting out a small laugh "Ha. Kim, you're being really really obvious right now. it's very cute"

Miss Kim didn't say anything and just continued to give Sana a very nasty look.

"Don't worry God-sis, I'm not going to take the *Orenji* from you, it's all yours.."

Sana paused.

I don't know if I'm imagining things but I saw Her giving Tzuyu a meaningful look and then she looked back at Miss Kim and

continued

"I just like the *Orenji* as a friend..I have no interest with it. I'm curious about someone else so try not to start anything with me arraseo? I don't want any misunderstanding with my person of interest, it might end something that hasn't even started yet.."

Sana then looked at my direction smiling

"Lisa-chan, I just remembered I need to get something from my car, I'll just see you first period okay? and like I told you before, watch out for the green-eyed monster"

"..And Tzuyu-ssi, you look really pretty today, you should smile more, You might lose your girl crush status that way and you wouldn't want that right?" she said

Tzuyu-ssi went wide-eyed and she blushed profusely

"Wh-what are you talking about Minatozaki? Shut up!" She said clearing her throat and then she looks away while Jennie gave Sana a weird look

"***giggle*** I'll see you later Lisa-chan" She said while she gives me a quick tight hug and then she walks away.

I saw Miss Kim open her mouth looking surprised with Sana's action and then she scowled at me.

She then walked away, pulling Tzuyu-ssi with her but not without bumping hard with my right shoulder which resulted with my back hitting the lockers behind me

"Owww...what did I do this time?"

Sigh

Miss Kim is really confusing.

One minute she's being sweet the next minute she's being mean again.. I don't understand her.

:
:
:

I walk towards to my first period class, I entered the class room at the back door, I don't want Miss Kim to see me, I sat down to my seat and I noticed she's not in class yet.

Huh. I thought for sure she'd be here by now

Sana came in shortly after and sat beside me

"Hey. How was the Green-Eyes?" She said smirking

"Sana-chan, I really don't have any idea who you're talking about, who is this green eyes and what is an Orenji?"

"It's for me to know and for you to find out"

"And by the way, you really pissed off Miss Kim and Tzuyu, you're lucky you're still alive" I whispered

"Pssshh, I'm not scared of them, I'm not doing anything wrong. anyways, want to come with me later at the airport? my cousin Mina is coming to visit Momo-senpai and me, I want you to meet her, she's really cool"

"Sure, what time? cos you know I have to help my papa after school"

"Yes of course, like around 7:30pm, is that cool? we'll drop off uncle first to your house then straight to the airport "

"Ok, Thanks Sana-chan, I'll let papa know"

After a few minutes, Miss Kim finally entered our class with her boyfriend Mino.

She's laughing and giggling while Mino whispers something to her ear--They're being awfully sweet.

I'm not going to deny it, I felt a pang of Jealousy in my chest. I know Miss Kim and I are just '*fuck buddies*' but I couldn't help what I feel..

She looked at my direction and then she made out with Mino in front of me and of the class. There's only a few students here, minding their own business because they would NEVER dare look at Miss Kim when she does things that are supposedly "*Prohibited*"

I looked at Sana's direction instead to avoid the heartache.

My gave me a sympathetic look while rubbing my back.

"It's alright Lisa-chan" she says and I just smiled at her, I felt teary eyed but I held it in and I smiled back at her

"Bye babe, I love you" I heard Mino say before leaving

"love you too, baby" Miss Kim said, giving him another peck on the lips and then she sat down in her chair

Our first period teacher came in before the bell rang, and all the students are already present, the teacher started his lesson right away

Halfway through the class, My Phone Vibrated

07:55 AM Gungdung-i

> You've got some nerve flirting with Minatozaki right in front me

07:55 AM

> Miss Kim, Sana already told you it's not like that at all, we don't have that kind of relationship

07:56 AM Gungdung-i

> You Liar! After fucking me in the restroom you go straight to her? don't you have any shame at all?

07:57 AM

> I'm not lying, please stop accusing me Miss Kim

07:58 AM Gungdung-i

> It's not accusing when I say are facts! I hate you! you stupid tangerine freak! you make me sick! I don't want to see your fucking

face!

08:00

> Miss Kim, Stop, You're getting upset over nothing. I swear to you nothing's going on between Sana and I..

She didn't reply anymore, I already know she's gonna end me as soon as she gets the chance.

:

:

When first period ended, Sana and I walked to our lockers when Miss C approached us and greeted the both us

"Ohayou Sana-chan" She said smiling at my friend

"Ohayou Miss C." Sana greeted back bowing at our teacher

"Lisa-ya! welcome back! I heard the good news! they re-considered you, How you did it I don't know and I don't care, I'm just glad you're back!" Miss C. said excitedly

"Thanks Miss C. it's good to be back" I said to her

Wow, Miss Kim really made it happen

So I AM officially a student again..

I really gotta thank her, I owe her one.

"Anyways, I have a little favor to ask you, can you meet me later during lunch?" Miss C. asked

"Sure, but what is the meet up for Miss C.?"

"Well, you know that sexy dance assignment that's due supposedly next week, I kind of need your help to demonstrate with the students how it's done, you know how they are, they might question why the T.A. (you) isn't going to do it when you yourself is a student"

"Hmm makes sense Miss C. what do you want me to do?"

"Can you meet me in the dance room? and we'll shoot the dance? it's less than 2 minutes if you remember and you've seen it already

right? before winter break?"

"Yes Miss C. but I don't have anything to wear" I said to her

"Don't worry about it, I got you. the outfits are ready, free lunch on me, Sana-chan you can come too"

"Wait Miss C do I need to do the assignment too?" Sana asked

"Yes Sana-chan, we don't want them to think just because you're new you're exempted" Miss C. explained

"Ahh, got you, then I'll definitely go with Lisa-chan to see the steps"
She said smiling

"Ok, see you guys later then, bye" Miss C. said

"Bye Miss C." we both said while we wave her a good bye

"Alright well, I'll see you later Lisa-chan, text me" Sana said

"Bye Sana-chan, See ya"

And with that, we went on our separate ways to go to our 2nd Period.

17.) Yeolilgop

A/N: 10/2/2020 Since It's BlackPink's Album Release, here's another chapter for you lovely people ☐♥☐

JENNIE'S POV

That damn tangerine, how is she going to deny that she isn't flirting with Sana when I literally saw it with my own two eyes earlier this morning.

And that stupid Sana..

She's really pushing my buttons, She flirts with Tzuyu then she dares hug My..I mean!! Tangerine in front of me! What a certified hoe-bag!

Just because she's my father's God-daughter, that doesn't mean she can just prance around here in MY school acting like she can get away with anything.

I'm still THE actual daughter of the owner and I'm sure if shit goes down my dad would back me up.

Yes, I already know Sana is my father's God-daughter, My Father told me about her during Our Family Christmas gathering before this School quarter started.

Flashback to Christmas

After that mind blowing sex and the deal that I made with Lisa, I went home to catch up on our Family's Holiday get together

The whole family is in our house tonight for Christmas, My uncles, aunties and cousins are all here to celebrate. It's our family tradition, no matter how busy my parents are and the other elder Kims, they all make sure that we see each other during the holidays, it may not look like it but My Family has a really close bond even though we barely see each other.

Jisoo and I are sitting in the living room with some of our cousins when my father called the both of us

"Jennie-ya, Jisoo-ya, come here for a second" My dad said, he's in the hallway near the living room. We both stood up and approached him

"Yes uncle what's up?" Jisoo asked

"My God-daughter is attending Pioneer next quarter, I want you guys to give her a warm welcome and be friends with her arraseo? her father is a dear friend of mine from college so I expect you guys to be nice to her, especially you Jennie-ya" My father said laughing

I rolled my eyes at him while Jisoo laughed with him

"Sure Uncle, what's her name?"

"Sana, Sana Minatozaki, She actually did a sit in before winter break"

I froze when I heard her name while Jisoo laughed louder

"No. Freaking. Way! Oh I love how everything is so ironic, I'm here for the drama" Jisoo said as she continues to laugh by implying something, but my father didn't catch it.

"You girls met her already?" My Father asked and of course Jisoo has something smart to say, she always does.

"Yes Uncle! we have, actually, Jendeuki and her got very acquainted a few times, they really get along" She said while nudging my side wiggling her eyebrows

"Oh that's good to hear then, good job girls, and continue making us proud, I don't ask for much but I expect you guys to maintain your academic status alright? Sana is considered a genius back in Japan like the both of you so you girls actually have some competition, Study hard" My father reminded us

"Yes Uncle, you can count on us and you can count on Jendeuki on being best friends with Sana" Jisoo said while she puts her arms around my shoulder

My father smiled and then he went on his way to mingle with his siblings and in-laws, when I'm sure he's gone, I elbowed my cousin's side

really hard

"Owww.. Jendeuki..that really hurts" She says grimacing in pain

I ignored her and went back to the Living Room

Jisoo's right, how ironic that the person I don't like the most is connected to me somehow, I'm so annoyed. no wonder that bitch Sana acts all high and mighty.

This is going to be a long school year..

*****End of Flashback*****

I'm on my way now to my fifth period with My Boyfriend walking me while he holds my hand, I couldn't help but to compare his hand with hers..actually not just holding hands, but even with kisses and being intimate.

Mino's hand is not as soft, warm and comforting unlike Lisa's delicate ones..

I like how Lisa kisses me so gently with her lips so soft and warm while Mino's lips are so chappy and he kisses me so roughly, well not rough but compared to Lisa, he's a..

Sigh..

See what I mean?

"Ok, we're here babe, I'll walk you to your 6th period" Mino said

"You don't have to do that" I said to him

"But I want to, please let me" he begged

He's been extra clingy ever since that incident when Lisa and I got lost in the woods, he actually wanted to come with us to Iceland but I didn't want him to because it's a girl's trip and no boys were allowed.

Even if Nayeon and Jisoo said he could come, I still wouldn't let him because I don't want him spoiling my Iceland trip because I already know he's going to stick himself to me 24/7 and besides, I was too busy thinking about Tangerine.

"Fine. see you later then" I said

"I love you, Jennie." He said kissing my temple

"You too" I said and then I went in class

When I entered the room, almost all the students are present including Sana and Tangerine.

They're not sitting together though since Tangerine sits with Miss C. While Sana is sitting with a group of people because her sit-in days are over. The girl is a charmer, she can easily befriend anyone but yet she chooses to stick with MY.. I mean, Tangelo.

I sat down on my chair and I was greeted by my friends. Miss C started the class right after

"Ok Class, you guys remember the assignment that you had to do right? The sexy dance that I showed you last time? I'm going to show it to you one more time but this time with one of my own students, more specifically Lisa, we shot a video earlier and I'm going to play it, it's due next Friday, I expect you guys to learn it since it's only less than 2 minutes, I change the requirement by the way, you can either perform it in front of the class or shoot a video like this one."

*She shot a sexy dance video huh? This should be good---*I thought to myself feeling really excited, I know she's a great dancer and I'm sure she'll do well

"Ok class are you ready?"

"Yes Miss C." We all said in unison

Our Teacher smiled and she turned on the projector and then turned off the lights.

I had no idea that what she's about to play would make me dizzy the whole day.

I wasn't ready

The Video hasn't even started yet and I'm already feeling.. Hot..

It's only showing Tangelo's back and I'm already feeling excited down there...

And then..

Miss C. played the dance video...

A/N: Let's pretend that Lisa's hair in the dance video is Ash Blonde and The Video itself isn't professionally shot and edited, I just really wanted to add Lili's Film #3 on the Story because it makes me blush everytime I watch it lol.

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

When the video was done, the whole class including me were pretty much speechless

Most of the guys are practically drooling (plus me) and the girls are swooning over her (also me)

Earlier I was feeling like a proud girlfriend because I know how talented she is at dancing but now, I feel threatened all of a sudden, I have this need of wanting to build a wall around Lisa just so they would stop staring at her.

When the class went back to their senses, they were basically howling and cheering for her, making Lisa blush in the process

Fucking great! Just what I need! More Rivals!

*Why did she have to dance so sexy like that??
And now she's going to attract more attention
And they might start to get interested with her and try to be with her
Like hell I'd let that happen!*

Lisa you temptress.

Your Ass is Mine!

That's it! I'm going to change the rules of our deal.

I'm going to make sure she's exclusive to me and only me and she's going to be aware of it and comply to it because if she doesn't, there's going to be major consequences.

My Jealousy and Possessiveness over her are creeping up on me again and taking over my whole being and You know what? I'm going to let it because there's no way in hell that I'm going to let these savages take what's mine.

Whoever shows even a **little** interest with My Little Dork will be answering to me.

They're not taking *MY Lisa* from me

That's right.

MY Lisa.

I found her first

The girl is Mine.

ALL MINE.

:

When 5th period class was over, as expected, the students flocked around her.

She really didn't know what to do with all the sudden attention that she's getting so she's just standing there being awkward, blushing and smiling at them while Sana is on the side cheering for her.

I glared at the sight before me. I'm insanely Jealous and all I really want to do is drag Tangerine away from them and lock her up in the trunk of my car or in My room so no one can touch or even see her.

Yep.

I'm definitely changing the rules!

I walked out the classroom and used the back door because I don't want to breathe the same air as those thirsty assholes gawking over My Lisa.

I can't show them my true colors just yet, I need for Tangelo to comply to me first before I make any move.. and that should be easy to do.

I texted Tangerine

14:03

> Meet me after School, Restroom near Room 315

It took her quite some time to reply

14:15 Orange 🍊

> Ok Miss, Is everything Ok?

Nothing's okay.

You're so dead Lalisa, how dare you flaunt your body like that for everyone to see.

14:15

> I'm Ok, but you won't be. I expect you to be there 3 PM on the dot.

14:16 Orange 🍊

> Oh, Alright Miss..

I'm just going to let Seulgi know that I'm going to be late for cheer practice, she's a bit lenient towards me nowadays since I injured my right ankle.

I feel a bit bad for using my injury as an excuse but I need to settle things first with Lisa before everything goes to shit and she gets swayed by someone.

*No, I own the Mandarin Orange.
She's staying with me!
Even if I have to use force or threaten her.
She's not getting away from me!*

LISA'S POV

Miss Kim texted me to meet her at the restroom near room 315. Even in text message I can already tell that she's upset (again) about something.

I honestly do not know what makes her upset and what I can do to please her, I try to be as low-key and obedient to her as much as I can but I feel like she has such high standards and I can't seem to reach it no matter how hard I try.

Sana went home first to get some rest and then she'll pick me up around 5 or 6:30 pm to pick up her cousin from the airport.

I texted Miss Kim to let her know that I'm already in the rest room, not even 5 minutes later she arrived and immediately locked the door behind her

She's wearing her cheerleading uniform which shows off her curves and lots of skin, she's has such perfect toned abs, slim waist, her body is very proportioned in general.

She's so Beautiful even when she looks upset. I mean no matter what facial expression she wears, she's always going to be pretty

"Tangelo. I'm changing some of the rules to our deal" was her opening statement

"Ch-Change Miss?" I asked

She rolled her eyes at me "Yes! Change! are you deaf or dumb?"

I inhaled sharply and closed my eyes to control my mouth from talking back or the situation is just going to be worse for me

"Excuse me Tangelo? are you giving me a fucking attitude right now?!"

"N-no, of course not Miss Kim. Anyways, Uhm.. so, let me hear it then.. the changes"

"Number 11: You're not allowed to entertain anyone"

Entertain? like dance or sing for them? I gotta clarify with her on that one

"Number 12: You cannot be in a relationship while we're Making Lo-I mean!! while we have this whole sex deal "

Huh? what did she say? making what?

It's not like she needs to set a rule about me being in a relationship, it's not going to happen anyway.

"Number 13: I want you to reply to me always, text me good morning and good night, call me and update me where you are and what you're doing, who you're with, even if it seems insignificant, let me know, if I'm not able to answer your calls then leave me a voicemail."

Wait but what about rule number 6 where she said no updates? I'm so confused

"Number 14: Have sex with me when I want, where I want and How I want, no questions asked"

"Wa-wait Miss Kim! some of the rules that you're giving right now are contradicting with the others.."

She exhaled sharply

"Then Ignore the old rules Tangelo, these are the important ones"

"So you're saying if you want to have sex here in school then we

do it here?" I clarified

"Ah! now you're getting it!"

"What about the entertaining part? like I'm not allowed to dance or sing or something?"

"Ughh! Tangelo, you're impossible! I meant if guys court you or girls confess to you, you ignore them! but if you want to be literal about it then fine! I don't want you dancing like that ever again you understand me?! And don't ever show that much skin anymore! I don't like it! I hate it! Your body is for my eyes to see! Only mine!"

"Oh.. but..why Miss? It was part of the dance to show a bit of skin"

"What do you mean why?! didn't you see how those thirsty bitches and bastards were practically drooling over you and your body?!"

"No because I was too shy to even comprehend what's going on, I didn't think they'd like it that much" I answered truthfully

I don't know if I'm imagining things but I think I saw her literally froze for a second but then she bounced back right away.

"Well they did! Which brings me to rule **Number 15**: You're not allowed to like anyone, your focus should only be me"

"Huh? but isn't that kind of impossible Miss?"

"What do you mean Impossible? No it's not! Why? Do you like anyone right now?? like you're interested on starting a relationship with them??" She asked hysterically

"No! no of course not Miss.. nothing like that, I mean just being friends you know?"

"No! friends are not allowed either! you're already pushing it by being friends with that bitch Sana!"

"Mi-miss but I--"

"God damn you! I told you to call me Jennie when we're alone! **Number 16**: Call me by my first name when we're alone!"

"Ye-Yes Sir Jennie Sir! I mean! Jennie!" I said standing up straight
Why do I have the need to salute to her now? She's really scary.

"Uhm.. anyways Miss is there any more?"

"I'm going to add some more when I think of something new but for now those are the new ones"

"Oh ok."

"Now come here and give me a kiss" She says

"Huh? but--"

"Kiss me now Tangelo! I'm not going to ask again!"

****Sigh****

I reluctantly walked towards her and gave her a small peck on the lips.

I was going to pull away but then she grabbed on to my collar and she deepened our kiss which resulted in us making out.

I had to cut it short though because I need to start cleaning or else My Papa wouldn't make it home in time and I know how badly he needs his rest

"Je-Jennie wait, I gotta go, I need to clean now, sorry"

She just huffed in frustration while she ran a hand through her hair

"Fine" she said sounding disappointed

Even though I would love to stay here and kiss her all day and night, I can't, and besides, me and Sana still need to pick up her cousin from the airport

"I'll see you tomorrow then" She said giving me a tight hug and then she gives me another kiss on the mouth

She then cupped my cheek "Take care of yourself and don't forget to update me. and by the way, call me tonight after cheer practice like around 8pm, I'll wait"

I smiled at her "Yes I'll do that, and by the way, thank you for saving me from expulsion.. I owe you Jennie"

She gave me a warm smile "You're welcome Honey, and one more thing.."

"Hmm? What is it?"

"You're Mine, Don't Forget that, behave yourself Lisa, arraseo?"

I just nodded because I didn't know what to say anymore.

Jennie smirked giving me small pats on my cheek and then she

walks away.

:

:

7:30 PM

Sana and I are at the arrival area waiting for her cousin coming from Japan, She said her name is Mina.

She's the same age as us and she also speaks Korean fluently.

Sana said Mina is planning to attend Uni here in Korea and so she wanted to check the Country out for herself.

"Oooo! There she is!" Sana said excitedly

"Minari-chan!" Sana called out

Her cousin saw us and she hurriedly ran to where we are to greet Sana.

When they're finally reunited, they both started speaking Japanese, probably asking how each other is doing, her cousin then looked at my direction and she smiled at me while I did the same

"Oh how rude of Me, Minari this is Lisa-chan, remember? I told you about her" Sana stared speaking in Korean again.

"Anyeong Lisa-chan, My name is Mina, Sana and Momo-sepai's cousin, nice to finally meet you, I've heard things about you" Mina said

"Good things I hope" I joked

Mina giggled and she nodded

"Great things"

"Anyways, let's go ladies? Momo-senpai is waiting" Sana said then we went on our way to the airport parking lot.

:

:

8:00 PM

"Lisa why don't you stay for dinner?" Miss Momo asked

"It's ok Miss Momo I just really wanted to accompany Sana at the airport" I replied

"Please Lisa-chan? Stay, I want to hangout with you more" Sana said pouting

"Lisa, I know we just met but I feel like we haven't really gotten a chance to get to know one another except for the small talks in the car, Please stay for dinner?" Mina asked

"Yeah. See? You know it's rude in Japanese culture to say no to a dinner invite" Sana said while she gives me an innocent smile

I really didn't have any choice anymore so I decided to just say "Yes"

I really enjoy their company anyway and I didn't want to be rude to their newly arrived cousin Mina either.

I ended up staying there until almost 10:20 PM.

Sana and Mina dropped me off at my house and we said our good byes to each other

:

:

As soon as I got home, I took a shower and got ready for bed, then I decided to text Sana to thank her and her cousins for the lovely dinner, when I saw 23 missed calls and 30 text messages, and it was all from one person

Miss Kim.

"Oh No! No! No!"

I felt myself literally turn pale

The text messages that she sent weren't very pleasant either.

She's ready to murder me..

She's gonna fucking kill me!

Shit! I'm Dead! Double Dead!

I totally forgot to update Jennie and she asked me to call her 8pm and it's already freaking 10:47 in the evening!

Fuck!!

What should I do?? The two things she asked me, to update her and call her and yet I failed to do it while she did me a favor of not getting me expelled from Pioneer!

I haven't really checked my phone since after Sana picked me and my dad up from school and went to the airport.

I was having so much fun talking to the three cousins that it totally slipped my mind to call or even text her

What should I do?

Her last text message was half an hour ago and she's raging.

10:17 PM Gungdung-i

> You're Fucking Done Lalisa! You better pray to whoever God you believe in because your ass is gonna fucking get it tomorrow! I FUCKING HATE YOU!! You're dead!!!

I took a deep breath to calm my nerves because I'm nervous as hell

In the end I decided to text her still, I figured it's better to do it late than to not do it at all.

*I'll just explain what happened, I'm sure she'll understand
Right?*

10:50PM

> Miss Kim! I'm so sorry I haven't called or even text you, I was out earlier with Sana, she picked me up and Papa from school, then we dropped him off at our house, then after that, her and I went to the airport to pick up her cousin, I was gonna go home early but they invited me to dinner, I didn't want to be rude so I stayed for a while and I kinda lost track of time.

10 minutes later, still no reply from her

11:00 PM

>Miss Kim I'm really really sorry, I know you're really upset with me, I feel really bad about it, please Miss Kim It was an honest mistake, It was careless of me to forget and I know that now

How about if I call her? But then what if she's asleep already? She might get even more upset for waking her up

11:15 PM

>Jennie, I'm really sorry, let's talk tomorrow, I want to make it up to you. Good Night and Sweet Dreams..

I waited for another hour or so but she didn't reply

She's most likely sleeping by now, Ughh! I'm so bad! How can I forget? But she probably wasn't even waiting for my phone call or text message right? I mean I'm pretty sure a lot of people call and text her.

But she said she was going to wait for my call.

Fuck.

I really hope I'm still going to be alive after this..

18.) Yeolyeodeol

Title: Sharing You

Artist: LANY

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

LISA'S POV

4:30 AM

I woke up to the sound of my alarm, I checked my phone right away to check if Miss Kim replied at all to any of my texts, but unfortunately, she didn't

****Sigh****

I decided to text her good morning since it's one of her new rules.. to be honest even if it wasn't one of her rules, I really wouldn't mind texting her.

I'm just going to update her, that's what she asked me and that's what I'm going to do

04:31 AM

> Good Morning Miss Kim, I just woke up, I'm about to take a shower

05:05 AM

> Hello Jennie, I just got done dressing for school

05:15 AM

> Me and Papa are on our way to school, we're on the bus now

05 :35 AM

> We made it to school Jennie, I'm going to start cleaning now.

Less than an hour later, she finally responded, this time I put the alarm on so I'll know that she texted back

06:25 AM Gungdung-i

> Where are you

****Gulp****

Even in text message I can feel her cold aura

06:26 AM

> Good Morning Miss, I'm at 317

After 5 minutes, I heard someone open the classroom door, I saw Miss Kim closing the door and locking it and then she walked towards me.

Ok Lisa, here we go, just say you're sorry and do whatever she wants you to do

As she comes closer, I noticed that she looks tired somehow, her eyes are a bit swollen and if I look at it closely, they're a bit red as well.

She probably has allergies.. but it's not allergy season?

"Jennie, how are you?" I asked while smiling nervously at her, pretending that I'm not about to be murdered by a raging kitten

"How am I?? ... HOW AM I?!!!" She said with so much anger in her voice, her eyes are shooting daggers as she charges towards my direction, stomping her feet and then she pushed me hard by the whiteboard.

"Owwwww...mmmmppp!!!"

She grabbed my face and kissed me hard, she was biting my lower lip to a point where I tasted a bit of my blood. I tried to break off the kiss to gasp for some air but she wouldn't let me.

When she's finally had enough, she pulled away and then..

I saw tears falling from her eyes

"Jennie, what's wrong? why are you crying??!!!"

"Did you fuck Sana last night??!!!" She asked ignoring my question, she sounds really angry

"Wha-what?? No of course not Jennie! I texted you last night, didn't you receive all of it? it said on my screen that the texts were

delivered"

She ran a hand through her hair, I notice she does this a lot when she's frustrated or mad

"Stop fucking lying to me!!!"

"Jennie I'm telling the truth, please stop crying.. I didn't have sex with anyone I promise" I said trying to be as calm as possible

"I told you to fucking call me!! I waited and waited and then when I saw your texts I find out that you've been hanging out with that---that slut and her cousins!! did you guys have a fucking good time that you couldn't even text me just to say '**Hi**'?! Are they really that fun?!" She said furiously, her jaws are clenched and her body is shaking like she really wants to throw a chair at my direction.

Shit, she's really upset about me not calling and texting her

"I'm really sorry Jennie, but Sana has nothing to do with me forgetting, please don't be mad at her, it's my fault" I told her but I probably shouldn't have because that triggered her anger even more..

She pushed me again and I hit my back on the white board pretty hard and she's hitting my front but not to a point where she's actually hurting me.

"Why do you keep defending that bitch?!" she yelled while tears continue to stream down her face

"Owww...Jennie stop, I'm not defending her, I'm just saying, please Jennie try to calm down..let's talk about this"

But she wasn't listening and she's not stopping so I deflected her hits by hugging her really tight

"Get off of me you Cheating..Lying..Asshole!! ggaaahhh!!!" She yelled pushing me away with all her might but I didn't let go of her, I didn't budge, although, it took all my strength to restrain her.

Damn, for a tiny person, she's really strong.

After a while, I guess she got tired of trying to get me to let go of her so She eventually stopped hitting me.

Jennie is now sobbing on my chest, her body is shaking from pent up frustration.

My heart aches from hearing her little cries

I feel really bad..

I didn't think not texting and calling her would make her this upset.

I stroked the back of her head and kissed her temple

"Sssh..Stop crying please? I didn't have sex with anyone, I didn't kiss anyone, I didn't hug anyone, not even close body contact, I promise you, nothing happened..I didn't break any physical rules that you set..I'm really sorry for not calling or even texting you Jen.."

I heard her cry even more but she finally hugged me back tight, burying her face on my neck

We hugged each other for a while until she finally pulled away, I smiled at her warmly wiping her tears then I boldly cupped her cute chubby cheek

"Are you ok now Jennie-ya?"

She hesitantly nodded but leaned in to my touch

"You need to make it up to me Tangelo, you made me wait for hours.." She said while pouting which made me smile

She's very cute and she's not even trying

"I'm really sorry, it won't happen again, and okay I'm going to make it up to you, what do you want me to do?"

She came closer to me, she snaked her arms around my waist, bringing me closer to her then she put her head on my chest "Spend your weekends with me at my house.."

I smiled and hugged her back

"Sure Jennie, is that all?"

She shook her head 'No' and whispered something but it was barely audible.

"I want you to sleep over too.."

I giggled

"I'm sorry Jennie-ya, could you repeat that?"

I heard her let out a frustrated sigh

"Sleep in my house.. I want to cuddle and watch Netflix with you"
She repeated herself

"Are we going to disregard your rule of '*no cuddling*' then?"

"Screw the rules Tangelo.. you owe me cuddles" Jennie said sounding like a little baby

"You're really adorable Jennie, a really adorable Mandu"

"What did you just call me?"

"An Adorable Ma-Mandu?" I said almost regretting it

"Hmmm.. ok, since it's you who said it, then I'll let you off the hook" She said smiling then she puckered her lips

I smiled back and then I leaned in to give her a quick kiss

"Jennie-ya before I forget, I have work at the Dance Studio Friday to Sunday"

She kinked her eyebrows "What time do you come home from work then?"

"Tomorrow's Friday, since we have school I only work for 2 hours, 3 hours max. On the weekends though.. let's see..hmm 4 to 6 hours, depends how many students I teach, but I start early like around 9am" I explained

"Well uhm, I can pick you up and drop you off at work.. can we start our sleepover on Friday? please?" She asked giving me a puppy dog look

I caressed her cheek and gave her a kiss on her forehead

"Sure Jennie"

"Yayyy! I can't wait for tomorrow Tangelo!" She said excitedly

Me too Jennie.

"Jennie-ya, sorry to cut this short but I need to clean, this is my last classroom"

"Ok, let me help you"

"It's okay Mandu. I got it, I'm almost done anyway, Thank you though you're very sweet"

She nodded and smiled "Okay, then I'll just go to the restroom to fix myself a bit"

"Go ahead, by the way I like your hair like that all curled and flowing, you look extra beautiful"

She blushed and then scowled at me "Wha-? I-whatever you freak! clean the classroom and you better do a good job or else you're fired!"

"Huh? but I don't even work here?" I said laughing

"Ughhh! you're so ugly and annoying!" She said walking out the classroom then she slams the door

I chuckled and shook my head

Man.. She went from a hundred to zero then back to a hundred again, but I'm glad we patched things up, I was certain that she was going to bury me alive, I'm really glad she didn't.

Jennie.. she's really something.

JENNIE'S POV

I came in to school early to meet up with Tangerine and give her a piece of my mind.

The Aggressive and Defiant part of me was planning to yell at her and kick her ass for not texting me and making me wait for hours for her to call but as soon as I saw her, all I wanted to do was to kiss her and fuck her until she can't walk anymore.

But the Emotional and Sensitive part of me won and it had other plans..

Something embarrassing happened..

I cried..

Wait.

Nope!

Scratch that.

I weeped in front of her!

I didn't want to but I was so angry and frustrated with her.

I was in major distraught last night, I was starting to feel insecure and was feeling rejected all over again by her, she didn't text me until it was almost 11.

I cried a lot last night and I barely slept because I thought she doesn't want me, like she's turned off by how much I practically give myself to her without giving it much of a thought or any hesitation.

I'm hers for the taking, she has this power over me but she's totally clueless about it, her actions and words affect me more than it should.

I've given her control over me without even realizing.

I've never felt so.. Insignificant.

I felt like she has taken me for granted, especially when she told me the reason why she wasn't able to do the two things I asked her to do, it was because she was too busy hanging out with other girls that's why she forgot about me.

It's like a slap in the face, I was so Jealous that I was actually really considering driving to her house as soon as I read her texts and then chain her up so she couldn't go out anymore.

I was really hurt, I never thought I would ever feel that way just because she didn't bother calling or even texting me, I'm very much aware that I'm being overly dramatic but I couldn't control my emotions when it comes to her..

But after all the tears, yelling and drama..She still managed to calm me down. I knew I was being unreasonable and I was being unfair for not letting her really explain herself but even then, she still held me and hugged me like she was comforting a toddler throwing tantrums.

I get that it's not the best and romantic description but I felt like that's how it went down.. but it really doesn't matter now because I made a good deal with Tangerine, she's spending her weekends with me and I couldn't be any happier...

I can't wait to cuddle with her and just talk about anything and everything under the sun..and then kiss her, hug her...make love..no I mean uhm.. have sex, not make love, that's stupid.

I do not love her...it's impossible for me to fall for her, we barely know each other personally, I don't even find her cute at all..I mean..sometimes she's cute but in general she's so average, I mean yes we have sex but that's mostly it

I took a deep breath to relax my mind

I better stop overthinking or I might get carried away again

:
:

I'm in the restroom fixing my make up, especially my hair because Lisa said she likes my hair today so I pay extra attention to it when I had the sudden urge to pee.

I went to the toilet and my urine felt heavier than usual, I checked to see what's up and there's red liquid coming out of me..

Great Timing.

Seriously?

Should I tell Lisa? I mean I'm pretty sure she's expecting for us to have sex but how can we do it this weekend if I have my period?

But If I tell her she might change her mind about spending her Friday night and her Weekends with me..

No, I Shouldn't tell her.

I'll just stall her, maybe order us some food or just make out or have her suck on my breasts or something.

I'll just look extra pretty for her so she wouldn't want to go home.

:

:

First Period came and everyone's in class including Tangelo, but of course, Sana is present as well, sticking herself again to My Little Weirdo

I've been thinking about telling Sana to stay away from Tangelo, She's really bugging me with her being touchy/feely with My Property and I hate it.

Sana already let me know that she isn't interested with Lisa and that she's "curious" about someone else (I already have an idea who it is by the way) but her being clingy to Lisa is still making me feel very uncomfortable

Lisa kept telling me as well that there is nothing going on between the two of them but I still hate the idea of Sana (or any other person) being too close with what's mine.

I'm very territorial when it comes to My Oompa Loompa. I don't want anybody getting too chummy with her.

07:23 AM

> Don't let Sana be all touchy with you, I don't like it

07:32 AM Orange 🍊

> Miss, Sana is just a friend, and she's a natural Koala bear

07:33 AM

>Tangelo! If I see you guys being too close to each other when I turn around you're done.

I turned a minute after I sent the text, and there I saw Sana leaning on Lisa's shoulder, as soon as she read the text, she leaned on her side all of a sudden opposite of where Sana's head was

She looked up from her phone to check if I did turn and to her horror, I was already narrowing my eyes but it turned into a smirk as soon as she did what she did. I saw Sana smacking Lisa's arm lightly because she almost fell off of her chair

That's what you get Minatozaki, You shouldn't be that close with My Tangerine in the first place.

:

:

LUNCH TIME

12:00 PM

>Meet me at the back of the gym in 20 minutes, Alone.

12:01 PM Orange 🍊

>Miss Kim, I'm with Sana right now

12:01 PM

>So?! are you telling me she's more important?!

12:02 PM Orange 🍊

>No, I'm not saying that at all, but ok, I'll try to get out of it

12:03 PM

>Wow Thank You for making me feel like I'm a fucking option, you know what? stay with her for all I care! I hate you!

12:04 PM Orange 🍊

>Jennie-ya come on don't be like that, I already said I'll get out of it..

12:05 PM

>No! I don't want to see your dumb, ugly face anymore! stay with your *FRIEND!*

Tangelo didn't reply to my text but she called me after 2 minutes, I declined her call but she called again, I still didn't answer

12:10 PM Orange 🍊

>Do you still want me to come over to your house Jennie-ya?

Oh shit! I didn't think about that.

If I keep rejecting her calls or not answer her texts she might think I don't want her anymore.

I better call her.

I dialed her number and she answered right away

LS: Jennie-ya!

She answered sounding excited, worried and scared at the same time.

JN: Of course I still want you to come over! why even ask me that?!

LS: Because you said you didn't want to see my face?

JN: I'm just talking about Lunch time you idiot!

LS: Oh. haha. ok then, so where are you now?

JN: Shake Shack, trying to get *OUR FOOD*

I said making sure that I emphasize that I bought food for us

LS: Jennie-ya don't be like that.. I already told you I'll get out of it

I stayed quiet for a bit, I want her to Woo me

LS: Mandu.. let's eat lunch together..

Nope.. little bit more Tangerine

LS: Jagi.. Come on..

My heart literally stopped beating for a few seconds when she called me 'Jagi'

I felt myself blushing and my body getting hot, She has got me speechless and flustered yet again..

JN: Y-Yah! don't sweet talk me! Fine, I'll meet you at our meeting place, don't be late! if you are then You're road kill you understand?!

LS: *****chuckle***** Yes Jagi. bye.

JN: Uuhm I..ahh..b-bye"

As soon as I got My order from the burger joint drive thru, I drove back to school as fast as I could then, I called Tangelo 5 minutes before I arrive so we can eat right away because I'm seriously starving.

I chose the back of the gym as our meeting place because nobody really ever goes there so it's a perfect place for Tangelo and I to have lunch together without getting caught.

I parked the car and I saw Lisa running towards me, I smiled at the sight of My..Jagiya

I unlocked my car and she got in quickly, my car windows are tinted so we don't need to worry if they're going to see us

"Hi" She said smiling widely
I couldn't help but admire her cute face 'cos she's so adorable.
I smiled back and I cupped her cheek

"Hey..Jagi" I greeted her and then I leaned in to kiss her lips lovingly

"Wow..that was.. nice.." She said blushing after I broke off our kiss, I just giggled and gave her her food.

We ate, we talked, we laughed, flirted.. and then after that, We kissed each other passionately..

It's the best lunch I've ever had yet.

But of course, all good things must come to an end, when the bell rang signaling that our lunch time is over, we have to part on our separate ways again..

I know I'll see her on our fifth period class but I still wanted to be kissed and held by her.

"I'll go first Jennie-ya, I'll see you later ok?" She said

"MmmHmm.." I said smiling but deep down all I feel is longing

She was about to leave when I suddenly grabbed her hand stopping her

"What's wrong Jen?"

I just stared at her and then leaned in for another loving kiss then I hugged her

"Awww.." Lisa cooed

"I miss you already.." I whispered to her

"Me too, but tomorrow and the weekends we'll get to have each other to ourselves and I can't wait for that"

"Yeah.." I said dreamily pulling away from our hug then I caressed her cheek and smiled like a lovestruck fool.

"I gotta go now Jennie, see you 5th period"

"Ok.." was all I said

Tangelo got off my car taking out our trash with her and then she ran while looking around her to make sure that nobody saw her coming out from my car.

My heart ached

She's too kind

She cares about my reputation as much as I care for it..

:

:

We have after school Cheer Practice in a bit, I'm by my locker trying to put some of the stuff that I don't need anymore so I wouldn't have to carry it around with me.

When I'm done, I closed it and was gonna head to the gym to meet up with my team when Irene, Rosé and Jisoo called out my name as they approach me with Tzuyu trailing them

"Where were you babe?" Irene asked giving me a hug

"Went out for Lunch, sorry I didn't get to text you guys"

"Jennie, you seem to be a bit distant? is there something we should know?" Rosé asked

"Distant? what do you mean?" I asked innocently.

I *DO* know why she asked me that though.

It's because whenever I'm with them, My mind and My heart is always somewhere else.

More specifically, It's with Tangelo.

When I spend time with my friends, All I do is text Lisa or think about her...

My thoughts are flooded with images of her..

Honestly, all I really want to do is to spend more time with my duckie..

My cousin Jisoo just stayed quiet, doing her best to be neutral.

I know she knows something is going on between Lisa and I, it's very obvious since she's been teasing me about her and she always points out my jealousy but I know she's not going to throw me under the bus.

"Jennie, I know you know what I'm talking about" Rosé said

"Listen, Chaeyoung-i, it's just that, I have a lot of things in my mind, I'm sorry, I haven't been myself lately"

She sighed and then she just gave me an understanding smile

"If there's anything you want to talk about, we're here" Irene added

"Ye-yes, Thank You Ladies"

"How about we hangout tomorrow night? The Five of us, it's been a while since we all spent time together" Irene suggested

Oh No, but I already have plans with Lisa, What Am I going to do?

"Yeah let's do that! let's go clubbing or something, it's been a while" Rosé said

"Jennie? what do you say?" Tzuyu asked

"Uhm..I..uh--"

I can't seem to find the right words. I wanted to say No but..

"Don't tell me you're going to cancel on us?" Irene said sounding disappointed

"No, of-of course not, Yeah sure.. Clubbing, Let's go!" I said to them doing my best to be excited then I looked at my cousin's direction and she just gave me a sympathetic smile

"Yayy! alright! well, I'll go meet up with Baekhyun first, see you girls later at 10PM" Rosé said giving me a hug goodbye, while Tzuyu and Irene did the same

Jisoo stayed behind, she told our friends that she needed to talk to me about our birthday party

"Jendeuki"

"Chu"

"Is there something you want to tell me?"

"***sigh*** About what exactly?" I asked like I don't already know where this conversation is gonna go

"Hmm. let me give you a hint: Juhwangsae"

I closed my eyes and exhaled sharply

"Listen Chu, whatever is going on between Tangerine and I are just between the two of us, I don't want them or anybody to know"

"Ahhh so there is something going on"

I raised an eyebrow "Don't pretend that you don't know Chu, you're not as innocent as other people may think"

"True. Are you girls in a relationship then?"

"We have A relationship"

"***smirk*** Be Specific Jendeuki, what kind of relationship?"

"Chu, I really don't have any time for this, I gotta go for practice"

"Fine but..Jendeuki, just..be careful, you don't want to bite off more than you can chew, you might end up hurting yourself in the process"

"Pfft.. Please Chu, you're acting like I'm in love with the girl" I spat back rolling my eyes at her

"Well, aren't you?"

"No! Hell No! She's literally someone I play around with, it's not like she's not aware of it either. We're just.. having some fun" I said defensively

"Keep telling yourself that cousin, and you might even end up

believing it yourself"

"What's that supposed to mean?"

She just shrugged

"Figure it out. You know, for a borderline genius, you're not very.. smart when it comes to your feelings, oh well, nobody's perfect"

"Whatever, I gotta go" I said then I walked towards the Gym

:

:

I called Tangelo to cancel our Friday Night Sleep over, I really don't want to bail on her but my friends would get even more suspicious, I'm just going to think about our weekend, at least we still have two days together.

LM: Yeoboseyo?

JN: Tangerine, I'm cancelling for tomorrow night, my friends, they wanted to go to the club, I haven't been spending time with them so I said yes

I said to her like it doesn't affect me that I had to cancel our plans

LS: That's alright Miss, they probably missed you since you're busy with school and cheer practice

Wrong. I'm too busy thinking about you

JN: Yeah I guess so, I'll just see you tomorrow

LS: Okay Jennie, see you

JN: Don't forget to update me about your whereabouts" I reminded her

LS: Yes, I'm still in school about to start cleaning

JN: Ok. Take Care. Bye.

LS: You too Jennie. have fun at cheer practice and be careful with your ankle. bye.

****Sigh****

By the time I'm done with Cheer Practice she'll be gone..

I want to skip Practice so I could see her and kiss her at least but I can't keep making up excuses to Seulgi either...

I miss her..

I want to see her..

"Tch! This sucks"

19.) Yeolahop

Title: Jenny

Artist: The Click Five

<https://youtu.be/VazpS1DQ0oM>

Friday Night

11:00 PM

JENNIE'S POV

Clubbing.

It was something I really really loved doing with my friends but right now..

I Hate it.

Why? Because I'm supposed to be spending time with My Tangerine but instead I'm here, just sitting down while my friends are drinking and dancing with random men.

I wanted to FaceTime her but it's too loud here and My Friends, though I love them, are really Nosy and I don't want them on my business..

I was gonna go to her house Thursday Night just to get some cuddle time and kisses but I was exhausted from Practice and had no energy left

I should've skipped Cheer Practice Yesterday..

I exhaled rather loudly out of frustration

*I could've been doing **things** with My Tangerine right now but Nooo, I'm stuck here bored.*

I Miss Her..

She's been texting me, updating me about her day and sending adorable pictures of herself but it's not enough for me.

I've only been here for an hour and I'm bored out of my mind!

There are guys who have been pestering me to dance with them or get my number since me and my friends got here, I told them to leave me alone but they just keep pushing, I'm seriously about ready to punch them in the face.

Tangelo and I are supposed to be binge watching any series on Netflix or just cuddling, flirting, kissing..

Uggghhh! I want to cry! I want to get out of here

I need to get out of here

And Soon!

I regret not bringing my car and riding with my cousin because right now, she's tipsy and when she gets like this, there's no stopping her from dancing and grinding her ass with random dudes.

I don't see anything wrong with it though, she's single and she's hot, she works hard to maintain her grades and stay on top so she deserves to let loose once in a while.

11:20PM

> What are you doing now

11:22 PM Orange 🍊

> Same thing I was doing 30 minutes ago, watching cable TV lol

11:23 PM

> Whatever. Anyways I'm bored, Save me

11:24 PM Orange 🍊

> Try dancing with people or something Miss, You are at a club aren't you?

11:25 PM

> Well yeah...but, I don't want to dance right now

11:26 PM Orange 🍊

> Are you ok? Do you not feel well?

I'm not okay, I've been missing you like crazy

11:28 PM

> Yeah I'm okay, why wouldn't I be?

11:30 PM Orange 🍊

> Oh.. because you said you didn't want to dance and you're in the club..so I just..

Hmm.. let me try something.. I wonder how she'll react if I tell her guys are trying to get with me

11:34

> Actually, a couple of guys have been asking me to dance with them, Should I?☐

11:35 PM Orange 🍊

> Yes miss go ahead, like I said you are at a club, might as well

Goodness this chick didn't even hesitate, she's just letting me be taken by others

11:37 PM

> Yeah, true. There's actually this one guy I've been eyeing, he's really hot, he's been flirting with me ever since we got here

11:38 PM Orange 🍊

> Oh, but won't Mino get upset?

Uggh! I don't care if he gets upset! I want you to be upset

11:40 PM

> He won't, he knows how it is, should I go for the hot guy then? 😊

11:42 PM Orange 🍊

> Yeah miss, go and have fun 🥳

Wow.. not even a hint of jealousy...

11:44 PM

> he has sexy lips, I want to kiss him so bad 😍

11:46 PM Orange 🍊

> Haha I'm sure he wants to kiss you too. Enjoy your night miss 🥰

She's just practically giving me away

She doesn't care if I make out or even have sex with other people, While

I get crazy when another person gets too close to her.

I decided to stop texting her and try to have a good time with my friends instead. She doesn't seem to mind that I'm here surrounded by guys.

She doesn't care if they're flirting with me or trying to get me into bed.

She doesn't care about me.

I'm just someone who she has sex with casually

She just replies to my texts because I told her to, now that I think about it, she probably wouldn't text me at all if I didn't initiate the text messaging or if I didn't ask her to update me about her day.

I should do the same, I'm losing myself to her.

I can't let that happen, She should be the one who cracks first and not me.

She should be the one who begs me to spend time with her, she's lucky I even give her any attention at all.

Maybe inviting her over the weekend isn't such a great idea after all.

I'm getting in way too deep that I forget that she's only my "fuck buddy" and nothing more.

I'm going to cancel on her.

After I've decided to bail on Tangelo this weekend, I joined my friends on the dance floor.

I didn't make out with any guy though, I don't want to kiss anyone else except for her, Even if she doesn't give two fucks about me.

I just drank my sorrows away, that's all I can do for now.

:

:

THE NEXT DAY

"Unnghhh..My head hurts, what time is it?"

I grabbed my phone from my side table to check and it says it's already 1 in the afternoon.

I checked my messages, there's a couple of texts from my friends, Mino called at least five times and he's been texting as well, he's asking me if I want to hang out or have dinner with him.

Tangelo's been blowing up my phone too with her updates.

I felt a sting in my heart again.

Last night, she was just letting me be with guys, she didn't even bother stopping me or even protest a little bit..

She's just..

She doesn't care..

Her last text message was about an hour ago, She's probably still at her workplace.

She told me she works extra hours during the weekend so I'm not really expecting any more text messages from her until she clocks out.

I decided to call Mino back, I dialed his number and he answered right away

MN: Hey babe, good afternoon, how was girl's night out?

JN: Hey, it was good, I had a great time with them"

MN: Haha That's good babe, I guess you really did have a great time since you didn't text or call me at all

JN: Mino, don't start with me, I'm not in the best mood right now, if you're just going to pick a fight then I'll just hang up, I don't have any time for this

I told him, I'm very irritated right now and if he say something tasteless, I'm breaking up with him.

MN: No! babe wait! I'm just kidding..please don't hang up

JN: ****Sigh**** Fine.

MN: So uhhh.. would you like to have dinner with me? it's been a while since we went on a date

I thought about it for a while, Since I'm cancelling on Tangelo anyway, I should just hangout with Mino.

JN: Ok. what time?

MN: 8 PM babe, will that be ok?

JN: Sure, see you tonight.

MN: Great! I love you.

JN: You too. Bye Mino.

I said then I hang up.

I then got up from my bed and went down to the kitchen.

I asked one of our helpers to make me something for lunch, I'm really starving and still a bit dizzy..

I'm going to drink Aleve after I eat, this hangover is killing me

Last night went a little crazy, we had one too many drinks, good thing Tzuyu is good with her alcohol so she's able to call us all an Uber, We didn't go home until almost 5 in the morning.

My Parents are out of the country for some quality time together, they're hopeless romantics, they would go on trips at least once a month to keep *'The Fire Burning'* --- that's according to my Dad.

Them being romantic really weirds me out.. they're too lovey dovey, I'm surprised I'm an only child.

I don't like the idea of romance, it just doesn't make sense to me how a person can be so attached and so in love with someone..

I don't like being Romantic at all.

That is, until I met Her..

I admit I did bully her in the beginning but it's not something that I usually do.

Maybe my cousin was right, maybe I was crushing or *Am* still crushing on her that's why I was going out of my way to get her attention thus, bullying her

I huffed in frustration

"Bullying her like an 8 year old boy crushing on a girl.." I whispered to myself

All I want to do is cuddle and kiss and bond with her and be with her all the time..

No! hell no! that doesn't add up at all! why would I even have a crush on that..that..adorable..cute...

"Uuugghh!!!"

No..don't think about her Jennie, don't dig deeper into it. She's just someone you have sex with from time to time, She doesn't mean anything...because obviously, you do not mean anything to her either.

This is just Lust, Nothing More.

I'm an only child, I'm not used to sharing.. and Tangerine was the first girl I had sex with and she just gave me a different experience, that's it, She's not special.

That's why I'm possessive of her and I get jealous when people get near her

I'm just not used to sharing.

It's not like I'm In love with her.

That's impossible.

It's never going to happen.

*****Sigh..*****

I'm not losing sleep for this..

:
:
:

After I eat lunch, I went back up to my room to take a warm bath, my right ankle is healing well, but there's an obvious scar left at the memory of it.

I'll go to a dermatologist to lighten it up, I can't have this big scar on me, it doesn't look good

Just then, I thought about Lisa again

I should really just keep it casual with her, I'm not being fair to myself, we fuck each other, That's it.

There's no need for me to get emotionally attached.

I got off the bath tub and dried myself up and went back to bed when my phone notified me of a text message.

It's Her.

2:30 PM Orange 🍊

>Hi Miss, Just got off work, what time do you want me to come over?

I replied almost instantly, I couldn't help it.

Wow Jennie, so much for keeping it casual and not getting emotionally attached

2:31 PM

>I changed my mind, I don't want to hangout tonight

2:32 PM Orange 🍊

>Oh, what happened Miss? are you alright?

I rolled my eyes at her response

Oh look at you, now you care? Too Late! I'm already upset!

2:33 PM

> I'm fine, never better, there's no reason for me not to be okay, I'm having dinner with my boyfriend instead.

2:33 PM Orange 🍊

> I see, have fun Miss and be careful with your ankle

"bE cAReFuL WiTh yOuR aNkLe" I said to myself reading her text with a mocking tone.

Stupid Tangelo

2:34 PM

> Don't tell me what to do! we're not friends!

2:36 PM Orange 🍊

> I'm sorry Miss, you're right.

"Tch. Whatever, Freak" I whispered

That's right, this is good.

I'm just going to focus on Mino and not Tangelo.

Mino's my boyfriend, he's a nice guy in his own way.. and sweet and thoughtful and..

But He's Not..

I exhaled sharply and closed my eyes out of frustration

I hate feeling helpless..

SATURDAY

LISA'S POV

Jennie didn't reply to me last night when I told her to enjoy her night, She probably did enjoy her night which is good, but I was feeling a bit uneasy when she kept saying that she wanted to Kiss this one guy that she's attracted to.

Yes, I admit, I was feeling jealous, but It's not like I can tell her what to do.

Jealousy isn't part of our agreement, we only agreed to have sex

once a week but I couldn't help what I'm feeling.

I didn't let her know that though, I don't want her to think that I'm crossing the line.

Knowing her, she would freak out if I did show any obvious sign of jealousy so I kept my replies as neutral as possible.

I didn't even give any hint that I feel a bit hurt..

Okay, a lot hurt..But I have no right to be, if anyone should get hurt, it should be her boyfriend.

Anyways, I've been updating Jennie like she asked me to, I don't want her getting upset with me again so I just do what she wants.

I'm really looking forward on hanging out with her this weekend, Not just because of our deal but because I genuinely enjoy her company.

If I look pass her snooty and bratty attitude, She's actually really fun to talk to and she has good sense of humor. She shares facts and trivias---She has great conversation..

She's just..Great overall

She also lets me talk and listens intently to what I say, she gives off that aura that she's really interested in whatever I tell her, she gives feedbacks and asks me questions, it's always a two way conversation, never just one.

I texted her as soon as I got off work..she sent me a reply right away saying she didn't want to hang out anymore.

2:31 PM Gungdung-i

>I changed my mind, I don't want to hangout tonight

I admit that made me sad but I want to know if she's okay

2:32 PM

>Oh, what happened Miss? are you alright?

I replied, I'm hoping she would change her mind and hangout with me still

2:33 PM Gungdung-i

> I'm fine, never better, there's no reason for me not to be okay, I'm having dinner with my boyfriend instead.

Oh..of course..

2:33 PM

> I see, have fun Miss and be careful with your ankle

I replied, I didn't want to make my jealousy obvious

2:34 PM Gungdung-i

> Don't tell me what to do! we're not friends

Geeez..what's her problem again? why is she being like this?

It's not like I told her to stop hanging out with her boyfriend, even though I really want to.

2:36 PM

> I'm sorry Miss, you're right.

****Sigh****

She didn't reply anymore, she just left me on 'Read'

I guess she's in one of those moods again..

But I don't understand why she's being cold all of a sudden. We were okay this whole week except for when she tells me she doesn't want to see my face but she takes it back right away.

Sana and Mina wanted to hangout today but I had to say No since I thought I was going to hangout with Jennie.

I should tell them that I'm available now but I don't want them to think that they're my rebound plan so I just decided to go home and chill in my room instead.

I texted Miss Kim still even if she doesn't reply to me, she's

obviously ignoring me but I still text her, I know better, I don't want any trouble.

3:14 PM

> I'm home now Jennie

30 minutes later, she replies

3:44 PM Gungdung-i

> Stop texting me! I'm trying to take a nap and you're disturbing my peace! I have a date tonight and I don't want to look worn out!

I rolled my eyes at her reply

Ok..? Fine, then I won't.

Go have a date with your stupid boyfriend.

"Ughh! what is her problem?! why is she being such a--bitch!" I exclaimed and threw my phone on my bed and then I laid down

I exhaled sharply

"What's the matter with her? what did I do this time?"

I shook my head out of frustration and sat up quick which caused me to be dizzy

"Oww.. I probably shouldn't have done that.."

I'll just take a shower before I start to stink..

:
:

SUNDAY

12 noon

I didn't text Jennie anymore ever since she told me to stop texting. I don't know what her problem is but to be honest she's making me upset. today is supposed to be our 'Deal' Day and I don't even know

if I should text her or not, she might go off on me again for bothering her

I should probably eat, it's already lunch and I'm hungry

I went to the kitchen and saw my papa cooking of what smells like Gamjatang

"Papa! Gamjatang?!"

"Yes Dear" he said smiling

"Yay! Thank you papa" I said then I hugged him

I had a really good lunch that I almost forgot about Miss Kim.

I wonder if she ate already? I'm worried about her...

Should I text her before this day ends?

She might not come over today and she might think I'm only texting her because I want to have sex..

I don't want to expect anything, we're not friends, we're nothing, just a couple of girls having sex.

:
:

SUNDAY NIGHT

I'm in the living room just watching some show, I don't even know exactly what it's about.. I don't even really know what channel I'm tuned in, my mind is busy thinking about Miss Kim..In the end, I decided to not text her at all, I figured it's better to just do what she says instead of going against it.

Why is she being difficult? I wish she would tell me what's going on with her or what I did wrong so I can make it right...

I know Jennie is being unreasonable most of the time, but, even though she doesn't see me as more than someone she has sex with once in a while, I consider her as a friend, granted we have a different kind of "bond" as friends but when we have those moments where we just talk and hangout is what I cherish the most, that's why I'm not feeling to comfortable when she gets mad at me..

I really want to text her but she told me not to..

I miss Jennie.. even with her bitchy attitude and mood swings..

I guess that's what draws me to her the most..

My musings were cut short when my phone lit up, I checked who texted me and it was Her

Speak of the Devil

11:42 PM Gungdung-i

> I'm outside

11:45 PM

> huh? What are you doing here?

11:45 PM Gungdung-i

> what do you mean what am I doing here? Have you forgotten what day it is??

11:46 PM

> Of course I didn't forget. I just didn't want to disturb you while you're on your date with your boyfriend, you told me to not bother you

11:46 PM Gungdung-i

> The date was yesterday you idiot! You really do everything I tell you huh?! You don't have any initiation at all!

11:48 PM

> Miss I don't know what your problem is but if there's anything I can do to help let me know

11:50 PM Gungdung-i

> You're my fucking problem! Now come outside and let's fuck already! You just wasted 5 minutes of my time you stupid oompa loompa

I groaned in annoyance

Oh My God! This woman is so frustrating! She's giving me a freaking migraine!

I stood up from the couch and took my little pink blanket with me because I'm only wearing a loose v-neck white shirt and tiny little jersey shorts.

I grabbed my key and then opened the front door and then I lock it.

When I got outside I saw Jennie's car parked across the street.

I sighed deeply

Ok, here we go

I walked towards her car not really sure what to expect. I looked inside and saw that she has her eyes closed with her head leaning back on the driver's seat

I knocked lightly which startled her a bit, she then unlocked the door and I went in and when I did, I smelled alcohol right away.

"Jennie, did you drink and drive?" I asked her worriedly

She scoffed "What's it to you?"

"What do you mean what's it to me? That's dangerous and you drove all the way here? Where's Mino anyway? How come he let you drive by yourself like this?" I asked her, I'm a bit pissed at her boyfriend for being so careless

"Pfft, you're so fake! now you care? but when I was in the club practically being hit on by Men you give me away?!"

She's Drunk.

Drunk and Upset.

"Jennie what are you talking about now?"

"You don't even care if guys want to make out or have sex with me! while I get crazy jealous when people get near you! it's not fair! I hate you!" She said then she cried out of nowhere

She's...Jealous?

"I do care Jennie, Please don't cry.."

"No you don't you liar! do you even like me?!"

"Jennie I'm not lying.. and Of course I like you, I consider you as my friend"

"Friend? is that all I am to you?!"

"Jennie, what's going on here?"

"You! you're what's going on here! you're so fucking oblivious with everything that it makes me crazy! what the hell did you do to me??!"

"Jen, come on you need to calm down for a second.."

"Don't tell me what to do you Tangerine looking freak!" She yelled and then she started sobbing

Ok, it's official, she's drunk..I mean she would've still said that I'm a freak but the things that she just said to me, about her being jealous and about me liking her.. she wouldn't utter those words if she were sober

I hugged her, she tried to break off from me but I only hugged her tighter

"Le-let go of me Lisa" Jennie said weakly while still crying

I didn't say a thing, I just continued to hug her until she calms down and when she finally did, I pulled away from her spoke up

"Jennie.. is that why you're being cold with me? you thought I didn't care about you?" I asked, wiping her tears away

"I don't think, I know you don't care Tangelo"

"No, You got it all wrong, I do care, but you're the one who said no Jealousy, you don't know how much I want to tell you to not kiss or dance with anyone but I'm in no position to do so.."

I know what I'm saying to her is way out of line, but I figured she's too drunk to even remember so I'm basically just taking my chances

"I care ok?.. so stop crying, you're too pretty to cry because of me"

She rolled her eyes at me "Conceited. you think highly of yourself now don't you? cos I'm chasing you is that it?"

"I don't think you're chasing me at all, anyways, would you like to spend the night with me, Jennie?"

"Why should I?"

"Please? I miss you"

She looked at me wide eyed and she blushes profusely then she looks away clearing her throat

"F-fine.. but only because you begged me to"

I chuckled, she's too cute

"Hey, Jennie, look at me" I said to her, she reluctantly did

I looked at her intently and cupped her cheek and leaned in to give her a quick passionate kiss on the lips

"Wo-wow..That was uhm.. that was really nice Tangelo.." She said whispering to my lips

"Well, you have nice lips and you're a great kisser.. it's all you Jennie" I responded giving her a warm smile, she smiled back and caressed my cheek

"Let's go inside and cuddle okay?"

She nodded and kissed my lips again

"Let me borrow clothes and undies okay?"

"Undies? I have no new ones Jen"

"***shrug***So? Do I need to remind you that we have sex and we share each other's body fluids already?so it's ok to share underwear right?"

I laughed softly and agreed "True"

"Oh, before I forget, I need a tampon or a pad, I have my period"

"Alright, sure ****smile****"

We got off her car and then she took a quick shower, when she's finally finished cleaning up herself, she settled in bed with me, we talked for a bit, it turns out she didn't go on a date with Mino, she cancelled on him and she just decided to stay home and brood.

She went to a random bar earlier tonight to drink because she said she was upset at the fact that I didn't text her all day today, and then she drove to my house to see me because she misses me.

I wanted to remind her that she told me not to text but I know she's just going to be mad again and tell me that I don't have initiation or I don't care about her so I let it go.

I asked her not to drink and drive anymore because it's dangerous to drive under the influence, she gave me her word that she won't do it again and then we cuddled and kissed each other lips until we fell asleep

20.) Seumul

Title: Can't Help Falling In Love

Artist: A-Teens

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

LISA'S POV

Monday 4:30 AM

I woke up at the sound of my alarm, I grabbed my phone on the side table to stop it from making a lot of noise, I felt a heavy thing on my chest, I looked down and it was Jennie, she's sleeping so comfortably and she looks so peaceful, I didn't want to bother her slumber but we both need to get up for school

"Jennie.." I whispered while stroking her hair

"Jennie, wake up.. it's 4:30 AM and we gotta get up to go to school.."

She groaned in annoyance and snuggled closer to me then she spoke up

"4:30 in the morning? yah.. why did you wake me up.. it's too early for school you stupid mo..ron.." She said then she continues to sleep while snoring lightly

Fine, 10 more minutes..

I set my timer for 10 minutes, I continue to stroke her hair and give her light kisses on top of her head

After 10 minutes, I tried waking her again

"Jennie-ya.. I gave you 10 more minutes of sleep, we really need to get up now or else I won't be able to help my papa clean up the

classrooms.."

I didn't want to use that on her but it's the truth..

She yawned and sat up slowly...

"**yawnnnn** Fine.." she said as she scratched her eyes gently and stretched her little arms

"You're so cute Jennie" I said while staring at her, admiring her looks

"Shut up.. I already know that" she says as she continues to yawn
I playfully rolled my eyes at her and smiled

"I gotta go get ready now Jennie-ya"

"Alright, I guess that's my go signal to leave then.." She says sounding a bit sad

She looked at me and cupped my cheek

"I'll see you later?" She asked

"Yes, see you.." I said then I leaned in to kiss her lips "Good morning by the way"

"Hmmm.. Good morning, Tangelo, I wouldn't mind waking up next to you like this..." She says in a daze

My heart beat uncontrollably and I felt myself blushing really hard

She giggled and hugged me tight kissing my cheek, then she got up from my bed, I stared at her longingly, knowing that she's going home makes me miss her already

"I'm keeping your clothes Lalisa" She said confidently

I smiled and nodded "Okay, it's yours Jennie"

I got up from my bed as well to walk her out the door, My Papa is taking a shower so Jennie didn't get to say hi to him

I walked her to her car and opened her door for her

"Bye Jagi, see you at school.." Jennie said to me as she wraps her arms around my neck pulling me closer to her kissing my lips then she pulls away smiling

"Bye Honey.." I said

She giggled and pinched my cheek lightly then she got in her car and I closed her door for her, She started the engine and rolled down her window, she waved goodbye and gave me a flying kiss then she drove off.

After she's out of sight, I went in my house and started getting ready

I took a shower and dressed up quickly, I checked my phone and saw a text message from Jennie

4:52 AM Gungdung-i

> I'm home Jagi

I smiled when I read the word 'Jagi', Jennie would call me this and sometimes 'Honey' and it never fails to make my heart flutter, I would give her the same term of endearment because..well, it sounds nice and feels so natural

5:10 AM

> Glad you got home safe Honey

5:15 AM Gungdung-i

> Thank You for taking care of me, I slept really well last night even though it was only for 4 hours

5:22 AM

> I know, I'm sorry, next time come here early so we can sleep longer arraseo?

5:25 AM Gungdung-i

> Yes Jagi, anyways I'm gonna take a little nap then I'll get ready for school. take care going to school

5:30 AM

> We're actually leaving now, I'll text you Jagi.

5:30 AM Gungdung-i

> Alrighty, Nite Nite..

:

:

I'm cleaning one of the classrooms when I suddenly felt my phone vibrate

06:32 AM Gungdung-i

> Where are you Jagi?

06:32 AM

> Hey Honey, good morning again, I'm in room 318

06:33 AM Gungdung-i

> Ok, I'm here in school and I'm on my way there, I brought you breakfast

06:34 AM

> What? How did you ever find the time to make breakfast?

I asked her but she didn't respond, after a few minutes I heard the door open and there she is, smiling at me while holding out a big brown paper bag

"Hey Jagi! let's eat?" Jennie said as she sits down at one of the chairs taking out the food from the paper bag

I approached her and gave her a confused look

"Did you make all this?" I asked

She nodded proudly

"But I thought you were gonna sleep Jennie-ya?"

"I lied, I wanted to make you breakfast as a thank you, try it, it's good I promise" She said smiling

"But I need to finish up.."

"Come on, please? let's eat and then I'll help you" Jennie said pouting, melting my heart it in process

I don't want her to think that I don't appreciate her effort so I caved in and accepted the offer.

Jennie made some kind of wrap, she said it's called a breakfast burrito and she also brought fruit smoothie for us, the wrap was big and it had a lot of stuff going on but it was tasty and really filling, I ate happily and so did she.

"Lisa-ya, can I ask you a question, and be honest with me okay?" She said as she finishes up her food

"Sure, what is it?" I responded

"There's really nothing going on with you and Sana right?"

"Jagi, for the millionth time, me and her are not involved like that, I like her but only as a friend okay?" I said re-assuring her, reaching out for her hand and squeezing it tight

She nodded and gave me a tight lip smile

"So.. I don't need to worry about her.. right?" She asked again

"You never really had to be Jen, she's just really nice and sweet, you should get to know her.."

"Ok, I know you said I don't need to worry about her but you don't need to be complimenting her like that either" She said rolling her eyes at me

"Oh..right..Sorry" I said

"It's fine, anyways she's my God-sister, did you know that already?"

I nodded "Yes, she wasn't even aware at first but when I told her you were the owner's daughter she was kind of surprised"

"Pffft, her and I are on the same boat, small world, who would've thought.." Jennie said sounding irritated

"Haha. I know but yeah, no need to worry, and besides, I feel like she's interested with someone else anyway" I said out of nowhere

Jennie smirked "Let me guess, Tzuyu?"

I chuckled "I mean I don't know, she hasn't told me anything"

"Oh come on, she was totally flirting with Chewy last time I confronted her" She said laughing

I just shook my head laughing with her, I changed the topic because I don't want to continue talking about my friend's love life when she herself isn't ready to talk about it

"Jagi, I need to clean, I'm already way behind and I still need to clean the rest room"

"Ooooooh.. rest room.. I would love to make it dirty again after you clean 'em" Jennie said biting her lower lip as she traces her index finger on my lips and my chin and then she leaned in kissing me with so much lust, we ended up making out for a few minutes before she broke off the kiss

"Mmmmm... You have the best lips Jagi.. I love kissing you so much.." she whispered on my lips

"I love kissing you too Honey..You're so Pretty, You're getting more beautiful everyday..." I said while staring deeply into her eyes

"Aww, you're too sweet, Thanks Jagi, This is all for you..I happen to think you're a very Adorable baby duckling.." Jennie said as she pinches my cheeks lightly "Anyways, I think we should start cleaning now, you don't want to be late for first period" She said getting up then she winked at me

"Thank you by the way for bringing me breakfast" I said giving her a quick hug

"You're welcome" She said smiling warmly, she then picks up a rag and started cleaning

:

:

"Lisa-chan!" I heard Sana say coming in the classroom, she used the back door because well, I really don't know

I saw Jennie looking back at us as she watches what we're going to do

Sana sat down beside me and gave me a hug, she noticed I was staring at Jennie and then she looked at her direction as well

"Hey Kim, Good morning" She said smiling

Jennie rolled her eyes at Sana and then she look at the front of the class

"Geeez, Miss Green-eyes at it again" She said giggling

"Stop teasing her Sana-chan, She doesn't even have green eyes" I said to her

Sana gave me baffled look and she shook her head smiling "Lisa-chan don't take this the wrong way but I sometimes wonder how you get good grades but you're so slow with everything else.. anyways, I only said good morning to her, Am I in the wrong?"

"Yah! That's offensive, You're too much, anyways Good morning" I said to my friend laughing

"Good morning to you too, How was the cleaning? you tired?" Sana asked

"Little bit but I'm used to it" I responded

"I miss my sit in days when I used to pick you up from your house" Sana said pouting

"Sorry Sana-chan, but you know I need to help my Papa with the cleaning.."

"Aww, it's okay, sorry Lisa-chan I didn't mean to make you feel bad, thank you by the way for taking the time off to be with me during my sit-in days" she says

"You're like a month late with that *'Thank You'* sis" I said jokingly

"Hey, at least I said thank you" She said smacking my right arm lightly

"Could the two of you be quiet?! you're really distracting!" Jennie said out of nowhere which made the whole class look at her direction

"Boo! What are you people looking at?!" she yelled at the other students but they didn't say anything and just went about with their business

"Ooooooh.. boss lady upset again" Sana whispered giggling

"Sana sssshhh.." I said then I pretended to just look at my book.

Sana just nudge my side and She took out her notebook from her backpack

Jennie texted me before the class started

07:28 AM Gungdung-i

> Behave Tangelo or else you're gonna get it, you know how I am when I get upset, and you wouldn't want that right? ☐

07:29 AM

> Yes Jennie.. 🙄

She didn't reply anymore because the Teacher came in and started the class immediately.

JENNIE'S POV

I was a mess last Sunday, Lisa didn't call or text me at all, I was crying the whole day but I didn't tell her that, I only told her that I was upset with her and I moped around, but in reality, I was bawling my eyes out that's why I ended up going to a bar to drink my feelings away.

I wanted to forget her but I wasn't successful, being drunk made me only miss her even more so I drove to her place to see her and maybe get some action but I forgot that I'm on my period

She didn't look disappointed though when I told her that it was my time of the month, she just smiled at me and asked me to spend the night with her, I was so happy when she did, I didn't expect the invite and when she told me she missed me, I felt like my heart was about to explode, she also told me she cares for me...

I never thought I'd be feeling all kinds of joy and excitement just by hearing her say all those things, I felt so satisfied just by talking, cuddling and kissing her until we fell asleep..

But we had to wake up pretty early because she needed to go to school to help her Father clean up the classrooms.

I went home and I realized I have enough time to make her breakfast so I did, I decided to just go early to school too instead of taking a nap, I couldn't sleep anymore anyway because I'm excited to see My Tangerine and feed her.

I wanted to impress her by showing her that I can make a good food, granted it was only a breakfast burrito but still, if given a chance I would cook us a romantic dinner for two..

Huh? No.. No!

Shit.. I'm getting worse..

I shook my head out of the delusional thought. I don't want any romance, I only want to have sexual relations with her, that's it. I'm leaving for New York after graduation, I can't commit myself or get attached with her or else it's going to ruin everything for me.

My Parents, even though they love me and tolerate almost everything I do.. they won't be able to accept the fact that I'm.. messing around with the same sex let alone have an actual committed relationship..

Wait. Hold up, Am I actually wanting a committed relationship with her?? fuck! I'm so screwed.. I'm thinking way ahead of myself

But even when I tell myself to stop messing around with Lisa and just be casual with her, I can't seem to stay away..no matter how hard I try I keep coming back to her.

I crave her, not just the sex but her presence in general, I feel uneasy... I get nervous and paranoid when we don't talk or when I don't see her for more than 24 hours..

Sigh

Whatever, I'm just going to ride the waves until it dies down, knowing me, I get bored easily, I know I'm gonna get bored with her too, it's just a matter of time..it's the 'Chase' that's why I'm like this towards her.

Right?

When I go to New York, I'm gonna be exposed to new things and meet new people, and of course, Law School is going to take up most of my time so I'll forget about Lisa as soon as I get busy and start a new life in

the States..

Right..?

Please Jennie....convince yourself that you're right..

I argue with myself a lot when it comes to "The Tangelo Situation" ..I tell myself not to be attached to her but the affectionate feelings that I feel towards her always wins..

So I went to school early again today so I can eat breakfast with Her, I couldn't wait for Tangelo to try the food that I prepared for us.

As soon as I arrived, I went straight to where she's at, and as soon as I saw her, I shit you not, I felt myself literally glow, my world lit up and everything was in slow motion..I'm so happy, I can't explain it, we were just together not even 3 hours ago but I couldn't contain the butterflies in my stomach.

We ate the food, she looks like she enjoyed it and that made me feel very proud.

I confronted her once again about Sana and she gave me the same answer as before, that there is nothing going on between the two of them, and for some reason, I believe her this time..why? because I saw the way Sana was looking at Tzuyu.

I know that look, it's the same look that I give Lisa everytime I see her, but even if that's the case, I still hate the fact that she's all touchy feely with My Tangerine.

After eating breakfast and helping Lisa clean up classrooms and the rest room, I got all dolled up to look good for her. She's been complimenting me, telling me that I look beautiful but even then I still want to fix myself more and do my best to be perfect, I don't want her staring at anyone, I want her to focus on me.

Only Me.

If she ever dares to look at another man or a woman, I'm gonna bury her alive.

:

:

LUNCH TIME

"Jennie, Jisoo, did you guys already send out the invites for your Party?" Irene asked while she's texting

"Yeah, I guess we should do that now, so they'll have time to shop for their party outfits" My cousin said

"No need Chu, I already had one of the party coordinators do it, it's taken care of" I said to my cousin

"What?? what if I want to invite more people?!" My cousin said, she tends to over react over stupid things.

Idiot.

"Will you calm down? go and invite them then, you still have time to do it, the party is not until Saturday" I said to her

"Can I take my boyfriend with me?" Irene asked

"Oh! me too!" Rosé added

I smiled at the both of them "Of course Ladies"

Tzuyu sat closer next to me and whispered something

"Jennie-ya, you're not planning on inviting Sana and her weird friend right?"

"Nope" I said without any hesitation

"Okay, good" Tzuyu said smiling but she sounds a bit.. disappointed?

I wanted to ask her about Sana but I don't want to make her feel uncomfortable..

Tzuyu has only ever been with two guys but like me, she gets bored easily so she breaks up with them after 6 months or less.

Anyways..

There's no way I'm inviting Lisa to my party, people might get curious about her and they may start coming on to her, She doesn't realize how cute she is and lately I've been paying attention to the people around her, I saw some guys at our 5th period class looking at her, or should I say, lusting over her ever since Miss C. showed the dance video of Lisa.

I'm not exaggerating, I know they wanna fuck her, I know those looks that they send her way...

It's the same look I give Lisa when I want to have sex, which is almost always.

Nope. Nope. Nope.

I don't need any more competition.

Her ass is staying home.

"So.. I can still invite people right?" Jisoo asked again

"Oh My Lord.. YES! INVITE WHOEVER YOU WANT!" I said irritated

"Okay, then I'm inviting Lisa and Sana" Jisoo said which caught me by surprise

"NO! DON'T INVITE THEM!" Tzuyu and I yelled at an instant and

at the same time, we then looked at each and regret can be easily seen in our faces

Jisoo just grinned at us, I already know she's teasing Chewy and I

While I saw Irene and Rosé giving us a weird look

"What's up with you two? Jennie, I thought you're done bullying that orange freak?" Irene asked

"Yea so why can't they come? they seem cool" Rosé said

"Because.. Uhm.. I just don't feel comfortable around them" I said

"Uh-huh. Sure. And what about you Chewy? what's your excuse?" Rosé asked like she's interrogating Tzuyu but she handled it better than I did

She just shrugged and said "I don't like them. period."

Irene smirked while raising an eyebrow "Wow.. how lame. if I didn't know any better I would think you two are actually crushing on the two weirdos"

"What the hell are you talking about?" I asked annoyed

"You don't know any better Irene so why don't you just Zip it?" Tzuyu said backing me up

"Damn, you ladies are so defensive, listen, there's nothing wrong with crushing on girls I mean, Sana is hot and Lisa.. she's cute in her own way I guess, especially with that new hair of hers, it suits her, I didn't realize how attractive she is" Irene said with a mocking grin

That got my blood boiling.

I slammed my hands hard on the lunch table out of frustration.

See what I mean? even one of my friends are starting to notice Lalisa.

"Shut it Irene!" I said raising my voice

She just winked at me and continued to text, she really knows how to get under my skin.

"I'm leaving! I don't need to deal with this BS!" I announced as I abruptly stood up

Irene hurriedly grabbed my hand gently and said "Aww come on Jennie, I was kidding"

"I don't like those kind of jokes!" I continued to raise my voice

"Alright alright. I'll stop okay? sit down" she said calmly

I sighed and sat down, she gave me a hug and a kiss on the cheek

"I'm sorry Jennie, let's not fight sis, it was a harmless joke" Irene said genuinely

"Quit saying stupid things Irene, you're so annoying" I said glaring at her

She just giggled "Okay, I'm not gonna bring up about you and Tzuyu crushing on Sana and Lisa..right.. now, that's the last time I promise"

Tzuyu rolled her eyes at Irene and gave her the middle finger

"I hate you" I said

"I love you too Jennie, you too Chewy, no matter who you girls are crushing on" she said laughing softly while squeezing me into a tighter hug

:

After Lunch we said our goodbyes to each other before going to fifth period class but not without me pulling my cousin in one of janitor's closet.

"Jisoo, what the hell was that?" I asked annoyed

"What the hell was what Jendeuki? I didn't do anything" My cousin said pretending to be innocent

"You know damn well what you did! Why did you have to blurt out of nowhere that you're inviting Tangerine and Sana?! Now Irene and Rosé are getting suspicious!" I angrily whispered at my cousin

Jisoo sighed dramatically

"Listen stupid, those friends of ours, they're very smart and perceptive, you might think they don't pay attention but they do, they're our friends for a reason, you know the saying right? Birds of the same feather, flock together, and besides, I only said I wanted to invite them, how was I supposed to know you and Chewy would lay out your feelings out there"

"I do not have any fucking feelings for her!"

She chuckled "Sure Jendeuki, if you say so"

I ran a hand through my hair

"Jisoo, Tangerine and I are just fuck buddies, nothing more" I said getting frustrated

My cousin shrugged "Then I don't see the point of why I can't invite her, it's my party too you know"

"Chu.. Please Don't..." I said with a pleading tone.

I saw her gave me a look of concern

"Jendeuki, what's up? Why don't you want Lisa there? If you guys are just messing around then it shouldn't be a problem if she's there

and get to know people.."

"Chu..I.. I don't want her to meet new people, I don't want any competition.." I confessed feeling defeated.

"Competition? Jennie, tell me what's up? and be honest, I'm your cousin, you know you can trust me" She said putting a hand on my shoulder

I closed my eyes and inhaled sharply and decided to might as well come clean to my cousin,

She's right.

I do trust her...

I trust her with my life..

Alright, here it goes..

"Chu.. I.. I think I'm..

I'm falling in love with her.."

21.) Seumulhana

Title: Crazy for You

Artist: New Found Glory

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

JISOO'S POV

"Chu.. I.. I...think I'm..

I'm falling in love with her.."

Jennie said hesitantly

I mentally smiled and gave myself a pat on the back

I freaking knew it, she's so obvious.

To be honest, I'm not really shocked when my cousin confessed her feelings, but yeah, of course it caught me off guard because I didn't think she'd confessed this way.

I knew she liked Lisa but I didn't know that she feels this strongly towards her, I'm a bit skeptical about it.

But what surprised me more was the fact that she and Lisa are friends with benefits. My cousin doesn't usually do that. She has one night stands, She doesn't commit to just one sex partner.

I know my cousin, She gets bored easily, even when she's in a relationship with Mino, I know she fucks around but never with the same person.

Except for her boyfriend, he's such a leech

Mino knows about Jennie being..dare I say '*Slut*' but he's too in love to let her go, I know for a fact that Jendeuki tried breaking up with him a dozen times but he's just too persistent so she just lets him be.

Jennie will be going to New York after graduation and that's when she can officially get away from him..

The Martyr is what I call her boyfriend, he should get a trophy or a medal for being one.

"Jendeuki, you're falling in love with her? Seriously? how long have you been fucking each other anyway?" I asked

"More or less a month.." My cousin said reluctantly

"What?! You fucking Sap! are you serious?! you love her already and you've only been fucking for less than a month?! what the hell has gotten into you?! whatever happened to your one time use policy? by the way, just last week you were like '*Please Chu, It's not like I'm in love with the girl*' and now it's a complete 180"

Damn, I said a mouthful, but only because Jennie isn't being..Jennie?

"Sssshh! will you keep it down you loud mouth bitch! these walls have ears! and yes I'm pretty sure I'm in love with her!" She angrily whispered

I raised an eyebrow and crossed my arms, I admit I'm doubting that Jennie is actually in love

"I just remembered something Jendeuki, about Kai, remember how we were making fun of him because he told you he loved you when you were in the middle of having sex? You were even asking me '*How can people fall in love just cos they had sex?*' And now here you are, Lisa is definitely your Karma"

"Shut up Chu! Why even bring that up? what does that fool have to do with any of this?" She said angrily

I shrugged

"Nothing, just want to point out your hypocrisy, anyways, how do you know you're in love? it's not like you've felt it before" I asked.

"Exactly! this is the first time I've felt like this. I can't get her out of my head, I want to be around her all the time, you know about me Chu and my reputation, I'm never one that sticks around but I always find myself coming back to her! She got this hold on me..I can't get away from her, the worst part is she's not even forcing herself to me, I'm the one who's being a leech, chasing her around like some dog..I'm so mad at her!" Jennie said sounding very frustrated

I feel bad for my cousin because she looks like she doesn't really know what to do or handle her *'Love'* situation right now

But...

I want to play with her a little bit, I want to see how serious she is about this whole *'I'm in love with Lisa'* deal, for all I know she's just infatuated, so I decided to tease her more, and besides, I love when my cousin gets all riled up, it's so much fun because her cheeks get puffier.

Let the games begin

"Is she really that good in bed Jendeuki? maybe I should try her and see for myself, I want to know what the fuss is about, I've been curious and wanting to experiment with a girl for some time now anyway, you think she'll agree to be my fuck buddy too?" I said in a teasing tone but Jennie didn't appreciate it as I felt her slamming me hard against the wall and grabbing my collar with both of her hands

"Owwwww..." I groaned in pain "Jennie what the fu--"

"Don't you fucking dare Jisoo" She said with a dark tone of voice

Ooof! Game over!

Abort! Abort!

Jennie is really fuming.

Confirmed.

She's really serious about her

Shit! Shit!

I'm Dead!

"I'm letting you slide with all the teasing and other stuff but if you TRY even a subtle flirting move on her or even show a little interest then forget that we're ever related! Lisa is Mine! *SHE'S ALL MINE!*" Jennie said with so much possessiveness in her voice, I've never seen her like this before

Her eyes darkened with Anger and Jealousy.

****Gulp****

Uh-Oh.. I really got her mad for real!

Time to bail!

"Whoa, whoa cousin, I was just kidding, I'm sorry, no need to man-handle me, Lisa's not even my type, so just.. let me go okay? and calm down because you're scaring me a little bit.." I said a bit shaken up while laughing nervously

She came back to her senses and she slowly let me go.

Jennie is really strong. Between her and I, She's the more athletic one, obviously. Not to mention that works out a lot.

She can beat me up if she really wants to, but I know she just holds back because I'm her cousin.

But earlier, I saw it in her eyes that she was ready to throw punches my way, she was about to ruin my pretty face and beat the living crap out of me.

Now I know that I shouldn't joke around when it comes to having an affair with Lisa or she's going to hurt me for real.

"Jisoo, I'm fucking serious! Don't you dare make a move on **My Woman** or there's going to be trouble! I don't care if you're my cousin! I'm gonna end you! You know how much I hate sharing what's mine, you're not getting near my property" Jennie said warning me

"Alright already, I get it okay? I took it too far, I don't even like girls like that. I'm not gonna interfere with you and your lover, Geez! you stupid lovestruck monster! get a hold of yourself. You

scared the shit out of me" I said fixing my uniform.

"Stop saying stupid things then" She said rolling her eyes at me

"Am I really that beautiful for you to be threatened like that? I'm so moved" I said trying to lighten up the mood but I still feel a bit frightened.

"Please Chu, don't flatter yourself, I consider everyone a threat or a rival when it comes to Tangelo, if only I could lock her up somewhere far I would" My cousin said. She sounds really determined too, I bet she'll really do it if she has the chance.

"Sheeesh you obsessed psycho, calm down. You better keep those feelings in check or you're gonna scare her away"

..And To be honest Jendeuki, You're starting to scare me too.. what the hell did she do to you for you to act like this?

"Shut it! don't you think I know that? God! I need to get away from her before I lose myself completely"

"**smirk**How are you going to do that when you're so thirsty for her?"

"Ugh! You're so useless Jisoo! I confessed my feelings because I thought you could help, but instead you're making it worse for me"

"Hey, I'm sorry alright? I really don't know what to tell you either Jendeuki, It's not like I fell in love already but let me tell you this, whatever your decision may be regarding your relationship with Tangelo, I'll support you, just as long as you don't get hurt or she doesn't get hurt..be fair to her and to yourself Jennie, give yourself some time, it's too early to conclude that you're actually in love with her, maybe it's just.. you know.. Lust or infatuation? test the waters first" I suggested

"How, Chu?"

"**shrug**I don't know...Maybe try not to have sex with her every chance you get? You horny slut" I said laughing

"**glare**I'm going to slap you Chu"

"I'm serious Jennie, try not to be intimate with her, how about try

getting to know her first, like go on dates or just hangout in general, you don't need to be having sex with her all the time"

"We don't have sex all the time! stop exaggerating!" Jennie said defensively

"Fine, but you get what I mean right? try to have a different kind of bond with her, be her friend, but with no benefits what so ever"

"But, we have the deal and---" Jennie tried to defend herself yet again but I cut her off and her bullshit

"Pssshh, who are you trying to fool here? it's not like the deal is actually legit. You can quit on it any time you want to, it's Lisa who doesn't have a choice"

"What do you mean she doesn't have a choice? of course she can quit on the deal too" Jennie said in denial

I rolled my eyes at her "Yeah right Jennie, I'm pretty sure you wouldn't let her do that, with the way you're acting right now? all possessive and shit and *'not sharing'* crap?"

"Whatever" Jennie said then she looked at her phone "I gotta go, My Lover is looking for me"

"Mino?" I asked jokingly

"Lalisa Manoban. Bye. Thanks for the talk" Jennie said with a straight face as she exited the Janitor's closet.

"Jendeuki in love...huh. Interesting."

But I wonder, for how long?

I smirked to myself

This should be good.

LISA'S POV

Class already started and grace period is already over but Jennie's still not here, I saw her during first period and we've been texting

back and forth but it suddenly stop when lunch was over, I'm worried so I texted her again

01:15 PM

> Jagiya, where are you?

01:22 PM Gungdung-i

> I'm on my way to class Honey, Sorry, I had some business to take care of

01:23 PM

> Is everything okay? You're not hurt or anything right?

01:27 PM Gungdung-i

> I'm alright Jagi, don't worry, anyways I'm here, look to your side ☺
☐

I did what she told me on text and there she is smiling and then winking at me, she then went to Miss C. to give her pass and she sat down to her chair

Then I received another text from her

01:28 PM Gungdung-i

> That was sweet of you 🥰

01:29 PM

> Huh? what happened?

01:30 PM Gungdung-i

> You were looking for me earlier, did you miss me? 😊

My heart pounded like crazy, she's flirting with me, but I figured I should just be honest with her

01:32 PM

> Yes, I did. I miss you, even when I see you now and you're near I still miss you ☐

Is what I replied to Jennie, I don't know what came over me but for some reason, I'm feeling confident, I guess I'm gradually getting used to her

01:33 PM Gungdung-i

> Awww, My Honey so Clingy. I missed you too ☐

I felt myself blushing, all my confidence went back to zero so I

sent her a neutral reply, I'm trying not to look at her right now because I don't want to embarrass myself

01:34 PM

> It's the truth Jagi 🙄

01:35 PM Gungdung-i

> I know Jagi. Anyways...can I come over later to your house? I need to talk to you about something

01:36 PM

> Sure, I'm not working tonight, me and papa should be done by 6:30 or 7:00 PM

01:36 PM Gungdung-i

> Ok, I have cheer practice until 7:30 PM, i'll swing by around 8:30 PM, would that be okay?

01:37 PM

> Yeah that's fine Jagi.

01:38 PM Gungdung-i

> Ok, see you later honey.. can't wait ☐ I should pay attention to class now, unlike you I actually need to watch the steps carefully lol

01:39 PM

> Haha alright Honey.

I looked at her direction briefly and to my surprise, she's already looking at me flashing her beautiful gummy smile before looking away to watch Miss C teaching them new steps.

:

:

8:00 PM

I'm in my room laying down in my bed, I just got done taking a shower, I had a long day, for some reason I'm feeling extra tired

Maybe after Jennie comes over I'll be sleeping early.

8:10 PM Gungdung-i

> Jagi, I'm here, open the door for me? ☺☐

Huh, She came earlier than expected, good thing I already took a shower, I don't want to stink around Jennie and turn her off.

I jumped out of my bed and ran towards the front door, I opened

it and there she is..

Jennie.

"***smile*** Hey" She said

"Hi" I replied then I gave her a tight hug and a kiss on the cheek

"D'awww.. you're so cute, I miss you too Sweet heart" Jennie cooed, hugging me back

"Come in Jennie-ya"

I grabbed her hand and lead her in my room

"Where's your papa?" She asked

"He's already sleeping, you know how he is, he goes to bed really early"

"Ahhh. that's right, are we hanging out in your room then Lisa-ya?"

"Yep. We Are"---"Ladies first" I said to Jennie, she smiled at me and then she went in.

I then closed the door and I instinctively locked it.

Her back is turned against me so she doesn't see the look of lust that I'm giving her right now, she's not really wearing anything that's seductive.

Jennie is just wearing a black Adidas boyfriend tee with a matching black Adidas Mid-rise Pants, it's a really casual outfit but whatever she wears, she still looks so sexy in my eyes.

I can't help myself..

I'm so attracted to her

She went by my bed and when she turned to look at me, I pulled her close and crashed my lips on hers.

"Lisa-ya about the talk I---mmpphhh!!"

I really miss Jennie, I know I'm not acting like my normal self and I'm not the one who usually initiates the kissing, I'm usually a shy person but I don't care if I'm being too aggressive or I'm being too clingy, all I know is that I need to kiss her right now.

I love kissing her.

Jennie responded with my kiss, She snaked her arms around my neck while I wrapped mine around her waist and pulled her closer to me. My hands eventually roamed on her back then her thighs then back up to her butt squeezing it lightly which caused us both to moan

She broke away from our kiss for a bit, we stared at each other longingly, she caressed my cheek and gave me smile, I smiled back and leaned in once again.

I bit her bottom lip lightly, she opened her mouth and I saw this as an opportunity to slip my tongue inside. I moaned a bit louder this time, Jennie tastes so sweet, like fresh mint and vanilla

"Baby.. you taste so good..." I said breaking off the kiss

"Ooo.. Baby huh? I love that.. say it again.." Jennie said whispering to my lips

"Baby.." I whispered back seductively

I looked deeply into her eyes, Jennie's in a daze while biting her bottom lip and then she said "Fuck Me, Baby.." as she crashed her lips to mine

I lead her blindly to my bed and laid her down as gently as I could.

I'm on top of her kissing her lips hungrily while I forcefully stick my tongue in her mouth again as we fight for dominance, I pinned her wrists, she wraps her legs around my waist.

I got off of her then I took off my shirt and my bra and threw it somewhere in my room, I sat Jennie up and I helped her take off her shirt and bra as well. I sat her down on my lap and I started

kissing and sucking on her neck

"Oooohh Jagiya.. " She moaned as she grinds herself to me.

I then moved my lips from her neck down to the valley of her breasts, I started sucking on her left breast while I massage the other with my right hand. Jennie tangled her hands on my hair as she pulls me closer to her

"Fuuhh..ahhh..fuck.. baby.. that's right.. don't stop" Jennie moaned then she gives me kisses on top of my head as she digs her nails on my back

I laid her down again and this time I tried to take off her pants and her underwear but she stopped me

"Baby wait, No..Stop.." She says as she turns crimson red

"Oh shit! sorry Jagi, did I take it too far?" I asked concerned

"No..No it's not that.. it's just.. I'm still on my period.." Jennie said then she covers her face with her hands

How could I forget? she even borrowed tampons from me

"Fuck, Sorry Honey It totally slipped my mind.."

"No, it's not your fault, I did ask you to have sex with me, I actually forgot too so.." She trailed as she got under my covers

We looked at each other for a bit and then we laughed.

"Okay, we both need to control ourselves, you almost became a blood sucker there" Jennie said as she continues to laugh

I smiled and then shrugged "I don't mind Jagi, I'm into blood and gore movies, I'm pretty sure I can handle the crime scene in between those legs"

"Whoa.. okay, calm down you freak..should I consider that as a

red flag?" She asked jokingly while raising an eyebrow

"No, you should consider that as a Plus because I'm willing to go down on you anytime, period or no period"

She laughed out loud "Wow Jagi.. why are you suddenly so cocky and nasty?"

"I don't know, you're probably rubbing off on me" I said with a straight face

"Yah! I admit I'm cocky but I'm not nasty like you!"

"I'm just kidding Mandu, come here"

I hug her tight then I gave her a quick kiss on the lips

I then got off the bed and searched for our clothes, as soon as I found hers, I went and helped her put her shirt back on

"Thanks baby"

"You're welcome"

I laid down next to her as I cover ourselves with my blanket

We both giggled and I engulfed her again into a tight hug, she returned my embrace then she kissed my chin

"Anyways.. about the talk?" I started

She sighed "Oh, right, forgot about that.."

"Is it something I should worry about Jennie-ya?"

"Well.. I don't know if you should but.. ok, here it goes..."

*****clears throat*****

"..my birthday is coming up Jagi.." Jennie said but she sounds like she's hesitating

"Yes, January 16th right? this Saturday, what of it?"

"I'm throwing a big party, actually, It's Jisoo and I's party since we're born on the same month.." She continued

"Uh-huh.. and then..?"

Where is she trying to go with this topic?

"The thing is.. almost everyone who's anyone in our school is invited.. and.."

"Yeah..?" I asked unintentionally raising an eyebrow, I just wish she'd get to her point already

She exhaled hard and pursed her lips

"You're not invited Jagi..Sorry"

****Pause****

"Jagi, say something.." Jennie said cupping my cheek

*****giggle**** Was that it?"

"Ye-Yeah.. you're not offended?" She asked a bit surprised

I shook my head "No not at all, I don't like parties Jagi, and besides, I have work that day"

"Oh..R-right.. I got worried over nothing then" She said laughing awkwardly

"Why did you worry anyway? it's really okay, I promise"

"Because.. I was afraid you'd question why I didn't bother inviting you, Jisoo wanted to but I told her No"

"Well, since you opened the topic, do you mind telling me why then?"

"Tangelo, Promise you won't freak out okay?" She said looking at me with a little pout

I smiled and pecked her lips "I promise Jennie, you can tell me"

She snuggled closer to me hugging me by my waist

"I don't want you to meet new people, I'm afraid they might take interest in you and they'd start coming on to you and I--I'm scared you might like them too. I don't want that to happen Lisa-ya. I know it's selfish of me and unreasonable but that's how I feel, I don't want them to take you away from me.." She said tightening her hold on me

I'd be lying if I say that what I heard just now didn't surprise me because it did, more like shocked actually.

I couldn't believe it, I really don't know how to react.

Jennie propped up her head

"Lisa-ya?" She called out softly but I didn't say anything

"Shit. I knew it, I'm so stupid, I shouldn't have said anything, I totally freaked you out didn't I?" She asked, she's now fully seated and she's looking at me with eyes full of worry

"I--I'm leaving, forget I said anything. bye" She said ready to bolt out the door but I immediately stopped her

"Wait! Jennie! Sorry I didn't mean to react like that, come here and sit beside me, please?"

She was looking skeptical but she eventually sat back on the bed next to me

"You're worried I might like someone?"

She stayed quiet but she nodded to confirm

"That's not going to happen, I'm not really interested with anyone else at the moment"

"O-oh.. is-is that so?" She said with a disappointed tone

"Yeah I mean, right now, it's you and I right?"

"What do you mean, Tangelo?"

"Your rules remember? you said I should just focus on you and I'm not allowed to like anyone" I said to her

"Wait a minute, so you not having sex or not liking anyone is because of the rules that I set? so if I didn't establish those rules then you'd go around dating?"

"I mean yeah..I'm assuming you want me to be monogamous right?"

"Wow..is that the only reason Tangelo?"

"Only reason to what Jennie-ya?"

"That's the only reason why I'm the only one you're having sex with, it's because of the rules?" Jennie said sounding a bit angry

"Uhm.. Yes?" I answered but I wasn't sure if that's the answer she wanted to hear

"Wow.. so that's how you see it, I'm hindering your love life is that it? I'm an obstacle?! I'm a pastime until you find the one who's really for you?! " Jennie said fuming

Shit.. what the hell did I say?

Why is she so mad all of a sudden?

I better say something smart or She'll murder me.

"That's not what I mean Jen, You know me, I follow rules and--"

"Un-freaking-believable!" She said standing up from my bed abruptly

"Jennie wait! what's going on? what did I do now? we were just talking here" I said grabbing her hand but she swatted it away

"Don't fucking touch me Tangelo!" She said angrily then she walks away

I stood up from my bed as well

"Jennie come on.."

"Do not follow me! Stay there! I don't want to fucking talk to you ever again!"

She looks hurt, tears are threatening to fall from her eyes

I backed away from her slowly and before I know it

She's gone

"Fuck!" I exclaimed

What the hell just happened?

22.) Seumuldul

Title: Mean It

Artist: Lauv and LANY

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

TUESDAY- Pioneer High School

LISA'S POV

06:45 AM

I'm almost done cleaning the last classroom before going to my first period class.

Last night was a real mess, I don't know what the hell happened between Jennie and I, she just started getting upset again out of nowhere when I mentioned about the rules that she made.

I don't understand her at all.

She's the one who made up those stupid rules in the first place.

When I unintentionally don't follow them she gets mad which is understandable but when I do follow them she still gets mad.

I'm really doing my very best to comply to her as much as possible because I do not want any trouble with her, and I don't mind the rules either

I know I'm not the problem here, not to point fingers but it's obviously her who's the problem.

She's the one who's been breaking her own rules but does she hear me saying anything about it? NO!

Uuughhh! that little Dumpling-Faced..ughh! She's really frustrating!

I texted and called her last night but she didn't answer me. She may have already blocked me but even then I didn't stop trying, Even this morning I texted her.

I barely slept last night because I kept thinking about her pretty face and the look of hurt in her eyes.

She said no Jealousy, no catching feelings and yet.. all those things that she said..

Even the rules--They're way out of line in my opinion considering we're only supposed to be 'Fuck Buddies' but did I question her?

No.

Because that's what she wants.

And to be honest, I don't mind 'em at all, because deep down, that's what I want too, just as long as I get to spend time with her.

She can give me a thousand rules and I'll comply to each one of them..that's how much I value her.

I know it's insane to be attached to her right away but I can't control what I feel.

I Care for Her

And I Like Her...

A Lot.

I was actually expecting her to come early today like what she's been doing lately but there's no trace of her anywhere.

I want to talk to her and straighten things out. I don't want any misunderstanding between us, She's too important and I don't want to lose her over something that can be easily fixed.

:

:

It's now 7 am, The school gates are open

****Sigh****

I guess I'll just see her first period.

I went to the restroom to brush my teeth then after that I went to my locker to grab some of my books

"Lisa-chan!" Sana said hugging me from behind which surprised me a bit

"Owww.. Sana-chan, you gotta stop doing that, you're about to give me a heart attack"

"Aren't you exaggerating? I always do that, you should be used to it by now" Sana said giggling "Anyways, let's hangout Friday night after work, Minari is leaving soon 'cos her School break is over.

"Sure, where are we going?"

Sana shrugged

"I don't know yet, we'll figure something out and--"

She suddenly stopped and whispered "Uh Oh, here comes trouble.."

"What are you---" I was going to ask but she nodded her head looking behind me.

I turned around and saw Jennie looking as flawless as ever.

She's walking with her boyfriend with his arms around her shoulder while their hands are linked together

I felt a tight feeling in my chest so I looked away as fast as I could

"Pfft! Kim is acting so fake right now" I heard Sana say as she rolls her eyes at Jennie

"What? how?" I asked

"Lalisa.. seriously? do I have to spell it out for you?.. You know what? never mind, It's none of my business. let's go to class" Sana said linking her arms with mine and dragged me blindly causing us to bump into someone

"Owww!!!" Sana and the person she bumped into groaned in pain

"Minatozaki! it's you again! how many times are you gonna bump into me like this!" I heard the person yell.

I looked to see who it was and It turns out to be Tzuyu-ssi. Again.

"Shoot! I'm so sorry Tzuyu-ssi, It was an accident" Sana apologized but she looks more cheerful than earlier?

"I'm really getting tired of these '*accidents*' Minatozaki, You're gonna get it" Tzuyu-ssi said like she's warning Sana but my friend didn't look fazed at all

Sana unlinked her arms with mine and went face to face with Tzuyu-ssi. I moved to Her side to stop her because I don't want her to get in trouble but the tension between the two is making me a bit scared.

****smirk*** Get what Tzuyu-ssi? You're all talk, no action"

Tzuyu glared at Sana gritting her teeth, she raised her hand and was about to slap Sana but my friend caught her attacker's hand

"Tsk tsk tsk. How violent..but somehow, It's really turning me on..I just now realized, I like feisty girls" Sana said with a flirty tone

"Sana-chan.. stop it, let's go, people are staring" I said whispering to her

"It's alright Lisa-chan, I got this" Sana looked at my direction with a smile then she looked back at Tzuyu-ssi

"Is that all you got, Tzuyu-ssi?" She Challenged

"Oww.. Let go of me Minatozaki!"

Sana chuckled and she let go of Tzuyu's hand.

"Listen Tzuyu, You don't need to act like you don't like me, because we both know you do" Sana said which caught me off guard and apparently, so did Tzuyu

"Wha--what are you talking about..." Tzuyu said as she blushes really hard

"Babe, why don't you just admit it? let's stop this non sense. Who knows I might even feel the same way about you" Sana giggled as she traced her index finger on Tzuyu's collarbone.

The other girl is so shocked at what's happening she didn't even bother responding, she's just standing there frozen.

"What's going on here?" A person said from behind us

Now it's my turn to freeze.

I know that voice

It's HER...

It's Jennie

"***grin*** Nothing for you to be concerned about Kim" Sana said cockily

"What the hell did you just say?!" Jennie yelled, untangling her hand with her boyfriend to go toe to toe with Sana

I mentally face palmed myself

Shit.

Here we go again.

"You heard me Kim" Sana said her grin not leaving her lips

I saw Jennie clench her fist and was about to punch Sana but Mino stopped her just in time

"Whoa! Babe stop!" Mino said holding on to her waist.

I need to drag Sana away from them or she's gonna get hurt for real

"Sana-chan, let's go" I said grabbing her hand and pulling her

away from the scene as fast as I could

:

We reached our class just in time, we used the back door so we don't attract any attention

"Sana-chan, are you out of your mind? you were about to get hurt, not just Once but Twice! (A/N: *wink wink* hehe) I said angrily whispering at my friend

"But I didn't, didn't you see how fast I caught Tzuyu's hand? but yeah with Jennie? She almost got me, she probably had some martial arts training like me, she was pretty quick, good thing her dumb ass of a boyfriend stopped her" Sana said sounding impressed

"Wow. Are you actually admiring Miss Kim right now?"

"Well Yeah, I would love to spar with her if I get the chance"

"Sana-chan.. you're really something.. and what was that about with Tzuyu-ssi?"

"Isn't it obvious? I was flirting with her, she's tall, dark, pretty and feisty, me likey" Sana answered giddily

"Wait, I thought for sure you're straight? You told me you had boyfriends back in Japan didn't you?"

"I am, but then sometimes, girls have exceptions, take Jennie for example, she's straight but she has her exceptions too" Sana said winking at me

"H-huh? Wha-what are you---" I stuttered but then the bell rang

Jennie came in without looking at our direction, the teacher also entered the room and started the class right away

:

FRIDAY

It's been approximately 4 days.

4 days of no talking to Jennie.

She's been really good at ignoring me so I stopped texting and

calling her.

I'm probably just annoying her, if she wanted to reply to me or talk to me she would've done it already but she didn't.

Wait, actually, she did reply to me yesterday.

Thursday 07:30 PM Gungdung-i

> Stop texting me! I don't want your presence even on my phone alright? so leave me the hell alone! do me a favor and never talk to me again!

It's obvious that she has no plans of fixing whatever problem we have right now so I decided to just let her be.

She's still mad about something that I did, which is I have no idea or clue what it is that got her acting like I did something really bad.

I admit, I got tired of saying sorry, I'm only human after all. I'll just leave her alone and move on.

I don't even know if our deal is still on at this point.

Oh well, it was fun while it lasted

:

I'm sitting down on one of the lunch tables outside waiting for Sana, she went to the cafeteria to get food. I'm looking down just playing some games on my phone when I noticed someone was waving their hands in front of me, I looked up and it was a guy

"Hey" the guy said smiling widely

"Uhm.. Hi?"

This is one of those rare moments that I get approached by a boy, it's either they want to bully me or ask for some money which I clearly do not have.

What does this pretty boy want?

Shoot I hope he's not one of Miss Kim's minions

"You're Lalisa right? Lalisa Manoban? 5th period T.A. for Miss C's class?" he asked clarifying

"Uh..yeah I am.. pardon me but...how'd you know my name? I don't remember you from 5th period"

"Oh, My bad, how rude of me, I'm actually from a different period, 3rd to be exact, I'm Jungkook, Jeon Jungkook, pleased to meet you Lalisa" he said extending his hand

"H-hi, nice to meet you too" I said taking his hand as I awkwardly shook it

He looks very friendly and I gotta say and now that I look at him more closely, he's really handsome.

I'm feeling nervous all of a sudden, I tried to let go of his hand but he has a good grip on mine

"I thought you were cute in the video but You're.. even cuter in Person Lalisa" He said bluntly

Ok, something's up

Am I being pranked or something?

Did he just say I was cute?

"Oh! Uhm!.. Th-Thanks!" was all I said, forcefully taking my hand back which caused him to laugh softly

"Sorry, I'm coming on too strong am I?"

"N-no.. I'm just a really shy person..sorry to ask but what made you approach me all of a sudden? "

"Miss C. showed us that dance video that you did.. you're really amazing Lalisa, I really admire the way you danced and---" he said but I interrupted him unintentionally

"What?? I thought it was just for our 5th period class.. Oh!! I'm so embarrassed" I exclaimed covering my face with both my hands, I can feel myself blushing hard

"Hey, don't be like that, I didn't say that to embarrass you, but I'm sorry if I did, I just really wanted to let you know that I really like the way you move.." Jungkook said as he takes off my hand from my face gently

He's still smiling but he does look like he feels bad

"Hey Lisa-chan I'm bac--Hey Jungkookie! what's up?" Sana greeted the guy

"Sana-ssi, Hello" He said smiling at Sana

"You two know each other?" I asked them

"Uh-huh, he's in my 6th Period- AP Chemistry class, anyways what are you doing here Kookie?" Sana asked the guy

"Nothing, just trying to be friends with Lalisa here"

"Ohh.. well in that case, you want to have lunch with us? I bought a lot of food, we can all share it"

"I'm actually already full but do you guys mind if I do join you? you know.. just to hangout, get to know each other better, is that okay with you Lalisa?" Jungkook said then he looked at me smiling warmly

"Of course Kookie! sit down" Sana answered for the both of us, she sat beside me and nudged me on my side very subtly

:

:

Lunch was.. How do I say this, it was pretty awkward..

I mean Sana and Jungkook were great, they're both really funny and they have a lot of things to talk about, they don't give me that vibe that I'm out of place, I say things here and there..

It's just that..I catch Jungkook stealing glances at me.

I don't know if I'm imagining things but.. I feel a bit uncomfortable but not because he's creeping me out, it's just that, he's too cute and nice and it makes me really wonder why all of a sudden he wants to get to know me

"Lalisa, is it okay if I ask for your number?" He said out of nowhere

"My number? what for?" I asked a bit surprised

"Texting, Calling, you know, that's how phones work right?"

I laughed awkwardly "Oh ye-yea of course.. here, dial your number on mine and call it" I said handing him my phone which he happily took

Few moments later, he gave it back to me

"Okay! I got it, thanks Lalisa, save my number okay?"

"Oh.ok, sure"

"You'll warm up to me soon Lalisa" He said then he winked at me

The bell suddenly rang signaling that lunch is over and fifth period is about to start

"Lisa-chan, let's go" Sana said

"Do you mind if I walk you guys to class?" Jungkook asked

"Ah That's ok you don't have to---" I said but Sana interrupted me

"We'd love for a handsome guy to walk us to class, right Lisa-chan?"

I looked at her wide-eyed, Sana is looking very amused and giddy.

She's probably crushing on him, if that's the case then.. Fine.

and then I looked Jung-kook "Ye-yeah.. ok let's go"

"Go be in the middle Lisa-chan" Sana said walking on my left then Jungkook on my right

"Let me carry your bag for you Lalisa" Jungkook offered

"No, it's alright, thank you though"

"Ahh, too soon huh? that's okay, I'll work on it"

Huh? work on what? what is he saying?

Few moments later, we reached our classroom

"Ok, we're here" Jungkook announced

"Thanks for walking with us Kookie" Sana said

"No problem, Sana-ssi"

"Lisa-chan, I'm going in okay?" My friend said giving me a suggestive look while grinning, then she entered the classroom

"Yeah me too, anyways thank Jungkook for walking with us" I said to him, I was about to go in when he suddenly grabbed my hand stopping me

"Wa-wait, Lalisa"

I looked at him surprised by the sudden gesture

"I-uh.. it was nice hanging out with you during lunch..I hope we can do it again soon.." he said sounding a bit nervous

"Ye-Yeah sure Jungkook, you can hangout with us any time at lunch, it's no problem"

"Great! but ah..that's not really what I meant.. I mean like, can we go on a dinner date some time this coming weekend? Just You and I"

I didn't know what to say to him because this is the first time that I got asked out on a date.

"If.. you're not available this weekend, maybe next weekend?"

"Jungkook, I--"

"Listen, I know I'm moving a little too fast, I'm not usually like this but uhm.. I really want us to get acquainted and get to know each other for real, just the two of us.. Please?" He says as he rubs his nape

"Sorry, I don't know what to say.."

"I promise I'm not a psycho, I'm just awkward but underneath all the weirdness, I'm actually fun to be around and I have a lot of great jokes, I promise we'll have a good time"

I thought about it for a moment.

Spending lunch with him wasn't so bad, he did tell a lot of interesting stories and I admit it was fun hanging out with him even though I was a bit awkward but over all it was good. He's a nice guy.

"**smile** Okay Jungkook"

"Okay? as in you'll go out with me?" He confirmed

I smiled and nodded

"Yes! I promise you won't regret it!"

Our Moment was cut off when someone suddenly bumped me hard from behind causing me to stumble but Jungkook thankfully caught me

"Move you freak! you're blocking the door!"

I already know who it is.

Jennie Kim.

"Are you alright Lalisa?" Jungkook asked me worriedly

"She's fine, she's a big girl, now let go of her" Jennie said with venom in her voice, she then grabbed my arm roughly, pulling me towards her.

"Don't you have a class to go to?" Jennie asked rudely.

"Miss Kim, I was just talking to Lalisa" Jungkook answered

She stepped forward and went face to face with him, blocking my view.

"I don't need any explanation from you, now run along, you don't need to be here" She said like she's warning him.

Jungkook caught on with the vibe Jennie's giving off so he complied.

"I understand Miss Kim, I'll go now" He said to Jennie then he looked at me with a warm smile "Lisa, I'll see you this Saturday night okay?"

"Ye-Yeah, see you.." I said to him and then he walked away waving goodbye

Jennie is now looking at me with murderous glare, she's giving me a look like I wronged her.

She looks like she's ready to stab me and I'm frozen like a statue because she's giving off intense bad vibes

"Miss Kim, Lisa, please get in the classroom, the bell rang already" Miss C. said as she approached us

Jennie gave me one last menacing glare before going in the classroom. I feel chills run down my spine, I couldn't really move, good thing Miss C. brought me back to my senses

"You alright?" Miss C. asked concerned

"Ye-Yeah, Miss C. I'm fine, thank you for asking" Miss C. just nodded and motioned me to come in.

As soon as Miss C. Started the class, I felt my phone vibrate notifying me of a text message

It's Jennie

13:05 PM Gungdung-i

> You're not going anywhere with him or anyone you got that?!

I didn't bother replying to her because She's trying to start something, I just know it.

2 minutes later, she texted again.

13:07 PM Gungdung-i

> If I find out you pushed through your fucking date with that son of a bitch then expect that you'll be in big trouble! not just you but him too! Don't fucking test me Lisa!

That got my attention which forced me to reply

13:08 PM

> Jennie leave him alone will you? he's not doing anything wrong, he's just being friendly

13:10 PM Gungdung-i

> Being friendly?! You oblivious retard!! he asked you to go on a dinner date with him!! that's not gonna fly with me! I forbid it!

13:11 PM

> You Forbit it?! Wow.. you're really something aren't you? he just wants to hangout, what's your problem Jennie? you ignore me for days and now all of a sudden you're telling me what to do again?!

13:12 PM Gungdung-i

> Fucking right I'm telling you what to do and you're gonna do what I say or else I'm going to have the both of you expelled out of

Pioneer! I'm fucking serious Lisa! Do not go against me!

I didn't reply to her anymore but instead, I looked at her direction--she's already looking at me with an evil grin plastered on her face

I clenched my fists--I wanted to yell at her but I can't do anything, I know what she's capable of.

If she was able to get my status back here in Pioneer, she can easily take it away too.

I felt myself getting teary eyed.

I excused myself from Miss C's class, I told her I need to use the restroom and she allowed me to go out.

I bolted out the door as my tears fall down from from my eyes

JENNIE'S POV

Lisa excused herself after I sent her that text --threatening her that I'm going to have her and that fucking guy expelled if she dares to go out with him.

I saw the look in her eyes, she was devastated and was ready to cry. It pained me to see her like that but I kept up my act of *not giving a fuck* and showed her that I'm serious and proud of what I just threatened her with.

I don't care if she's mad at me! I'm mad at her for agreeing to go on a date with that random bastard and on my fucking birthday

too!

Fuck them both!

I'm going to give that girl a piece of my mind

I raised my hand also excusing myself from Miss C's class to follow Lisa

:

I'm in front of the restroom door and I opened it, as soon as I'm in, I locked the door immediately and there I saw Lisa whimpering

I wanted to run to her and hug her, comfort her even, Tell her to stop crying because I didn't mean what I said about expelling her but my pride won't let me.

So I approached her the only way I know how

"Fucking pathetic! you're crying because I told you that you aren't allowed to go out?! you're crying over him is that it?! because you won't be able to go on your little date?!!" I asked furiously

Lisa looked at me shooting daggers at my direction

"Jennie what the fuck is your problem?! you won't tell me why you're upset! I've been trying to approach you for days and you keep ignoring me! and now that one person is trying to be friendly with me you get angry and want to expel us?!" Lisa responded with the same tone but it didn't faze me.

I can do it better

I charged towards her, grabbing her by her arms with a tight grip and slammed her hard against one of the restroom cubicle door forcing her to get in a tight space with me.

"Lalisa don't you fucking dare use that tone of voice with me ever again!" I said as if challenging her to talk back but she didn't so I continued.

"I said it before and I'll say it again Lalisa and this time, make sure you get it through your thick skull.. I Fucking Own You! You're Mine! I will never allow you to be with anyone else!"

"Jennie let go, please... you're hurting me..owwww.." Lisa said as she cries in pain

I didn't listen to her plea, I gripped on her arms tighter then I leaned in close to her ear.

"You. Are. Mine. *You're MY Woman!* You're never getting away from me, no matter how hard you try, you understand me?! If you ever pull this fucking stunt again, you can kiss your scholarship goodbye, not just that Lalisa, if I ever see another person who tries to make a move on you again, and you tolerate them, they're going to be expelled too and they won't have a good future after High School, I'll personally make sure of it! Clearly you have no clue how powerful and influential my family is.. so let me give you an idea.."

I pulled away from her and looked at her intently while giving her a nasty grin.

"If you get expelled from Pioneer, It's gonna be impossible for you to get accepted in any other Universities In and Out of this Country--My Family owns several Prestigious and Well-Known Universities Lisa and not just that, we have large shares on multiple local and international companies as well, one word from My Father and your employment will be in Jeopardy. I want you to bear that in mind if you're thinking of getting away from my hold again..." I said then I leaned in giving her butterfly kisses on the

side of her lips inhaling her scent then I continued

"I got you wrapped around my finger..there's no escaping me. This will serve as your warning.. **Nae Sarang**" I said coldly

Once I finished giving her threats, I saw a great deal of fear in her eyes, She's Trembling and She didn't say anything anymore.

I pinned her wrists and then I crashed my lips to hers.

I don't care if I'm being unreasonable or cruel.

I don't care if she thinks I'm the most evil person she has ever met.

I don't care if she hates me

It doesn't matter what she thinks of me..

Jisoo is right, I am a Sap.

But I don't give a shit.

All I know is that..

I'm in love with her.

I'm crazy, hopelessly and selfishly In love with her

Nobody's Taking Her From Me..

She's Mine to Keep Forever.

23.) Seumulset

Title: You Are The Reason

Artist: Calum Scott & Leona Lewis

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

Fair Warning: A Lot of People got MUTED on this chapter because they found a certain thing Jennie said that's cringey so I did them a favor and got rid of them lol

JENNIE'S POV

Restroom-While 5th Period still on going

I crashed my lips on to Lisa's s luscious ones.

I kissed her aggressively, slipping my tongue inside her mouth forcefully to show dominance while I continue to pin her on the cubicle wall.

I'm so Jealous and Upset about her agreeing on going on a date with some guy that she doesn't even know all that well.

For all I know, that guy might be a sex offender or a psycho killer, he might do something bad to My Baby

I can't let that happen!

I mean, even if the guy is normal I still wouldn't let her go on a date with him (or anyone)

I'm the only one who can date her.

I didn't invite her to my birthday party so she wouldn't attract any attention but I guess it's inevitable isn't it??!

She still got asked out!

Good thing I heard what that guy said about seeing Tangelo tomorrow or else she'll most likely pushed through their dinner date.

Tangelo tried her best to move away from my kisses but I wouldn't let her. She may be taller than me but I'm way stronger than her.

I then moved my lips down to her neck near her throat and started sucking harshly

"Je-Jennie No..Stop it, you're going to leave a..m-mark.." Lisa said while she moans

I stopped kissing her and looked deep into her eyes

"Nae Sarang..It's Funny how you're asking me to stop and yet you continue to let out those sexy, throaty moans..It's like you're asking for it and I can't help myself, you're so irresistible.. so let me just continue with what I'm doing arraseo? be a good girl, listen to Daddy Jennie and we won't have any problems.." I said smirking at her

"Lalisa, Promise me you're not going on that date. Nod your head 'Yes' " I whispered on her lips with a commanding tone

She did what she's told

I grinned feeling victorious then I continued to kiss her neck then I suck on it aggressively on different places.

I'm making sure that I leave multiple visible love bites on her...marking my territory

I love you Lalisa...

I'm in love with you..

I love you..

I love you..

I love you..

That's all I kept thinking about while I'm kissing her. I feel like my heart is about to burst from all these feelings that I have for her.

"Jennie.. we need to get to class.."

Fuck! I forgot we're in the middle of 5th period

I took a deep breath to compose myself and then I let go of her wrists slowly. I wanted to get my way with her but I guess that's not happening today, so instead, I snaked my arms around her neck and made out with her quickly and then I pulled away.

"Cover those marks Jagiya...or not, it's up to you" I said sensually tracing my index finger on her neck "These are my love marks, Nae Sarang, a reminder that You Belong to Me"

Lisa is looking at me with a baffled expression, I just gave her a suggestive smirk and then I walked out the cubicle.

I checked myself in the mirror making sure my hair is perfect, my uniform is neat and tidy and then I fixed my smudged lipstick.

When I'm done, I turned around to face her again. Tangelo is just staring at me, not really sure what to do next.

A Flustered Tangelo..

Just when I thought she couldn't get any more cuter.

I love her.

"I'll go first Tangelo, like I said you can cover those marks or not, it's totally up to you.. but if you decide to do so, then I wish you good luck. Bye, Love.. I'll see you Sunday" I said smiling innocently at her then I walked out the door.

:

When I got in the classroom, some of our classmates were giving me weird looks, I glare at them and they looked away quick-- Nobody will dare question what The Queen was doing or how long she's been gone.

That's right fucking losers, look away and mind your business.

5 minutes later, Tangelo came in wearing a scarf, wherever she got it from, I don't know but I almost burst out laughing

Lisa got some weird looks as well but since we're in the middle of the class and Miss C. Is demonstrating new steps, they turned their attention back to the Teacher.

My Love is blushing like crazy, I couldn't help but let out a smile. I'm probably looking stupid right now but Oh well, I'm in love. Sue me.

:

:

I went straight to my locker after fifth period class, I didn't bother Lisa anymore since she's had enough drama from me today and I want to give her a little break.

As long as she knows that she's not allowed to go on dates then we wouldn't or shouldn't have a problem

She knows who she belongs to.

She's not replacing me.

I will do anything and everything in my power to make her love me.

Lisa is going to Focus on Me and Only Me.

I know that I'm being unfair to her, I just don't know how to handle these feelings of mine.

Normally, I really do not care if people around me doesn't stay, I actually prefer that, at least I do not have to worry about attachments---and because that's how I am too, I dispose people like

they're nothing.

But Lisa..she's so different from everyone else.

I don't want to let go of her.

The love that I have for her is driving me to Insanity..Even I'm Scaring Myself..

I'm aware that I'm doing the most and I'm being overbearing. I'm also aware that If I keep acting like this...Obsessed Psycho Lover (like what Jisoo said) that I'm eventually going to scare her away and I don't want that to happen.

I actually admire Lisa for Standing her ground in her own way even though it's obvious that she only sticks around because she's scared of what I might do to her

****Sigh****

So maybe, I can try to change gradually.

I Really Love Lisa, but it's impossible to change overnight even though it's for her sake.

I should at least apologize for my crazy behavior.

Little steps, Jen..

:

:

I was taking out some books for my Public Speaking class when Mino came up from behind me and kissed my cheek

"Hey Babe" he said smiling

I mentally rolled my eyes

"Hey" was all I said not even bothering to look at him

"So Uh, I was thinking since you cancelled our dinner date last time, maybe we could re-schedule it tonight?"

"Sorry. Can't go"

"Oh.. Why not?"

"I don't feel well"

"You look fine to me Babe" Mino said not buying my excuse.

"If you don't believe me then it's fine but I already made up my mind, I don't want to go, period. Why don't you ask another girl to go with you?" I told him with an irritated tone

"Alright alright Babe.. I'm sorry" Mino said feeling defeated
I exhaled sharply and looked at him

"Mino, we need to talk About us, It's not really--"

"Oh! my friend is calling me! I gotta go baby! See you later!" He said then he gave me a quick peck on the lips

He successfully avoided another break-up. I'm really determined this time to end things with him.

I've had many attempts from the past, I even told him that I cheated on him multiple times but he just said that he doesn't care as long as people know that he's my man.

He loves me, I know that, but deep down I also know that he doesn't want to lose his reputation.

I'm his trophy girlfriend, but I'm done doing favors for the fool, Now that I finally accepted my feelings for Tangelo, I only want to focus on her and nobody else.

LISA'S POV

Damn it! Jennie got me again.

Just when I thought she's leaving me alone and things could

finally go back to normal for me, she comes back and she's more possessive and jealous than ever.

She's not even trying to hide or deny it anymore, she's really upfront now.

She gave me lots of hickeys on my neck, good thing I was able to borrow a scarf from the lost and found items or else I would be walking around with the obvious marks.

God I'm so embarrassed!

Thank Goodness it's already Friday too so at least it would give it some time to lighten up and I can cover these marks with a concealer.

Jennie kept calling me Nae Sarang too.. what's up with her?

Is it just another term of endearment or is she actually already feeling something for me?

I'm trying not to dig deeper into it because honestly, I'm still upset with her but the things that she said and what happened in the restroom just keeps coming back to me and I---

Is she maybe starting to 'like me like me'?

Seriously, I'm in way over my head.

Although, She has confessed to me that she gets jealous and She claims me over and over like I'm her property but that's just probably Jennie being.. Jennie.

I'm sorry to say this but, she's spoiled rotten, if she wants something, she makes sure she gets them and apparently, that also includes me.

I did tell her that I like her, although I didn't directly say that I do have real feelings for her but even then she never said that she likes me back even as a friend.

Yes, I do like Jennie.

Romantically.

God knows if she confessed and it turns out that her and I have mutual feelings for each other, I would make her mine in a heart beat but she's still in a relationship, she's also a very stubborn woman..

and I'm like her little puppy that follows everything she tells me to do

I'm Pathetic I know but I really really like her.

To be honest, I might actually be in love with her already

Our relationship is really push and pull but that doesn't change the fact that I'm drawn to her.

She makes me crazy with her mood swings but I still want to be around her all the time.

Honestly Lisa, Do You actually love being tortured emotionally?

I shook my head, I'm so disappointed with myself, I was raised better than this...

I've always imagined that I would fall in love with a sweet, caring individual but instead, I fell for a person that switches personalities every 2 seconds, And I fell Hard.

I Must Be Insane.

I'm aware that she's not the nicest person around.

She does things that are very questionable but deep down, I also know that Jennie has a good heart.

She can be kind if she really wants to be and when she's sweet, she's really sweet-- like a cuddly little kitten.

She loves a lot of kisses, hugs and cuddles..

I don't know what it is but.. Jennie..she's..different.

She has this reputation of being The Tough, Independent Queen Bee of Pioneer High but in reality, she's a real softy.

It's an unspoken rule between the two of us that I should keep that a secret and I'm not really sure if she shows that side of her to Mino or any of her past boyfriends.

"Lisa-chan, what is up with the random scarf?" Sana asked as she clings on to me going to our lockers

"I uh-I was feeling a bit chilly so.."

Sana looked at me raising an eyebrow "But It's like a hundred degrees right now?"

I pretended that I didn't hear her and just continued walking until we reached the lockers

"Did Kim beat you up?" Sana continued

"What? No of course not, she has nothing to do with me wearing a scarf.. I'm alright Sana-chan, I promise"

Sana laughed softly

"Lisa-chan relax, You and Kim are so obvious that it's actually cracking me up, anyways, whenever you're ready to talk to me about ANYTHING.. please don't hesitate okay? I'm your sister and I'm here for you, It may not look like it but I'm actually an open minded person"

"No, I know that Sana-chan, it's just that..things are a bit complicated between Jennie and I" I said feeling bad

I know I can trust Sana but..

"***grin***Oooh, didn't know you guys are in first name basis now, is that why you're covering all those hickeys?"

"What??!"

"Your scarf sis, it's slipping" Sana said laughing while she fixes my scarf for me

I feel myself blushing profusely

"Oh My Goodness! I'm so embarrassed" I said while I cover my face with my hands

"No wonder you guys took so long"

"Sana-chan stop it.."

"Alright, Alright..Sorry, anyways I gotta go to my 6th period now so I'll see you later tonight okay?"

I nodded and smiled at my friend "Alright, See You Sana-chan"

We hugged each other good bye and I went on my way to my own class

Good thing Sana is sensitive enough not to push any more questions about how I got my hickies.

It's clear to see that she has an idea or that she already knows the deal between Jennie and I but she chose not to be too invasive.

I'll tell her when the right time comes.. when things aren't too..

Chaotic.

:

:

After School

04:15 PM

I was about to start cleaning my first classroom when my phone started ringing,

Jennie's name is flashing on my screen

I was contemplating on whether or not I should answer or not but It might start another drama for me so...

LS: Yeoboseyo..

JN: Where are you sweetie?

Jennie said in a really sweet tone, I'm not really sure if I should be alarmed or excited about it

LS: I'm in 303 right now Jen, about to start cleaning

JN: okay, well, is it okay if I come see you for a bit before I go to practice? Please? I miss you

I smiled automatically against my will

I hate myself for being such a sucker for her.

LS: Yes, of course!

I said sounding very excited while Jennie giggled on the other line

Geez Lisa make it more obvious will you?!

JN: Alright Honey, See you.

LS: See You, Jen.

She hung up the phone. I closed the blinds and then I started wiping the white board and the teacher's chair and table while I wait for her, after about 5 minutes, she finally came

"Hey" She said smiling warmly

"Hi" I responded back with the same vibe

She closed the door and locked it, she then approached me and handed me huge brown paper bag

"What's this?" I asked confused

"Hmm..Jokbal, Dumplings and some Korean Barbecue buns and Chocolate Uyu for my sweetheart" she said looking cute

"Aww thank you so much, but you didn't have to Jennie-ya"

"I know but.. it's kind of a peace offering.. for being the biggest bitch this week.." Jennie said a bit teary eyed

I put down the paper bag on one of the table chairs then I pulled her gently towards me giving her a tight hug

Jennie buried her face on my chest and I heard her crying, her body is shaking as she whimpers

"Sssshhh...it's alright Jen.." I said while rubbing her back to comfort her

"I'm sor-sorry Tangelo for being such a crazy b-bitch.."

Hearing her cry is making me emotional and let out tears but I decided to hold it in because we don't need two crying girls right now, so I just continued to comfort her until she calms down.

Jennie, what did you do to me?

A normal person would've ran away from you by the way you're

acting..

You're hot then you're cold..

But I can't seem to stay away from you.

Well, I guess the answer is obvious, I'm not normal.

I am in love though---that's my excuse.

When I felt that she finally stopped sobbing, I decided to lighten up the mood.

"Jen, The First step is acceptance " I whispered

She pulled away from our hug and looked at me confused

"Huh? What do you mean?" She said kinking her eyebrows

"You finally accepted that you're crazy, that's progress Honey" I said giggling but she didn't appreciate it so she pinched my side hard

"Owwwieeee!!!" I whined

"Yah!" She yelled crossing her arms like a little child throwing tantrums

"I'm kidding Jagi..come here.. I miss you too by the way.." I said wiping her tears while giving her a loving and understanding smile

We looked at each other's eyes with a yearning gaze like we haven't seen each other in so long.

"But I really am sorry Tangerine for being cold to you, for being a bitch..and for leaving those marks on your neck.. I mean No, I'm not sorry about the hickeys but I'm sorry for everything else.I know I'm being unfair and confusing but please bare with me.." She said then she wrapped her arms around my waist hugging me again

"Hmmm..it's alright.. but next time if something is bothering you or if I did something wrong.. anything at all Jennie.. let's talk about it first before you walk out on me okay? it hurts me when we fight.. I hate it" I said hugging her tighter

She took a deep breath and said "Okay.. I'll do my best..It's just

that.. this is all so new to me Tangelo.."

"What is?" I asked kinking my eyebrow

"I'll tell you when you're ready.. it's too soon right now" She said breaking away from our hug caressing my cheek

****smile*** Alright Jen.."

"So.. you forgive me right?" She asked hesitantly

"With all the food that you just gave me? Why even ask that? Of course I forgive you"

She shook her head in amusement "I knew food would do the trick and not me saying sorry"

"No but seriously Jagi, whatever it is that I did that made you upset, I want to apologize for it, I can really be insensitive and clueless.. but I'll do my best to watch what I say first to avoid misunderstandings between us "

"Ok Lisa-ya...we'll work things out, we're still getting to know each other, we have a long way to go but we'll be ok.."

I then leaned in, kissing her lips deeply.

I miss her lips..

I miss Jennie so much.

I love her, even if she gets crazy.

We kissed each other for a while, No lust, no burning desire.. just a kiss full of longing

"I gotta go, baby. My Team is waiting for me" Jennie said

"Ok Jagi..Oh! before I forget, Sana asked me to hangout with her tonight, her cousin Mina is leaving tomorrow so.."

I felt Jennie's hold tighten on my arm

"Just a normal, friendly Hangout, I promise" I re-assured her

"This Mina girl.. is she pretty?" Jennie asked coldly

I shrugged "She's alright, I guess, I don't really pay much attention to other girls' looks other than you"

She scoffed "That's something a playgirl would say you know that?" she said then she sighed and nodded.. "Fine, but don't go home too late arraseo? and please don't forget to text me."

"I won't forget this time, I promise baby"

"Ok Sweetheart, I'll take your word for it..if I'm still awake is there any chance that I can come over to your house?" Jennie asked

"Sure Jen! It's going to be cold tonight and I need my Jagi to cuddle"

***giggle** Alright, I'll see you tonight then. have fun with Sana and her cousins, behave yourself ok? This is a rare moment for me to be saying yes to you so don't do anything stupid, Tangelo"

"Yes Ma'am, Thank You" I said grabbing her face gently then kissed her again and again on her cheeks causing her to giggle and then She gave me one last hug and kiss on the lips before leaving the room

I let out a deep sigh, feeling relieved and happy.

After almost a week of being upset with each other, I'm glad that all is well between her and I..

:

:

SANA'S POV

I'm walking down the hallway towards the exit of the school to go to my car when I saw Jennie's cousin Jisoo with Tzuyu, They both saw me but greeted me in different manner

"Hey Minatozaki! What's up?" Jisoo asked smiling widely

Tzuyu didn't say anything, she's just giving me a very dirty look crossing her arms, I mentally smirked at how cute she is, she's trying so hard to look tough and intimidating but all I see is a cute baby Yoda, she reminds me of the green creature for some reason.

"Hello Jisoo-ssi, nothing much, just going to my car, about to go home" I said smiling back at her

"I see, well, I'm having a yacht party tomorrow, it's Jennie and I's birthday and I'm inviting you" Jisoo said

I saw Tzuyu's eyes literally widen like saucers as she held on to Jisoo, tugging her sleeve

"What's wrong Chewy?" Jisoo asked giving attention to her

"I thought we agreed we're not inviting her?" Tzuyu said whispering but I still heard her

"Huh? What was that? Didn't hear you Chewy" Jisoo said then she turned her attention back to me

"What do you say Minatozaki?" Jisoo asked

"I mean, is Lisa coming?" I asked her.

I don't really feel comfortable if I'm attending a party and my friend isn't invited

"Honestly, I wanted to invite her but my cousin said not to because she's being territorial, and that's putting it lightly, you know what I mean, right Minatozaki?" She said grinning.

I nodded in agreement and I couldn't help but laugh and give her a high five

Ah, so she knows about Jennie and Lisa too huh? I'm not surprised though.

Jennie and Lisa-- I see those two eye-fuck each other everyday and I wouldn't be surprised if they're secretly having sex already.

But as much as possible, I try not to Pry on my friend's Private life, She'll tell me when she's ready, I'm not here to judge anyone.

Lisa's a good person and if Jennie's her type then I'll support her.

"True, anyways I'll try Jisoo-ssi, I don't want to make any promises"

"I understand, well, if anything let me give you my number just in case you change your mind" She offered

"Sure, here's my phone, just type it in and save it" I said then I handed her my cellphone, after a few seconds she gave it back to me

"There. Hope to see you tomorrow! Bye! Let's go Chewy" Jisoo said but Tzuyu was hesitant

"You go ahead Jisoo, I want to have a word with Minatozaki here" She said glaring at me

Jisoo just smirked at her direction then she winked at me whispering "Good Luck" before walking away.

I looked at Tzuyu raising an eyebrow while giving her a flirty smirk

"Hey.. Koibito, want some alone time with moi? You wanna go somewhere private?" I teased her which got her flustered but she recovered quick by clearing her throat

"Don't go to their party, I don't want you there" She said in a very bossy tone

I put a hand on my chest and then pretended to be shocked and offended

"Ouch, I'm hurt. Why don't you want me there anyway..Koibito?" I said grinning at her

"Are you cursing me out? Stop calling me that!" She said raising her voice a little

"Stop calling you what? Koibito.." I continued

"That! Koibito! What does that even mean?? Why are you using a Japanese word on me? You don't see me walking around speaking in Mandarin!" Tzuyu said getting more annoyed by the minute

"Tzuyu-ssi..Koibito means.. Lover or Sweet Heart in Japanese.. isn't it cute?" I said matter of factly

"N-No! Don't call me that! I don't even like you!" She said blushing uncontrollably

How Adorable..

"But I happen to like you, a lot. And I know you're crushing on me Tzuyu, just admit it so we can date already" I said pretending to be impatient while grinning at her

"Shut up! I don't like girls like that and I especially do not like you in general! Don't go to that party or you're dead! You hear me?!" She threatened

I chuckled and said "You sound exactly like Jennie Kim right now."

Then I walked towards her crossing my arms

"You, telling me to not go makes me want to attend the party, I wasn't even planning on going to be honest but it seems like you're insisting for my presence there.." I said with a mocking tone

"What? How am I insisting? Are you deaf or you're just straight up stupid or you're not understanding Korean at all? which one is it Minatozaki?!"

Pffft!

She's so easy to annoy I swear.

"Ever heard of reverse psychology? it worked darling, So that means..I'm going Tzuyu-ssi, I don't want you to feel lonely without me there" I said moving closer to her then I whispered in her ear

"And by the way, Just an F.Y.I., I'm a very Jealous and Territorial Person Tzuyu, I don't want you hooking up with other people, I hate sharing what's mine, so I expect you to be on your best

behavior.. I'll see you tomorrow, Lover" I continued then I gave her a light, lingering kiss on her ear before walking away flipping my hair

I smirked to myself

I gotta remember to thank Jisoo for inviting me.

Tzuyu...

She already got my interest from the first time I ever laid my eyes on her

I finally found someone who I really really like

I might even love her already

I was never attracted to girls the way I am with Tzuyu now.. and I never believed in love at first sight, I found the idea very ridiculous and pathetic.

But I ate my own words.

She made me see things differently and she doesn't even realize it

And for that reason, I'm not gonna let her get away from me..

I'll do anything to make her mine, by hook or by crook.

Poor Poor Tzuyu..

She's not even aware that she's already taken.

A/N: Capricorns are winning with their lovers lol

24.) Seumulnet

Title: I Wanna Know You Like That

Artist: Nikki Flores

<https://youtu.be/CPMVEfDy-f0>

JENNIE'S POV

January 15

8:00 PM

Pioneer High Gymnasium

"Alright team! great job! we're almost there, we just need a little more work but we can pull through and win the championships!" I said giving my team the credit they deserve

"Thank You Captain!" they all responded in unison

We've been practicing everyday because in less than a month, it's going to be the Semi-Finals for the cheer competition and we need to polish our routine in order for us to go through the finals.

Not to brag but we pretty much got this in the bag but I just don't want to take any chances and slack off so I make sure that my team is in perfect shape and battle ready.

"See you guys tomorrow at the Party! Let's all have fun tomorrow and please do not get hurt, we don't want any injury arraseo?"

They all cheered and clapped, they're all excited for the party.

I laughed softly at their reaction, My Team has been working hard so they deserve to let loose once in a while.

They then said their goodbyes to me and then they went straight to the locker room to shower and change

I was stretching a little bit when Nayeon, Dahyun and Seulgi approached me

"Jennie, our team is in tip top shape, I'm excited for the Semis and kick some ass" My co-captain Seulgi said

"Me too Cap! I still feel a bit nervous about it though but with all the routines and the energy we're giving off, we're gonna get that trophy" Dahyun added

"I know, you guys are the best, with a team like ours, there's no way we're losing, thank you all for working hard"

"No problem Jen, anyways we're excited for the party, I still didn't get you anything though"

"You don't need to get me anything, Nayeon. I promise it's O---"

"Yeah seriously how do you get a gift for someone who has everything?" Dahyun interrupted

I shook my head in amusement "Ladies I swear, I don't want anything, I just need you guys to be at my party to celebrate and have fun with me, now come on let's hit the showers so we can go home"

The four of us walked together and continued to talk about random stuff

"But Jen really, you're in a good mood today, this past few days you've been a bit of a--" Nayeon said but she was cut off

"--Bitch. What's up with that?" Seulgi said continuing for Nayeon

"Ahem...I was gonna say '*Meany*' but whatever works"

Seulgi nudged on my left shoulder "No need to sugarcoat Nayeon, she knows it"

"Sorry ladies, I was just going through some personal stuff, I really

do not mean to take it out on you.. thank you for being patient with me"

"Hmmm.. is everything alright Jennie? you can tell us anything, you trust us right?"

"I do trust you ladies, thank you for being great friends, but everything is fine now, more than fine actually, but I really am sorry though"

"That's quite alright Jen, my arms are actually really toned now thanks to those push-ups" Dahyun said proudly

We all laughed at what she said while Nayeon and Seulgi agreed

Lately I have been really 100% on their asses, I wanted everything to be perfect (which is impossible) and mistakes weren't allowed, when someone makes a mistakes, all of them pays for it with 10 pushups.

I admit that I was taking out my frustrations on my team--It was all because Tangelo and I weren't doing ok and it really affected my mood.

When we're okay, Everything are rainbows and unicorns but when we're not, everything is just pure hell for me and the people around me are my outlet for my rage--which isn't fair I know.

I'm not blaming Tangelo though, it was all me.'

I get 10 times more evil when her and I aren't in good terms

When I have fights with my old boyfriends or Mino, I never let it get to me, I really don't care if we fix things or not, but with her, I feel like everything is falling apart.

It doesn't matter how big or small our fights get, I get really devastated about it either way.

I know most of the time it's my fault, I can't really blame Tangelo for being too innocent.

:

After taking a shower, we changed into our normal clothes and then we all said bye to each other.

I've been getting updates from Lisa and her night out with Sana and her cousins, so far, she's not giving me any reason to be jealous.

To be honest, I surprised myself when I said yes to her hanging out with other girls, but I figured if I'm gonna get her to love me then I should probably be a bit more lenient and let her do fun things on her own or with other people once in a while.

I went inside my car and called her

LS: Yeoboseyo?

JN: Hey Baby, I just got done with practice, how is it going?

LS: Ok Jagi, we're still here in the bowling alley but we're about to go home too, just a few more rounds

JN: I see, are you having fun?

LS: Yes I am, but it'll be more fun if we're doing this together

I smiled like an idiot and my little heart fluttered when Lisa said that, she knows how to make me feel nervous and happy at the same time

JN: Awww.. you're making me blush.. you think about me even when you're already with other pretty girls

I said to her, I want to hear how she'll respond on that one, it's kind of like a little test

LS: The only pretty girl I know is the one I'm talking on the phone with right now

Lisa said which made me giggle, I'm feeling the butterflies in my stomach about to come out of me

JN: Ok Manoban, you passed the test. you want me to pick you up?

LS: Yeah sure, do you mind hanging out with us for a bit? I kind of want you to meet my other friends too..

If I want her to love me, I should be friends with her friends too.

JN: Sure, send me the address Jagi

LS: Really? Yay! Ok Jagi, will do, see you in a bit

JN: Are you excited to see me?

LS: Yes! I miss you

JN: D'awww.. I miss you more, see you soon

LS: Ok Jagi, drive safe

JN: I will, bye I lo-

****Beep****

I love you

I wanted to say the last three words to her but I stopped myself so I just hung up the phone as fast as I could.

Whew! That was a close one.

I need to get a hold of myself or she'll freak out

Few seconds later, I received the address for the bowling alley, I typed in the place on google maps, it's only 20 minutes away from school.

I then started my car and drove off

20 Minutes Later, I arrived at the bowling alley, I called Lisa to come see me outside

LS: Hey Jagi, are you here?

JN: Yes Jagi, can you come outside please? I'm parked in the front, you can't miss me

LS: Sure Jagi, hold on, be there in a sec

JN: Alright, bye

I hung up and not even a minute later I saw My Baby running towards me, she went by the driver's side and opened the car door for me then she held out her hand for me to hold.

"***smile*** Hi Baby"

"..Hey.." I said with heart eyes.

I then gave her a tight hug and kissed her on the cheek

"Sana and her cousins wouldn't mind me hanging out with you?"

She shook her head smiling "Not at all, they're actually excited, let's go inside?"

"***smile*** Ok"

I'm a bit nervous for some reason, not because I'm meeting new people but because of Sana.

I know it's only Minatozaki, I see her annoying ass everyday, but I guess seeing her in a different environment kind of intimidate me

Why you ask? Because I know she knows something is going on between Tangelo and I.

Truthfully speaking, I don't care if she does know about Lisa and I, that's good actually, at least when the time comes when Tangelo and I get together, she'll back off and not be all touchy with my woman.

I just don't like being teased about my feelings for Tangelo, especially when Lisa is still clueless about it.

I want to personally tell Tangelo how I feel about her and not from

other people through their teasing, and Sana is like my cousin Jisoo, they know how to push my buttons on a different level.

The bowling alley plays loud music and has laser lights, it's like a wanna be club.

Sana saw us right away when we got inside, she waved her hand at me----smirking while she giving me a meaningful wink

Goodness.

Here we go...

We approached them, Lisa pulled up a chair for me and motioned me to sit down then she introduced me to Sana's cousin

"Hey ladies, I'm back and I brought someone with me---Jennie this is Mina and that's Miss Momo, she's my boss and you know Sana"

Her boss huh? she didn't tell me Sana's cousin is her boss

"Hello, Pleased to meet you" I said extending my hand to them, they both shook my hand while giving me a warm smile, they seem really nice and friendly

"Hey. Minatozaki"

"Hi Kim, Nice to see you outside school, glad you could join us"

I'm looking at Lisa while she interacts with the other two girls and said "Well, You know..I'm just here to---"

"Observe and be on guard duty? I know Kim, but don't worry, we're all just friends here, *Orenji* is safe with us" Sana whispered

"Shut it Minatozaki, I know you know something but be subtle about It. I don't tease you about Tzuyu when she's present now do I?" I whispered back

"Oooh..Touchè Kim, as expected, I figured you would know about

who I'm interested in, so let's have a peaceful, fun night okay? let's be friends" She offered then handed me a drink

I gave her a skeptical look but then again, I wanted Lisa to see that I can get along with her crowd so I took the glass from her

"Fine, Truce?"

"Truce" She said smiling then we clinked our glasses

"Minatozaki, is there any alcohol in this? I can't drink anything with alcohol, I promised Tangelo that I won't drink and drive anymore, and I'm driving her home"

"Awww.. look at you being all sweet and caring.. anyways, No, it's just cranberry juice Jennie-chan, don't worry" She said then she took a sip of her own drink

I raised an eyebrow when I heard her say my first name casually

"Jennie-chan?"

"Yeah, why? truce right? and we agreed to be friends already, so stop calling me by my last name arraseo? and besides girl, we're God-sisters, so let's do your Father a favor and get along"

I playfully rolled my eyes at her but then gave her a sincere smile "Fine, Sana."

"**giggle** Finally! you're starting to warm up to me, it's so exhausting whenever you try to pick a fight with me because of *Orenji*"

"**sigh**My bad, I just get a little---"

"Jealous? Territorial? Yeah I know. Believe it or not, I'm the same as you Kim. I might even be worse actually.." Sana said with a serious look on her face

"What do you mean? you're not planning on Kidnapping Tzuyu and take her to Japan to make her live with you by force Yeah?" I jokingly asked

"**shrug** Maybe, or take her to one of my Father's private island(s) so she can't escape anymore and I can have her all to myself"

What she said caught me off guard

She's like a completely different person right now

"Sana.. you're giving me goosebumps and not the good kind either"

"**grin** Pfft, Please Jennie, don't act so surprised now, If I didn't know any better, You've probably thought about the idea already, that's why you brought it up, am I right?"

"Shut up Sana, you talk too much" I told her a bit annoyed and guilty of what she just said because she's right, I have thought about it, it's one of my darkest thoughts when I think about Tangelo

"Awwww.. look at you two getting along" Lisa said smiling at the both of us.

I didn't even realize she's already near because I was so caught up on how similar Sana and I are when it comes to being possessive.

"I know right? Jennie finally agreed to be friends, she's so difficult, good luck Lisa-chan"

She's back to her normal self, or at least, the side of her that she wants Lisa to see, but she can't fool me.

Looks like her and I aren't so different after all

"Huh? Good luck with what?"

I elbowed Sana hard on her side making sure I inflict pain while I smiled at My Clueless Lover

"Owww.. Jennie-chan what the hell?! you sadistic bit--
ooommppp!!"

I covered Sana's mouth with my hand

"Sssshh.. Sana, don't say bad words" I said giggling then turned my attention back to Lisa

"Ignore Her Tangelo, anyways, ladies? can we play one more round? let's do it in teams"

"Yeah let's!" Sana's cousin Mina said out of nowhere

I ended up giggling at her sudden response

"I like you, will you be on my team?" I asked her

"Sure Miss Kim" Mina said.

She's so polite and reserved, She's definitely the complete opposite of Sana

"***smile*** You can just call me Jennie, no need for formalities"

"Wow.. Jennie-chan, first name basis already? She's not even your God-sister, I had to earn that from you and Minari didn't even need to do anything"

"Whatever Sana, just pick a team mate" I said brushing her off while giggling

"Fine, Momo-chan, be on my team will you?" Sana asked her other cousin

"Sorry, I'm tired from all the winning, but you girls can play, I'll watch and get us more food and drinks"

"Awwww....Nooo!! so that leaves me with...uugghhh!! Zeus! if you really exist, please strike me with your thunderbolt now!"

"You're so dramatic Sana-chan, I'm not all that bad" Lisa said sounding a bit offended which made me feel bad

"Yeah, You're like---*THE WORST*"

"Come on get up, we're gonna win this, who knows, Jennie might be bad at bowling, she's so tiny she might not even be able to carry the bowling ball let alone throw it" Lisa said confidently

Why this little cocky Orange-Looking Dweeb..

Okay then, It's On.

"Uh? I know you didn't just say that about me Tangelo, I was gonna go easy on you because I feel sorry for You and Sana but I changed my mind---- Come on Mina, let's kick some weirdo ass" I said grabbing Mina's hand

3 rounds later, Mina and I are winning.

No Surprise There.

Mina is really good at bowling, I'm glad I picked her

"Good Job Mina, you can beat the both of them by yourself, you didn't even need me" I said giving her a high five

"No, you're great at this, you carried the team Jennie"

Meanwhile, Sana and Lisa are playing the blaming game

"Lisa-chan you suck! Why do you suck at everything?!"

"Me?! You're the one who couldn't even get a spare, If it wasn't for me, we wouldn't even score at all! "

"One more round!" Sana said changing the subject

"Uh-uh! Nope, that's enough, I'm tired of Lisa and You being sore losers, come here and eat the food then we'll go home, Minari has early flight tomorrow" Miss Momo said

"Oh, I forgot you're leaving.. that's too bad, I'm having a party tomorrow too, I was gonna invite you.." I said to Mina

"Yes, I'm only here for a bit to check out some Uni, but let's keep in touch? I can give you my number" Mina offered

"Sure! I would love that!" I said excitedly.

I then gave her my phone so she can save it then she handed it back to me, we hugged each other then we went back to our table.

We stayed for about an hour more just talking and getting to know each other and then we called it a night, I gotta admit, they're really fun to be with.

Sana is still annoying as hell but she's funny and has a lot of things to say, it's amazing how Tangelo's ears doesn't bleed from listening to her.

:
:

"Bye Ladies" I said waving goodbye at the three cousins

"It's really nice meeting you Miss Momo and Mina" I said to them then I gave them both a hug

"It's really nice meeting you too Jennie, visit us at the Dance Studio when you get a chance"

"Wow, Really? alright I'll do that Miss Momo, thank you---Mina, have a safe flight okay? hopefully we'll get to see each other before I leave for New York"

"Jennie, Thank You, Yes hopefully, I would love to hangout with you again, take care driving home" Mina said then she gave me another quick hug

I then turned to Sana and she gave me a smirk

"Kim, it's nice hanging out with you tonight and it's good to see a different side of you"

"You too Sana, I genuinely enjoyed your company tonight, but

next time, don't talk too much, Chewy doesn't appreciate talkers" I joked making her laugh

"Ok, I'll keep that in mind, thank you" She said then she hugged me and I hugged her back which didn't feel awkward or weird for some reason.

"Jennie-ya, You ready to go?" Lisa said appearing out of nowhere

I smiled at her and nodded "Yeah, let's go"

We said our final goodbyes to each other and then I grabbed Lisa's hand and we walked towards my car.

When we reached my vehicle, Lisa opened the door for me and then she went to the passenger's side getting in the car then I started the engine and went on our way to her apartment.

While driving, Lisa took my hand and laced it with hers then she brought it up to her lips to give it a small kiss.

I was a bit surprised by her actions--- It sent tingles to my stomach and I couldn't help but smile

"That's sweet Jagi" I said giving her a quick wink then I focused back on driving

"Thank You for coming tonight, did you have fun?"

"Of course, I haven't played bowling in a while and I really liked Sana and her cousins, they're all really nice"

"I'm glad you're okay with Sana now Jagi, she's really cool"

"*****giggle*****Yeah, she talks a lot though and laughs at the most random things"

"She does but once you get pass that, you'll see she has a good heart"

"I know Jagi. I'm probably going to regret saying this but I'm glad you have her as a friend"

"Me too. Anyways, you're sleeping over right?"

"Uh-huh, can I borrow clothes again though? I want to get out of this shirt, it stinks from all the winning"

She rolled her eyes at me but she smiled right after and nodded

How Cute..

:
:

LISA'S POV

January 15

11:55 PM

When we got to my apartment, Jennie took another quick shower and then I did the same right after.

I prepared a little something for her, she doesn't know that I actually got her a small cake and a small gift.

It's going to be her birthday in a few minutes and I wanted to surprise her.

We're lying in bed right now all settled---just cuddling and kissing when I excused myself

"Jagi, hold on" I said getting up

"Awww.. no.. where are you going?" She said whining then she pouts

"Sorry I really gotta go pee, I've been holding this for 20 minutes now and I'm about to burst" I said as an alibi, I needed to get the cake out before midnight

She sat up and then she crossed her arms like a little child who's

about to throw a tantrum

"Fine Lisa-ya, but hurry up please.." Jennie said with a puppy dog face

I gave her a smile and kissed her lips

"Yes Jagi, be right back"

I rushed out to the door to make it look convincing

I then went straight to the kitchen and took the cake out of the refrigerator, I got her cookies and cream cake from this little bakery I know, it's my favorite and I hope she likes it

I lit up the candle that came with the cake and then went back to my room

I opened the door slowly and saw Jennie checking her phone, it's kind of been blowing up non-stop, probably from all the birthday greetings she's getting

I smiled at the sight in front of me, she still hasn't realized that I'm already inside the room

I can't believe Jennie Kim is spending the first hours of her birthday with me

"Happy Birthday to you.." I sang softly to get her attention

"Happy Birthday to you.. Happy Birthday Dear Jennie, Happy Birthday to you.." I said sitting down on my bed next to her

"Li-Lisa-ya.."

"Happy 19th Birthday Mandu.. Make a wish" I said presenting the cake in front of her

Jennie is looking a little emotional, her eyes are glassy and I noticed a tear escaped from her right eye, she wiped it off quick before she closes them to make a wish then she blew the candle

"Thank You, Jagiya"

I put down the cake on the side table and then I sat back down on the bed

"You're welcome, Baby" I responded then she engulfed me in a big hug, I hugged her back tight and kissed her cheek

She pulled away from me and then she kissed me lovingly on my lips

"Hmm.. wait, Jagi, I got one more surprise for you" I said to her, she looked at me confused so I just pinched her cheek.

I stood up, went to my closet and took out a white gift bag then I handed it to her

"What's this baby?" She asked while opening it

"Oh My---What?! this is sooo cuteee! it even has our school's colors!!!" She said excitedly

"Do you like it Jennie-ya?"

"Are you kidding me?! this is like the best gift ever! Thank You Honey!" She said giving me quick kiss on the lips then she proceeded to hug the teddy bear

"Are you going to name it?"

"Duh? I already got one for it"

"Oh? May I know the name then?"

She nodded smiling at me then she looked at the teddy bear
"From now on, your name is Lili"

"**giggle** Lili?"

"Yes, Lisa-ya gave it to me so it only makes sense to name it after her" She said proudly giving the bear another hug

"**chuckle** Why are you talking in third Person Jagi?"

"**shrug** Meh. I don't know, just wanted to look extra cute"

I cupped her cheek and looked into her eyes

"You don't need to do anything to look cute, you already are without even trying" I said admiring her face "You look so beautiful Jennie"

"Am I?" She asked like she's not used to hearing those words, but I can tell that she's not fishing for any compliments, she's just genuinely confirming

"You are.."

I leaned forward and kiss her lips deeply

I Love You, Jennie..

I Love You A Lot.

I wanted to say those words to her but I figured that it's too soon, I don't want to spoil her birthday by confessing my feelings, I might scare her away and that's the last thing I want to do.

We just made up and I don't want her getting upset with me again because I caught feelings for her and besides, she's still in a relationship with Mino

"Hmm.. You give me the best kisses Lalisa.." She said in a daze

"That's because you have the best lips and you're a great kisser"

Jennie bit her lower lip and then she looked at 'Lili'

"Uh-oh.. Lili, I better put you back inside your bag for now, Your Parents are about to do something a kid shouldn't see for 25 more years" Jennie said winking my way which caused me to laugh

Parents Huh?

"You want to try the cake first honey? it's really good, it's my favorite"

"Sure Honey, then afterwards you eat *MY Cakes* arraseo?" She said with a flirty tone

I nodded and leaned forward once again to give her neck kisses

I'll eat you out all night

"Happy Birthday, Jagiya."

**A/N: And You Guys Thought Mina Will Ruin Them Hahahaha...
NO.**

Mina is the Yakuza, nobody messes with her 🐱👑

Anyways..

**Hello Beautiful People, just want to clear things out since
"Daddy Jennie" seemed a bit off to some of y'all 🐱**

When it comes to Jennie and Lisa being intimate, Lisa is definitely the more dominant one BUT with everything else, Jennie dominates which makes her THE DADDY, and in My Stories, Jennie will ALWAYS Win no matter how Evil she is.

***Meow* 🐱👑♥️👄🐱**

Love and Peace ♥️👑

Thank You Guys for Reading, Voting and Commenting, I

Appreciate it 🙏

25.) Seumuldaseot

Title: Toothbrush

Artist: DNCE

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Trigger Warning

JENNIE'S POV

January 16

4 AM

"Aahhh...uunnngghhhh...Lalisa.." I moaned

Lisa and I are currently having a sex marathon. after we finished eating that one slice of cake, we started making love right away, Her and I haven't had sex for a week and we're seriously deprived and craving each other

"Fuck... Lisa.. you're so goood..uunnngghhhh..aaahhh..."

Lisa is in between my legs sucking and licking me when she suddenly stopped

"Wha-what happened Jagi?" I asked confused and a bit irritated by the sudden halt

She pulled me up gently and then she laid down on the bed

"Sit on my face Jen, I wanna eat your pussy on a different angle.."

Fuck that was so sexy

I couldn't help but bite my lower lip

I did what she asked me to do and started positioning myself.

I put my legs in between her head and then I started lowering my

pussy on her mouth slowly, I already started moaning when I felt her hot breath on my cunt and as soon as my lady part hit her lips completely, she started doing her business

"Ohh shiitt..ahhh..." my eyes rolled back in pleasure as Lisa licks me off.

I make sure to not put all my weight on her face and not crush her so I supported myself by holding on to her headboard

As I'm grinding my pussy on her face, I looked down at her briefly while she's eating me out.

We're both moaning in pleasure, her eyes are closed likes she's having the best dream and she's eating my pussy like it's made out of milk and honey which turned me on even more

Oh God..

Her facial expression is so sexy..

She can make me cum just by looking at her.

What a vixen.

"Baby, You're eating me so good.. keep fucking me with your tongue..aaaaaaahhh..."

She's lapping on my cunt like it's the best thing she's ever tasted, I grinded my pussy harder and faster.

This isn't the first time that I did this position, I actually like this because it gives me a sense of control, but it's a different experience with Tangelo.

Even if I'm the one who's on top, I feel like she's still the one who's in control of me--Not that I'm complaining.

I don't mind if she takes over.. it's Lisa after all.

I'll let her do whatever she wants to do with me

That's how much I Trust Her..

That's how much I Love Her.

"Ahhh.. Ahhh.. Lisa, Honey.. I'm about to cum.. ahh...fuccckk!!..."

I covered my mouth right away to prevent myself from screaming as I released my juices on her face and in her mouth.

I grinded myself slower this time as I come down from my high, Lisa is cleaning me up, sucking me dry as she's licking every single drop of my lady cum.

I got off of her beautiful face slowly and then I laid back down on the bed, Lisa automatically wrapped her self around me, hugging me protectively as she gives my forehead small butterfly kisses.

I love this feeling...

I didn't like cuddling after sex, in fact, I hated it, because I feel like they're expecting more from me and I can't deliver because in reality, I don't want to reach any of their expectations like start a relationship.

Why should I? I hate it when they assume that I want to them to be my boyfriend just because we had a one night stand.

It's called a '*One Night Stand*' for a reason.

I hate submitting myself to someone just to please and fulfill their emotional needs, we already had sex, they don't expect me to be in a committed relationship too right?

But alas, I was wrong. They would always try to tie me down so before that happens, I cut them off.

Mino is a special case, not in a good way either.

I'm gonna get rid of him as soon as possible.

With Lisa However, it's different. I don't mind the after sex cuddles, I don't mind the pillow talks, I don't mind spending long hours with her, I don't mind being in a committed relationship with her.

I Love being with her..

I Love Her.

She makes me so happy and carefree. I feel like I can be myself around her.

I never have to pretend that I'm this tough Queen Bee that needs to be pretty and perfect all the time.

With her, I can show my bare face confidently and not feel any insecurities, she makes me feel like I'm the most beautiful woman in the world..

With her, I can act like the brattiest, neediest, clingiest baby and she would still welcome me with open arms and give me all the attention and care that I need, no questions asked.

I'm so in love with her.

I want to be with her all the time..

"Jennie-ya.. that was really great.. I'm so tired but I want to do it again and again.. you taste so good Honey.. you got me addicted..." Lisa said with her eyes closed

I giggled at her honesty, I don't think she even realize what she just said.

"Maybe we should get some rest Jagi.. we've been doing it for hours and you still need to go to work at 9 am right?" I asked her but I'm not really sure if she's going to comprehend it since she's obviously exhausted from our '*workout*'

She didn't say anything, she just gave me a weak nod as a response and then she let out a light snore

I just stared at her sleeping form, caressing her cheek and smiled to myself

This is the best birthday ever..

I want to spend more birthdays with you, Love..

I love you..

I grabbed my phone and set my alarm to 7:30 AM then put it back down on the side table, I snuggled closer to Tangelo and drifted off to sleep.

Lisa,

Please..

Dream About Me..

:

:

3 Hours Later

****Beep! Beep! Beep!****

*****Yawn**** Alright alright.. shut up already.." I said sleepily grabbing my phone to shut off the alarm

Man, 3 hours went by really fast.

I looked to my side and saw Tangelo still sleeping, she didn't seem to hear the alarm even though it was already on full blast.

I let her sleep some more but I need to get ready and head out. I still need to do last minute checks before The Yacht Party, Everything needs to be perfect, no mistakes are allowed.

I spent a lot of time organizing it and I need to make sure everything goes smoothly.

I stretched a little bit then I got up and put on my clothes, I then fixed my side of the bed, it didn't take me long to do all that, then I gave Lisa butterfly kisses on her cheek and her lips to wake her up gently, I want to say bye to her before I leave.

She fluttered her eyes open, when she saw me, she smiled automatically

"Hey" I said greeting her, giving her a peck on the lips

"Hey yourself, Good Morning Jagiya..Happy Birthday"

"Good Morning and Thank You, Tangelo"

Lisa sat up and yawned then she gave me a bear hug kissing my cheek

"That was a great night Jen" She said breaking off the hug

I pinched her cheek lightly while smiling

"Well, you're really good at what you do Jagi, you're like a pro. I've been meaning to ask, you said that you're a virgin right? then how come you're so good at it? you act as though you're really experienced"

I really am curious about this one

"Well I..." She started but she stopped

I raised an eyebrow and asked her another question "Are You really a Virgin Tangelo?"

"Yes, I really am.. it's just that.. this is kind of embarrassing" She said scratching her nape while looking down

****smirk*** Hmmm? what's your dirty little secret?"

"Promise you won't tell anyone and you won't make fun of me?"

"I Promise Tangelo, now tell me what it is.. I want to know, please? it's my birthday today"

That's my ace card, I'm sure she'll give in.

"I uh.. I watched Yadong, maybe once or twice last year..." Lisa said then she covers her face with a pillow

I smiled.

She looks so cute..

It honestly doesn't bother me if she did watch porn, she's curious, so what? I'd rather have her watch porn than to have sex with another person.

I'm actually relieved.

At least I know I'm her first, and that's what really matters to me.

"Hey.. it's okay, it's really nothing to be embarrassed about, it's normal" I re-assured her while taking off the pillow covering her pretty face

"You're not turned off at all?"

I shook my head "No, not one bit Honey"

"Whew.. Okay, that's good to know" Lisa said smiling but I can still tell she's still a bit uncomfortable so I decided to tell her one secret that I swore on my life that I won't tell a single soul..

Lisa will be the only exception.

"Hey Tangelo? you want to know a secret of mine? I never told anybody this one"

"Yeah, Okay. I'm listening and I promise I won't tell" She said crossing her heart

"I know honey, I trust you. anyways, one time when I was 7 years old, My Parents took me to Florida to go to Disney World, it was lunch time and we were eating Tacos, it was my first time eating it and I really enjoyed it, I ate maybe 4 or 5 of it.. but nobody warned me about the beans.. so when I was on one of the kiddie rides, I felt a pain in my stomach all of a sudden.. the ride was just starting, I was gonna ask the ride operator to stop but it was too late.."

"What do you mean Jagi? you puked all over?" She asked

I chuckled "Nope.. the beans decided to take a trip down south..catch my drift?"

"Wait what?.. you don't mean that you---"

"Yep. I Shit My Pants" I said proudly, for what reason? I don't even know, I just want her to not be embarrassed anymore

Lisa started laughing and I just laughed along with her

She has the most beautiful laugh that I've ever seen and heard..
It's music to my ears

"Glad to know my misery makes you this happy" I said jokingly

"Hahaha I--oh--my stomach--make it stop Jagiya--hahaha"
Tangelo said holding on to her stomach

"Go on Tangelo, laugh it up, get it out of your system" I smiled while rubbing her back

A few minutes later, she finally stopped, kind of.

She's wiping the tears off her eyes trying her best to get it together

"You good there?"

"Ye-Yes.. poopie pants, I am, whew.. that was fun huh?" She said

I just giggled "Yes, I guess so. As long as it makes you happy,Tangelo"

"Thank You for sharing that, your secret is safe with me Jagi"

"No Problem, anyways I gotta go Baby. I gotta do some last minute checks with the Yacht Party, are you gonna be okay?"

"Mmm-hhmm! I'm working today and Miss Momo might ask me to work extra"

"What time do you think you're gonna be off at work?"

"Hmmm probably 5pm? That's full hours, if not the earliest would be 2pm"

"Alright.. You remember what you promised me yesterday right?"

"Huh? What is it?" Lisa said kinking her eyebrows

I exhaled sharply

"Your dinner date with that guy.. you promised me you're not gonna go..right?" I said with a firmer tone

"Oh..Ye-yeah, no, of course I remember Jagi..yeah..haha.."

Just then her phone dinged

"Who is texting you this early in the morning?" I asked feeling annoyed automatically

She shrugged and grabbed her phone to check and.
As she was reading the text message, she smiled

What the hell?!

"Who was it Tangelo?"

"Oh ahh..it-it's just Sana, she just sent me a funny Meme"

I looked at her suspiciously.

For some reason, my gut tells me that she's lying, so I snatched her phone as fast as I could, it really didn't take much effort.

I then looked through her messages and saw that it wasn't Sana who texted her

It was from a person named Jungkook

"Jennie! No!" She said but I stood up and stepped away from her to read the text

07:52 AM Jungkook 🤔

> Good Morning Cutie, Can't wait for our dinner date tonight, I hope you're ready for some fun, I scored tickets to go to Yu Ho-Jin magic show after we eat. Get excited 🤩

I scoffed at then I shot daggers at her direction

"Sana huh?!"

"Jen..let me explain.."

"Ok. Explain why you had to lie to me!"

"Be..cause I thought you'd be upset so I--"

"And you thought lying would make it better Tangelo?!"

"Honey come on.. I didn't even reply to him.."

"Oh but I want you to reply Tangelo! Tell him you're off limits and to fuck off!" I said almost shouting at her but had to control my voice because I might wake up her father but I really want to strangle her right now

"Jennie honey, that's a bit harsh isn't it?"

"I don't give a shit! Do it or I will! Here! Type it in and then give it back to me! I'll read it to make sure you actually did what I asked you!"

I gave Lisa her phone back and after a few seconds, she handed it back to me after typing in a message that says she's not really interested and she wants to focus with school

"Tangelo! I told you to tell him to fuck off didn't I?!"

"Honey please it's not believable if I tell him the things that you just said, that's fine okay? I'm sorry for lying."

"Block him!" I demanded

"Way ahead of you, I already did, You can check if you want" she offered while I gladly took her phone and this time, she's telling the truth.

"We're good...Right, Jennie-ya?"

If I'm gonna get her to love me then I should be more patient and understanding..

She did text him that she isn't interested and she already blocked him, so there's no reason for me to be upset anymore

"Fine. If we hadn't had great sex last night and earlier you wouldn't have gotten away with the bullshit you just did" I said to her and she let out a sigh of relief

"I'm going now Tangelo, behave yourself Arraseo? If I find out you're messing around behind my back there's going to be consequences!"

"Yes Honey.. I'll behave I promise, I'll go to work then head straight home"

"Good Girl, I'll see you tomorrow then" I said then I grabbed the little Teddy Bear that she gave me

I've decided that 'Lili' will permanently stay in my car so I won't feel alone driving when I'm not with Tangelo

"I'll walk you out Baby"

"Alright, Let's go"

She stood up and grabbed my hand, Her Father is still sleeping

I gotta remember to come over when he's awake.

I feel rude, I've been coming over here lately and he never sees me.

If I want Lisa to love me then I need to show her I can get along with her Father.

Lisa walked me all the way to my car and she opened the door for me

"Have fun later Jagi, Happy Birthday Again" Lisa said then she gave me a hug and a kiss on the cheek

To be honest, I kind of feel bad not inviting her to My Birthday Party but just thinking about the possibility of her being approached by men and women, somehow, I don't feel so bad anymore.

I'm too selfish and I hate sharing her.

I want her to myself so Yes, not inviting Lisa is definitely the better decision.

"Thanks Tangelo, I'll try to get out of the party as fast as I can"

"Huh? But Why? You just said you've planned this for a long time so why not enjoy it?"

Because I want to be with you instead!

I love you, you clueless dork!

"Ye-yeah.. I guess so..anyways, bye Tangelo" I said then I kissed her on the lips before getting into my car.

"Bye Baby." She said closing my door for me

I put Lili on the passenger side, I waved goodbye to Lisa then I drove off

:

:

10:30 PM

The Party is in Full Swing, everybody that's invited are already here.

They all seem to be having a good time, either their dancing, singing, drinking or just catching up in general

The Music is blasting I can barely hear my thoughts

"Great Party Jennie! As expected!" Irene said almost shouting in my ear

"Thanks Babe! You probably should slow down on the alcohol there, you don't want to get too wasted" I said to her but she didn't seem to hear me she just nodded and then walked away with her flavor of the week.

"Jennie! Here I got you a drink babe!" Mino said coming up from behind me handing me a Martini

"I'm good, I'm not drinking tonight

"Come on babe it's your birthday" He continued to insist

"No Mino. Now if you'll excuse me I need to go to the restroom" I said leaving him hanging

Before going to the restroom, I went in one of private rooms of Our Yacht to get a little space, I also wanted to do a video call with Lisa because I want to see her adorable face and hear her voice.

We've only been texting each other but that could not fill my longing for her so I decided to FaceTime her.

Thankfully, she answered right away

LS: Hii Birthday Girl! You look extra pretty

Lisa said as her opening greeting which made me smile

JN: ****giggle**** Hey Honey, Thank You but I've sent you tons of pictures earlier with the same look

LS: Yeah I know but it's a different vibe when it's video call you

know and besides, is it so wrong to tell you over and over how gorgeous you are?

JN: ****chuckle**** I guess not, being told that I'm pretty isn't really bad especially when it's coming from you. anyways what are you doing right now? How's work baby?

LS: I'm just watching some home improvement show, uhm, work is ok, a bit tired, how about you? are you enjoying the party?

JN: That's good to hear, Yeah I mean, Party is cool I guess.. Hey, what time are you sleeping? Can I sleepover? I really miss you, baby

LS: I miss you more, Jen. I'm not really sure what time Jagi.. but I can wait for you if you want, but you can't really leave your guests right away, can you?

JN: Correction, it's me and Jisoo's Party. I already took care of the organizing so she should take care of cleaning up the mess

LS: ****giggle**** Yeah, that makes sense. Let me know when you're coming over Baby, I'll wait for you. Wait, you didn't drink any alcohol right?

JN: Really?! Yay! Ok uhm, I'll leave in 20 minutes, and No, I didn't drink at all, I promised you no more driving under the influence didn't I? Let me just tell Jisoo then I'll go. See you later Jagi!

LS: Haha you're the cutest. alright Baby, I can't wait to see you Mwaaahhh!

JN: Bye Baby. See you in a bit.

I said puckering my lips then I hung up.

I hurriedly went out the room to find Jisoo when I suddenly have the urge to pee so I went to the nearest Ladies Room that's nearest to where I'm at

I opened the door but what's behind it..
Is something that I wish I could unsee

****Gasp!****

It's Tzuyu and Sana... Making Out!

Sana is seated on the sink while Tzuyu supports her

They broke off the kiss as soon as they heard me gasp loudly

"Jennie!" Sana exclaimed then Tzuyu pushed her away

"Owwww..Tzuyu! why did you push me?!"

"Shut it Sana!" Tzuyu yelled as she blushes profusely

"Oh My..God! I'm so sorry! I didn't see anything I swear! Sorry!
I'm leaving! Bye!" I said shutting the door but not before I heard
Tzuyu say *"Shit!"*

Shit!

Shit!

Shit!

Why did I have to see that?? My Little Sister and Sana!!

Oh My God Sana moves Fast!

*Just Yesterday she was just implying that she wants to kidnap Chewy
and now they..*

They..

My musings were cut short when someone suddenly grabbed me
by my arm and pinned me against the wall

"What the fu-Mino! Let go of me! Uughhhh!!"

"Babe come on, you've been so distant for weeks, come on let's do
it here, we haven't had sex for a month now and I'm really horny"
Mino says as he kisses my neck

"No! Let go of me you psycho! I don't want to do it! Gaaahhh!!" I
said as I struggle to get away from his hold but he's just too strong
for me and he's also drunk

"Come on you bitch! You've been depriving me for so long now
and I'm not going to wait anymore!"

"I said Noo!!" I yelled then I kneed him in between his legs with all my strength which caused him to finally let go

"Aaahhhhhh!!!!" He cried out in pain then he ended up laying on the floor as he held onto his crotch

"Fuck You Mino! My Father is going to hear about this! You and I are done! Your Future is Over! You better not show your face in School on Monday or you'll regret it!"

I then kicked him in the face and ran away from the scene as fast as I could

My body is trembling as I got off the Yacht, I couldn't help the tears falling down from my eyes.

I didn't bother looking for Jisoo anymore, All I know is that I need to get away from here as fast as I can

I almost got taken advantage of

Tangelo..

I need to see My Tangelo to save my Sanity

A/N: Jennie shitting her pants when she was 7 was from F.R.I.E.N.D.S

26.) Seumulyeoseot

Title: Invite Me To Your Next Dream

Artist: Jag Star

<https://youtu.be/7XwJNdaAlN4>

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

LISA'S POV

11:28 PM

It's Saturday Night and I'm in the Living Room having the best time watching People Flip Houses.

I like watching these kind of shows because the changes that they make somehow satisfies me and it's not even my house.

"I love home improvement shows, I wish I'm handy and talented enough to actually flip houses, they're so good.. the houses are so pretty now.." I said talking to myself while I'm waiting for my Jagi to come over.

I'm excited to see her even though we were just together not even 24 hours ago

To be honest, when Jennie first told me that I'm not invited to their party, it made me feel relieved.

I do not like large crowds, it gives me anxiety and besides, I wouldn't know what to do there anyway.

Jennie was so worried that I'd get offended for not being invited but in reality? I was thanking my lucky stars, I would rather stay here in my apartment doing exactly this, just relaxing after work.

I Miss My Jennie A LOT though, but I hope she's enjoying herself.

Earlier, I felt uneasy all of a sudden..I can't shake off the feeling that Jennie's in trouble, I can't explain it, I'm hoping my instincts are wrong.

Few seconds later, My Phone Rang and Jennie's nickname flashed on my phone.

I answered her call right away

"Hi Baby, are you here?" I asked excitedly

"Ye-Yeah Jagi, I'm in front of your door right no-now..can you open up please?" Jennie answered

Wait a minute, something's wrong.

Why does she sound like she's scared and crying?

I feel myself getting nervous as I opened the door right away and saw a very distraught Jennie right in front of me.

She hugged me right away and she started crying

"Jagiya, what happened?! Why are you crying?" I asked panicking

Jennie didn't say anything but instead she hugged me tighter, burying her face on my neck, I can feel her tears flowing like a waterfall

"Jennie-ya, are you hurt?!"

She shook her head 'No' then she spoke up

"Ja-jagi.. Mino he.. he almost had his way with me by fo-force, I was so scared.." Jennie said as her body trembles

I felt my blood boil and I'm seeing red

"That son of a bitch! I'm going to fucking Kill Him!" I said furiously

I've never felt this angry before!

Seeing Jennie like this and knowing the reason makes me think irrationally, I really want to fucking hurt him for what he did to Jennie!

She's really scared, my heart is breaking seeing her in this state.

I broke off the hug to take a closer look at her, I did a quick scan on her to see if she sustained any injury-- Thank goodness there was none.

"Hey.. Jennie, look at me baby, you're with me now, you're safe with me okay? I'm not gonna let anything bad happen to you, I promise"

Jennie looked at me still with obvious fear in her eyes but I can tell that she's trying to get it together and she eventually responded with a nod.

"Come on, let's go in my room okay? Do you want any tea?" I asked

"N-no Tangelo.. I only want you.."

"Okay Jagiya.. I'm here, You have me alright?" I said while I wrap my arms around her protectively

I lead her to my room and sat her down on my bed, I crouched down to wipe her tears away and then I cupped her cheek

"Hey, Honey..Take a deep breath and relax.." I instructed---she did what I suggested her to do and then she leaned in to my touch

Good..

She finally stopped crying and she looks much calmer now

"Do you feel a little better now Jagi?" I asked her

"Yes Honey.. much better, thank you" Jennie said then she gave me a quick tight hug

I leaned in to give her a loving kiss on the lips.

I want Jennie to feel that I'm here to protect her and that nobody's gonna harm her.

I broke off the kiss and looked deeply into her eyes, I hate seeing her cry.

I love you, Jennie

"Nobody is going to hurt you here okay Jagi? this is your safe haven" I told her

"I know Jagi..This is the first place that I thought of to escape.."

Escape..

That fucking Mino!

He better not have touched My Jennie!!

I felt myself getting angry once again but I held it in for now, Jennie needs me to comfort her and I'll do just that so I just gave her a warm smile

"I'm glad..Anyways do you want to take a warm shower baby? You know? so you can freshen up a bit?" I offered her

Jennie nodded "Yeah.. warm shower would be nice Tangelo..I'm gonna borrow some of your clothes again okay?"

"Sure baby.. how about next time since you've been sleeping over, just pack some of your clothes and bring 'em here?" I suggested

She pouted "Do you not like it when I borrow your clothes?"

"No, no of course not baby, don't take it the wrong way, You can have all my clothes if you want, it's just that, I want you to feel more at home you know?" I explained

"***smile*** Ok Jagi, can I bring clothes any time next week?" Jennie asked

"Of course Honey, anyways go and take a shower now okay? So we can have our cuddle time, your toothbrush is in the bathroom by the sink, It's in the pink toothbrush case"

I stood up up and pulled her up gently.

She then went to my closet, searching for what she wants to wear

"I want to wear these, it's the same clothes that you wore the first time I slept over" she said beaming

She chose my loose white V-neck shirt and my tiny jersey shorts

I smiled at her

She still remembers huh?

Cute.

"Ok baby" I said cupping her cheek giving her a quick peck on the lips

I then handed her a towel and then she went on her way to the bathroom

:

:

12:23 Midnight

Jennie and I finally got settled in my bed, we're just laying down, I have my right arm wrapped around her. she's laying in between my collarbone and my chest while playing with my left hand.

I give her kisses on the top of her head then I stroke her hair to comfort her every now and then, She's not really talking about what happened between Mino and her yet.

I'm not going to force it out of her either, she's going to tell me when she's ready, I don't want her to be reminded of what happened.

"Jagi? What do you want to eat later for breakfast?" I asked her

"Hmm.. I don't know, I'm not really hungry right now baby.." she said

"Ok, well if anything, just let me know"

"I will honey, thank you"

Theres a long comfortable silence in the room, but for some reason, I can feel Jennie's rage about to come out

"That fucking Mino"

There it is.

I knew it.

"Do you...mind telling me what happened Jen? or is it too soon?"
I asked cautiously

"No.. it's fine, I'm ready. Anyways..He wanted to have sex with me, Tangelo but I really didn't want to so I said No and when I did, he started getting aggressive. I've never seen him behave like that,

it's probably the alcohol in his system but still, he's gonna pay for what he did" Jennie said with a dark tone of voice

"He didn't physically hurt you though right?"

She shook her head

"No. He just pinned me and he grabbed my wrists pretty hard but I kneed his crotch and then I kicked him in the face after"

"Wow, you really can defend yourself huh Jagi?"

"Yep, I have a black belt in Tae Kwon Do and I watch a lot of self defense videos and I lift weights" she said smiling proudly but her eyes turned sad once again

"....It's just that, he really caught me off guard that's why I got a bit shaken up" Jennie continued

"Are you sure you're okay now Jen?"

"Yes, I am Tangelo, don't worry" she said smiling at me then she gave me a quick kiss on the lips

"Tae Kwon Do and lifting weights huh? No wonder you're freakishly strong for such a small person, not to be insensitive but somehow, I feel proud.. and here I was getting all worried..I wanted to hurt him for making you cry Jen.."

Jennie got off my chest and she sat down while I did the same

"Tangerine, Honey, please do not get involved okay? I don't want you getting in on this, trust me, I can handle him, he's done, we're done"

"You.. broke up with him?" I asked her to clarify

"Yep, but even if this didn't happen I still would've broken up with him anyway, he just gave me more reason to end things with him" Jennie answered

"You don't love him anymore, Jennie?"

She just shrugged "Honestly, I never did"

I kinked my eyebrow "But you say I love you to him though?"

"I say it to shut him up, I never meant it"

"So.. it's okay if I do punch him in the face right?"

"No, Tangerine, please don't do that..no offense but he can seriously hurt you and I don't want that to happen.. promise me you're not gonna do anything to get yourself into trouble" she said cupping my cheek

I leaned in to her touch "Okay Jennie.. as long as you're alright then I guess.."

"You're really sweet for worrying about me Tangerine, but trust me okay? I can handle him.."

"Ok..I believe you Honey.." I said to her

"Let's change the topic, did you know Sana was there at the

party?" She asked

"Yes Jagi, she texted me that she's going, she said she have some business to take care of, which is I don't get because it's a party after all" I said confused and I heard Jennie chuckle

"What? What is it?" I asked her with an awkward giggle

"Oh trust me, she took care of her business alright" she said

"Huh? What happened? Tell me" I said excitedly

"Well, after our video call, I told you I was gonna go find Jisoo to let her know that I'm leaving right? but then I needed to pee really bad so I went to the nearest rest room that I could find, And when I did find one, I opened the door right away and then.." Jennie paused

"And then what? What?!"

"***smirk*** And then..."

"Honey! Stop messing around and tell me!" I demanded but she just laughed

"Alright, Alright.. geeez you're a gossip aren't you?"

I rolled my eyes at her "Yeah yeah now tell me what happened?"

"I saw Sana and Tzuyu making out!" Jennie blurted and then she burst out laughing while I was dumbfounded

"Wh-what now?" I asked in disbelief

"Yeah, I know right? but come on Tangelo, don't act so surprised now. You know it's bound to happen" Jennie said still laughing

"Oh wow.. that's true..Sana moves fast doesn't she?" I said out of nowhere

"That's what I said! But anyways I don't know how they're going to deal with it when they see each other on Monday, I mean Sana I know she's gonna keep her cool but Chewy? I'm curious.." Jennie said while she rubs her chin with her thumb and index finger

I chuckled

"You sound excited about it"

"I am. Chewy is unpredictable you know? It's either she accepts her feelings or ignore Sana completely but from my impression of Sana, I don't think she's going to let herself be ignored" Jennie said

"That is true, if anything are you gonna be cool with it? I mean if they did start dating?" I asked

She shrugged

"Meh. It's their life you know? Who am I to interrupt? If they want to be together then by all means go ahead, if that's what makes them happy"

"Wow.. Sana and Tzuyu huh"

Jennie giggled "Yeah I know, they look good together though don't you think?"

"**smile** They do"

"But.. we look better, right?" Jennie said caressing my cheek moving closer to my lips

"Damn Right.." I said smugly then I leaned in to give her a passionate kiss

It's going to be another long.. pleasurable night.

JENNIE'S POV

4AM

After that chaos that happened between Mino and I, I went to Tangelo's place to ease my anxiety.

It's the first place that I thought of to go to because I know she's the only one who can give me the comfort that I need

Mino really surprised me, he was never really that aggressive to me before. I admit, I haven't been letting him touch me ever since Tangelo and I started getting involved, I didn't want to do it with anybody else, I only wanted her.

I felt like I'm betraying Lisa if I do have sex with Mino or anyone for that matter

I woke up pretty early than Lisa, I'm just staring at her beautiful face, she's tired from all the action that we did last night

"I'm thankful for you, you're my greatest gift Jagi, how did I get so lucky?.." I paused for a minute to study her, memorizing her face and then I continued

"Hey..You know what I wished for for my Birthday? I wished that you'd feel the same way about me and for you to forgive me for all the bad things that I did to you. I know I did you really dirty Lisa, and I sincerely regret it, but please.. harbor no grudge against me, My Love and Love me instead. I promise I'll treat you right..that's all I want Honey" I said whispering while caressing her cheek, tears threatening to fall from my eyes

She's starting to wake up, she opens her eyes slowly and then she looked at me

Shit! I hope she didn't hear me

"Sorry Honey.. did I wake you?" I asked her

She shook her head "No Jagi.. I just felt a little uncomfortable, I need to switch my position"

"Oh, sorry, am I in the way?" I asked worriedly

She smiled at me "No of course not.. you need to be closer to me actually.. come here" she said then she wrapped me in a protective hug "stay here okay? I have a hard time sleeping when you're not near me"

I smiled and nodded, my heart is beating like crazy, she always know what to say to make me happy.

I feel so..

Loved.

I snuggled closer to her and we both fell back to sleep

We woke up 3 hours later, I finally got to say hi to her Father and we three ate breakfast together. I'm glad Tangelo's Dad didn't really question why I spent the night with her daughter, he just welcomed me and treated me no differently than Lisa, I feel at home.

:

After breakfast Lisa had to get ready for work, she took a shower quickly and then I dropped her off, we arrived at her workplace after 20 minutes then I parked my car by the nearby street

"Ok, we're here, what time are you going home jagi?" I asked her

Lisa shrugged "I'm not really sure Honey, probably 2 or 5pm, depends on how busy it gets"

"Ah, alright. Well if anything just let me know so I can pick you up"

"Yep. I will, anyways, want to come in and say Hi to Miss Momo and Sana?" Tangelo asked

"You think Miss Momo won't mind?"

"No, I mean you already met her and she's very nice, no harm in saying *Hi*"

I smiled

"Yeah that's true, ok let's go"

"Wait there Jagi" Lisa stopped me then she went out the car opening my door for me

She held out her hand for me to hold

"Awww.. that's so sweet, chivalry is not dead after all" I said giggling--She winked at me as a response

We went to the dance studio holding hands.

As soon as we got in, we were greeted by the receptionist

"Hi Lisa good morning, and who's this new girl? Welcome to J-trinity" The girl said smiling

"Hello Hae-won good morning, this is Jennie, Jennie this is Hae-won" Lisa said introducing us both to each other

"Hi, I'm Jennie, pleased to meet you Hae-won"

"Same here Miss Jennie, You're cute, I like your cheeks" Hae-won said

"***laughing softly*** Aww thanks, It's my asset"

"Want me to show you around? Or you want to say Hi first? Sana and Momo are probably in the office"

"Let's go say Hi first, It's nice to meet you Miss Hae-won, bye" I said and then she gave me a smile and waved good bye

"You're a charmer sweetie. Hae-won doesn't usually greet new people"

"Well, I was born with overflowing sex appeal so.. ***wink*** "

"Pffft, try to be humble next time yeah?" Lisa said while she playfully rolls her eyes at me

I just laughed at her reaction

"J-Trinity huh? What a nice name, I wonder what the J stands for.." I asked absentmindedly

"Probably *Japanese* since they're Japanese" Lisa answered out of nowhere

"Jagi, why do I feel like that's kind of a racist statement?" I said

"Huh? Really? Shit I didn't mean it that way" she said feeling bad then she opened the door to what I assume is Miss Momo's office

"Hi Miss Momo, Good morning, Hey Sana-chan" Lisa greeted

"Good morning Lisa, and hey! You brought Jennie with you, hi Jennie" Miss Momo said standing up from her chair giving me a quick hug

"Hello Miss Momo, did Mina really go back to Japan?" I asked her

"Yeah, yesterday..her flight was at 7 am so.."

"Ahh.. I see.. Hey Sana, Good morning" I said giving her a smirk

"Jennie" was all she said avoiding my eye contact

"What's up with you all of a sudden?" Miss Momo asked Sana but she didn't say anything.

"Teenagers" Miss Momo whispered then she turned her attention back to me "anyways you want to do a quick tour? Sana can show you around, I would choose Lisa but her class is about to start" Miss Momo said

"Sure Miss Momo, Sana do you mind?" I asked, she just groaned but she nodded anyway

"See You Later Lisa-ya" I said to my baby

"See You Jen and Sana? Cheer up, Business was taken care of right?" Lisa said to her and Sana just blushed with her eyes widening

"Jennie you Snitch! Let's go and start the tour so you can leave already!" she said then she grabbed my hand pulling me away from the office

"Bye Miss Momo! Bye Lisa-ya! I yelled out before Sana slammed the door

:

"Hey, Hey! slow down..*FRIEND*" I said laughing

"Jennie! Why did you tell Lisa?!"

"Chill out will you? It's not like she's gonna tell anybody and besides she's your besty, what's the big deal?"

Sana gave up and she exhaled sharply

"Fine. But you better not say anything to anyone anymore, it's bad enough that you caught us making out and now Tzuyu will probably more aloof now thanks to your sudden interruption" Sana said rolling her eyes

"Lock the door next time then, idiot" I said rolling my eyes at her

"***grin*** Oh hoho.. you would know about locking doors huh Jennie?"

"Yes. Why do you think we didn't get caught yet? I'm not as careless as you" I said cockily "Now come on and show me around, stop wasting time, Minatozaki"

I walked ahead of her

"Oh by the way, Sana. Just out of curiosity, what does the "J" stand for in J Trinity?" I asked looking back

"Japanese, I thought it was obvious, because it's us three, Momoring, Me and Minari" She answered

"Wow that's creative..who thought of that? I bet it's you huh?" I said sarcastically

"Uh? It's actually Minari"

"Oh, well in that case, I like it, it's nice"

"Pffft, Don't think I didn't catch your sarcastic comment Jennie" she said rolling her eyes at me

"It was meant only for you, now that I know it's my friend Mina who came up with it then I say she's a genius" I answered with a mocking grin

"Whatever" was all she said then she proceeded with giving me a tour.

:

I stayed at J-Trinity for about 2 hours just watching Lisa teach her classes, thankfully Miss Momo didn't mind.

My Jagi is really good at dancing and her students seem to like her, some of them obviously has a crush on her too but I try not to get jealous about it because they're only around 14-15 years old, but even then, I still watched Tangelo like a hawk.

I had to leave though because My Parents are looking for me and they wanted me to go home already, I needed to talk to them anyway regarding the Mino situation.

They're going to be really upset with him for sure, My Parents will most likely cut ties with his Family and Stop associating with them once they learn of what he did.

Poor Guy, he should've thought about his actions first, now he's going to pay for messing with me.

I said my goodbyes to the two cousins and to Tangelo then I went

on my way home. Lisa will be getting off work at around 5 pm and I'll be picking her up, I'll bring some clothes to her house tonight too just like she asked

I can't wait for another sleepover

:

8 PM

I had another dinner with Lisa and her Papa earlier---I brought some roasted chicken, Bossam and a tub of milk ice cream for dessert

Lisa's Father was really happy with my little gesture which made me happy because I really want him to like me and I also want to show Lisa that I'm serious about her even though she's probably thinking that I'm just being nice and thoughtful.

We're in her bed just cuddling, being comfortable in silence when she suddenly spoke up

"By the way, you told me you were going to have a talk with your Parents regarding the Mino incident, how did that go? I mean if you don't mind me asking"

"Oh that, well, they were really upset about it, actually, My Parents were furious, especially my Dad. I think Mino might've already got expelled, and they cut business ties with them already. I think My Mother wants to file a case against him too so.."

"Wow, but you know what? He should be punished for what he did, He could have seriously done something really serious to you, I

can't blame your parents Jen.."

"Were you really that worried about me Tangelo?" I asked her

"Yes.. actually, not just that, I got scared for you.. even though I know now that you can defend yourself, I still can't help but feel a bit paranoid now, I wish I could be with you all the time. maybe you should bring a Tazer or a Pepper Spray.."

"You.. want to be with me all the time?"

"Yeah.. I want to protect you, I know I can't really do much but at least you can use me as a shield.."

I couldn't help but feel emotional at what she said

I felt tears stream down my eyes

"Jennie..? Why are you crying all of a sudden?!" Lisa asked panicking

I chuckled and wiped my tears

"It's because of you, these are happy tears don't worry.. The things that you just said really touched me.. thank you, Tangelo.."

She cupped my cheek and gave me a passionate kiss then she pulled away

"Jennie.. you're very important to me..I care a lot for you.." she said looking deeply into my eyes

I gave her a loving smile.

I'm very Important to her..She cares a lot for me.. that should be good enough right? But my heart still longs for her '*I love you's*'.. but until then, I'll take whatever I can get.

Thank You, Tangelo.

A/N: Thank You again for Reading and Voting.

I appreciate all of you.

27.) Seumulilgop

Title: How Would You Feel

Artist: Ed Sheeran

<https://youtu.be/ZZMZiBCRX4c>

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

LISA'S POV

It's been 3 weeks since Jennie's Birthday and the Mino incident. Students of Pioneer High knew about what happened by now, Jennie didn't want to get the issue out in the open but somehow, it did

There were questions about the teenagers being drunk when they're not supposed to since the guests were only 18-19 year olds, but, seeing how powerful Jennie's family is, they were able to get out of it and somehow placed all the blame in Mino.

Poor guy, he never knew what hit him.

I can't say that he doesn't deserve all the things that he's going through right now because he does. Him, forcing himself on Jennie is a Big No No and shouldn't be tolerated.

Just thinking about it still makes me upset .I hate him for hurting

Jennie

Jennie has been getting a lot of flowers, chocolates and teddy bears from the students especially from Men. Some because they want to comfort her, but most of them is because they want to court her but she politely declines them. A few people even got her expensive items and jewelries but she still said 'No'

She doesn't seem to be interested with anyone which is good because It's going to be hard for me to compete with the people here---They're all beautiful and wealthy just like Jennie, It's amazing how she's even paying attention to me at all.

Not just paying attention, she's been spending a lot of time with me as well. We have been sneaking around school every chance we get. We have sex in empty classrooms in between breaks and after school, we also had sex in restrooms, behind the bleachers, the parking lot (in her car of course) gym locker room and then the shower room.

Needless to say, the rules are completely broken and neither of us are complaining about it.

She's also been sleeping over and stays in my apartment every Friday to Sunday too.

Jennie said that she's more comfortable at my place because it's homey and really cozy, She comes over so much that my papa got used to her presence and it became a norm to us. They get along really well, My papa really likes Her.

Jennie tends to be alone in their big house very often because her parents are really busy but she has nothing but praise and respect for them, She really loves her parents and I could certainly tell that Jennie is well loved by them as well.

:

Friday- After School

I'm cleaning the classroom when Jennie called.

LS: Hi Jagi!

I answered happy and eager which made her giggle

JN: Hey Sweetheart, I'm on my way to the gym for practice, I can't come and meet you right now but I'm sleeping over tonight, would that be okay?

LS: Aww. That's okay baby, and yes of course why even ask that? You can always sleep over

You can live with me too Jen if you want

JN: Alright Baby, Sorry You know the Semis for cheer competition is next week and we gotta be well prepared

LS: Don't be sorry honey, I understand. I know you guys will win and make our school number one again, I'm so proud of you already Jagi.

JN: Aww you're too sweet baby, I needed to hear that from you, Anyways I'm here in the gym locker room, I'll call you when I'm done okay? See you later

LS: Alright Honey, Please be extra careful especially with your ankle

JN: Yes Baby, gotta go. Mwaaahh! bye.

LS: Bye Jagi.

I love you

Jennie has been really busy and exhausted this past few weeks since She and her team are practicing really hard for the Cheer Competition, I really hope they win because this means so much to her, I want her to always be happy.

I can't wait to be with Jennie again tonight, I know that we practically do this on a regular now but the excitement that I feel

never fades.

It's not only about the sex, It's the time that I spend with her, We talk about anything and everything and we never get bored with each other, even when we have nothing to talk about It's never awkward, We stay quiet in comfortable silence.

She doesn't get mad as much anymore, She's a lot calmer now and she became more affectionate and sweet. We haven't really discussed about our relationship status yet, I really want her to be my girlfriend but I'm not really sure if she wants to go down that road with me.

I don't even know if she has romantic feelings for me. I feel like we're acting as girlfriends already but I'm not the type of person who assumes things unless it's confirmed---She still is the Queen Bee of Pioneer High and she has her reputation to uphold, I don't want to ruin that for her.

And another thing is that, She's leaving the Country after we graduate to study in New York to become a lawyer.

My heart aches whenever I remember that she's going away. I really want her to stay with me but who am I to stop her from achieving her dreams? it's not like I can tell her what to do.

She has her whole life ahead of her, she's a very smart person and I don't want that to go to waste just because I'm too attached and too in love.

I don't want to be selfish with her.

:

:

9:30 PM

Jennie and I are in my room, We finally got to lay down and cuddle after a long day.

"Ahhh..home at last with my Tangelo" Jennie said with a tired smile as she snuggled closer to me

I smiled back and gave her a kiss on her forehead

"I know.. are you okay Jagi? How was practice by the way?" I asked her

"Terrible.. someone almost got injured.. I should probably cancel practice on Monday, we need a little breather"

"Who almost got injured?" I asked curious

"Uhm.. it was me.." She said a bit hesitant which freaked me out

"What?! Jennie! I told you to be careful! What the hell happened? Where did you get hurt?" I asked abruptly sitting up as I did a quick scan on her

"Well...I..was trying to do a Roundoff Back Handspring and I kind of had a clumsy moment..I almost injured my wrists and my right ankle again.."

"Jagiya you're over doing it, you're pushing your body too much, that's not good for you" I said while checking her wrists and then right ankle, I massaged it lightly while inspecting it

She giggled while I continue to see if she sustained any injuries

"Oh I'm sorry Miss Kim, do you find this funny?" I asked her annoyed

She shook her head 'No'

"No, I'm sorry Tangelo, it's just that..You're so cute when you worry like this.."

"What do you mean? Of course I'm going to worry about you, why do you think I always tell you to be careful especially with your ankles? I don't want you to be crippled.." I told her with a whiny tone

Ever since that incident with Mino, I get a little paranoid when she's not near me, I don't want her to get hurt, even just a tiny scratch on her skin would probably make me very upset.

I didn't even know that I can be this.. Overprotective.

"I.. I'm sorry baby, I'm not disregarding your worries okay? Forgive me?" She said as she cupped my cheek

I exhaled sharply and leaned in to her touch

"Okay.. just.. try not to overdo it..you're already the best Jagi, I know you really want to win but please don't sacrifice your wellness..promise me you'll take it easy?"

"Alright Jagiya.. I Promise, don't worry too much, see? you're forehead creases, you don't want to have wrinkles already, you're only 18.." she said as she massages my forehead with her thumb gently then she gave me a quick peck on the lips

We looked into each others eyes and smiled lovingly at each other

"Come on Baby, cuddle me some more, I really need your magic touch to soothe my aching muscles.." she said pouting as she lays down patting the available space on the bed

I laid down with her then she snuggled close.

She laid her head on my chest, I wrapped my right arm around her while she laced my left hand with her right.

We did some more talking and kissing, No sex because she's too tired and she needs to rest, and I'm totally fine with that, Whatever she wants to do, I'm all for it..As long as she's with me..

As long as My Love is with me, Then I'm the Happiest Person in the World.

JENNIE'S POV

Wednesday - The Following Week

This is it, the week of Semi Finals for the Cheer Competition.

I've been a little bit anxious lately because of it, The Pressure is really getting to me. I've been pushing my team to their limits, I'm not going to be surprised if they already hate me at this point so I decided to give them time off.

We'll be going to Busan at 5 AM on Friday and we'll be going back to Seoul Sunday Night

****Sigh****

Which means.. I won't be seeing Tangelo for 3 days..

It's actually one of the main reasons why I'm so anxious, The thought of not seeing her for more than 24 hours frustrates the hell out of me.

I find it really dreadful when I don't see her, my mood goes to a complete slump and sometimes, I don't know what to do with myself.

I'm so attached and I'm completely head over heels for her that I feel like I'm gonna be lost without the sight her.

I have been spending a lot of time with Tangelo for the past couple of weeks, My Parents would often wonder where I go for sleepovers, I tell them that I sleep at Jisoo's place.

My cousin has her own condo unit with no surveillance from her her siblings or parents so it's the perfect place for me to 'Stay', thankfully, Jisoo has me covered and she would go along with my lies and yes, she knows where I go.

Jisoo's parents are much less strict than mine since I'm an only child. My cousin has an older brother and older sister but Jisoo is their parent's favorite so they let her do or have what she wants just as long as she stays in school and keep her grades up.

I have also been declining my friends whenever they want to hangout, I would always come up with some lame excuse to get out of it. I know they don't believe my alibis, and honestly, it doesn't matter to me if they do or not, just as long as I get to spend time with Tangelo.

I would rather be with Tangelo on a quiet Friday night while we watch her favorite shows about flipping houses instead of clubbing and drinking. Don't get me wrong, I love my friends.. but I'm inlove with Lisa, I'm sure they'll understand.

At the back of my mind, I get a bit of a fear that Tangelo is probably getting tired of seeing my face everyday and night but I didn't want to leave her alone, I even came to a point where I go to their apartment unannounced and I often invite myself to a sleepover at her place.

I know I'm being such a leech and I worry that my presence would be overbearing but I couldn't help it, I want to be with her all the time.. my heart feels so empty and I feel very lonely without her..

How am I going to survive the three days without Tangelo?

I wish I could shrink her and put her in my pocket so I could carry her

so she'll be with me all the time

****Sigh****

I'm obsessing over Tangelo again..

I told myself that I'll control my borderline obsession and clinginess to her but it seems to be getting worse, I crave for her presence more and more each time.

I'm such a Parasite.

We didn't get to celebrate Valentine's Day together since I was busy with cheer practice but she did give me a bouquet of Red Roses and a box of chocolates when I slept over which was really nice.

I was never really a fan of sweets but I ate all the chocolate.. off of her body, then after that, she ate me.

It got really sticky and messy that night but it was amazing nonetheless.

Some people have to choose between sex or chocolate.. lucky for me, I got both.

:

:

We just got done with practice, I'm on my way to my car to go to Tangelo's place when I felt my phone vibrate

Tangelo is calling.

JN: Hi Baby, just got done with practice

LS: Oh. Okay baby, I was getting worried because you haven't called me and it's already 9pm

JN: Awww.. my bad baby, It's the last day for practice today and I'm letting the team have a day off tomorrow so I pushed an extra hour

LS: Jen, didn't I asked you to stop over doing it..

JN: I know Jagi but we're not going to have practice tomorrow though..

LS: But still, Jen

JN: Sorry Honey, Please don't be upset..

LS: ****sigh**** Fine.. can you come over now please? I miss you, did you eat already?

JN: ****giggling**** I miss you more, I'm on my way there now, and no I haven't eaten yet, I'm starving, what are you gonna feed me?

LS: Bulgogi and Rice

JN: Yay! Ok, See you in a bit baby

LS: See you Jagi, No Speeding please? Drive within the speed limit, be careful.

JN: Yes Sweetheart. Bye.

LS: Bye Jagi.

I drove to their apartment at A Normal Speed per Tangerine's request, I arrived 20 minutes later, It would've been 15 if she hadn't ask me to drive like a grandma.

Tangelo has been getting protective over me lately, usually, I would initiate the texting and calling, but ever since she knew about what happened between Mino and I, she became more clingy and she would always check on me.

I personally didn't like it when my Ex's check on me all the time, I feel like I'm under a microscope or something but of course..with Tangelo, I find it cute---I'm loving every minute of it actually and I'm secretly hoping that she would never get tired checking on me.

I don't mind telling her how my day went or what I'm doing, I want her to be updated all the time because it makes me feel like I'm her Priority.

I know it's pathetic to think like this but like I said before, I'll take whatever I can get from her and I'll love it whether it be crumbs or the whole shebang.

I called her to open the door for me, I didn't want to knock and wake up her Papa, she opened the door right away and then she gave me a bear hug and a kiss, she then lead me to the kitchen and she fed me with bulgogi, rice and kisses.

:

Lisa's Bedroom

Lisa and I are in our natural habitat in our normal state--cuddling and kissing every now and then when she suddenly spoke up.

"Jagi, you're sleeping tomorrow night too right?"

"Uhm, I was actually going to sleep in my house tomorrow since Me and My Team are leaving at 5 in the morning.."

"Awww...No..Can you sleep over tomorrow? Please? I'm not going to see you for three days Jen.." Tangelo said with a whiny tone

"Hmm.. Will it be okay Jagi? I need to get up before 5 and I don't want you to wake up earlier than you should.."

"No, it's okay. Me and Papa wake up early anyway.. Please sleep over Jagi? I'm already sad at the thought of not seeing you for 3 days so please stay here tomorrow.." She said pouting then she lowered herself, snuggling closer to me burying her face on my neck

I smiled at her clinginess, she looks like a little cocoon.

Adorable.

"Alright baby, I really want to sleep over anyway, I just didn't

know if it would be ok with you" I said to her rubbing her back

"Of course it's okay Jagi.. I love being with you"

I felt myself freeze and My heart skipped a bit when she said that, Lisa is usually shy when it comes to being vocal about her feelings

"Yo-you love being with me Jagi? really?"

She sat up slowly the she looked deeply into my eyes while, the feeling of happiness is now completely taken over by me being nervous.

I don't know what's happening, I don't know what she's going to do next

She leaned in close giving me a lingering kiss on my lips then she gave kisses on my neck while she answered me whispering with an "I do.." then she went back on my lips.. kissing me passionately

Tangelo and I kissed at least a thousand times already and each one of them hits me differently, but all in a good way.

Even though she hasn't said that she loves me, I can totally feel it by the way she worries and cares for me

The way kisses me and every time we make love, She makes me feel like I'm the most important thing that she's ever held, like I'm the most fragile person that needs to be protected

I have never felt like this before.

No one has ever made me this happy.

Only Her..

Only Tangelo..

She's so special to me

I will do anything for her

I love her..

I love her so much.

LISA'S POV

Friday 4:20 A.M.

"Jagiya, best of luck to you, I know you and your team can do it!" I said excitedly while I put her Varsity Jacket on her

"Yes Jagi, Thank You, I'm feeling a lot of pressure right now though" Jennie said sounding nervous

"That's normal but I'm sure when it's your turn to perform, you'll be able to do well, You're Jennie Kim, what can't you do?" I said giving her a quick peck on her lips.

"Make you love me" She blurted out of nowhere

Huh?

Wait..WHAT??!!!

Both of us are in shock right now, neither of us could move

When she realized what she just said, she bolted out of my room grabbing her car keys and her gym bag exiting my apartment, when

I came back to my senses, I ran after her

"Jennie-ya! wait! what did you just say?" I said but she was already in her car, luckily I caught up to her before she started the engine

I opened her car door, she tried closing it again but I wouldn't let her.

It's like we're playing a game of tug of war right now

Damn it! why is this little girl so strong?!

"Ummmmpppp!!! Jennie, I need you to repeat what you just said!" I said to her while I continue to struggle with her door

"No! let go of the door Tangelo! I need to go or I'm going to be late! uughhhh!!!"

"You have 40 freaking minutes! repeat what you said Jennie!" I demanded

"Nooo!!! Let go! this is an important day for me and I do not need to be rejected by you right now!" She said yelling

"Jennie! I love you!"

There, I said it, I finally said it.

Jennie stopped closing her car door on me as soon as she heard what I said, she finally gave up then she slowly got out of her car to face me.

"Wh-what did you just say Tangelo?" She asked looking baffled

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath

and then I looked at her

"I love you" I said sincerely

Her face is full of shock right now while she covered her mouth with her left hand

"Do-do you.. really mean that? Is this even real?" Jennie asked again teary eyed

I walked closer to her and then I cupped her cheek

"I do, I love you Jennie.. you can keep asking me if what I feel for you is real and I'll give you the same answer" I said to her

Jennie then suddenly lunged on me giving me a tight hug

"Oh! Owwww..."

"So-sorry Tangelo, I'm just.. I..I can't believe it.." She said pulling away

"Jagiya, I'm not going to lie, we had a very..VERY rough start but as time passes, I finally understand why people fall for your charms..You're very sweet, smart, fun and caring.. your looks, your sexy body and being a sex goddess are just bonus.." I said to her, She shook her head lightly while smiling

"But..despite everything that we've been through.. I can honestly say that I'm at my happiest when we spend time together.. I love you, I'm inlove with you, Jennie"

"Lalisa.." was all she said, I'm not sure if my eyes were playing tricks on me but I think I saw a tear fall down her eyes.

She then wrapped her arms around my neck then she kissed my lips full of love and passion while I snaked my arms around her waist pulling her closer to me.

Jennie broke off our kiss and gave me her warmest smile

"I love you too, Lalisa"

28.) Seumulyeodol

Title: Speeding

Artist: Brittany Gonzalez

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

JENNIE'S POV

1:23 AM

FaceTime Session

JN: I love you Tangelo..

LS: I love you too Jagiya

JN:Say it again

LS:Say what again?

JN:Tell me that you love me, I want to hear it again Tangelo

LS: I love you Jennie-ya, I love you! I love you! mmmwaaahh

Tangelo and I have been Face-timing for hours now.

I'm in my hotel room laying on my bed at the moment while I

FaceTime My Girlfriend-Lalisa Manoban.

Yes. My Girlfriend.

She's officially Mine now.

We confessed our feelings to each other this morning and it honestly just made me the happiest girl in the world, I didn't think that I would finally hear her say *I love you* to me.

I was planning on courting her and make her fall in love with me but it turns out, she feels the same way, she loves me like I love her.

Even if she does make me feel like I'm loved, it's still different when you hear it from the object of your affection, it's the confirmation that I need and that's all I really want.

JN:I can't wait to see you love, I'm missing you so much..you have no idea

I said to Lisa while pouting and she did the same

LS:Me too, I miss you a lot Jen, hurry up and win already so we can cuddle

JN:Aww I love how you already think that we're going to win

LS:Think? I happen to KNOW that you guys are going to win this! I'm proud of you already love

JN:Thank you for being such a supportive girlfriend, I love you, I'll never get tired of saying that to you Tangelo

LS: I love you too Jennie, anyways sorry to cut this short love but

it's one in the morning already and you need to be up early later right? You should probably get some sleep now

JN:Sigh**** Yeah.. I'll talk to you tomorrow love, I'll text you as soon as I wake up, goodnight

LS:Please be careful, don't overdo it, I love you Jennie. Goodnight

JN:Awww, you're too cute..I promise I won't overdo it, I love you too. Goodnight.

LS:Bye baby

Lisa said then she puckered her lips

JN: Bye Sweetheart

I responded puckering my lips as well kissing the screen, I smiled at her and waved goodbye then I hung up.

I squealed as soon as we ended the call

"I can't believe it, finally! I'm her girlfriend! Gaaahhhh!! I can't take this! I want to see her and hug her and kiss her!!" I said to myself feeling giddy

I can't wait to go home and be with her again..

I bit my lower lip and decided to tease her before she goes to sleep

01:32 AM

> Here's a little something for you so you won't miss me too much, it was taken from earlier, Nayeon took the picture for me, I hope you like it 🥰

She replied right away which made me excited

01:32 AM Orange Duckie

> That's not fair! I was falling asleep already.. but instead, I'm just falling in love ☐ I zoomed in by the way 🥰

01:33 AM

> Haha! Oh my goodness honey that was cringey as hell but I'll let it slide since you're my adorable duckie..who's a pervert lol.

01:34 AM Orange Duckie

> Hey! the opportunity to zoom in was there, I'm not about to let it pass lol. But kidding aside, you're so beautiful, I'm so lucky to call you mine.

My breath hitched when I read the last word

She's claiming me...

She's finally claiming me!

I feel myself getting hot all of a sudden, I already know I'm blushing like crazy.

01:35 AM

> Yes, I'm yours, All yours..I love you.

I love you so much, Tangelo..

01:35 AM Orange Duckie

> I love you too, Darling.

Shit.

What is this girl doing to me?

Jisoos! why am I so pathetic? I'm feeling so desperate for her touch right now, I want to make out and make love to her so bad..

I better go to sleep before I beg her to sext me.

01:36 AM

> I'm going to sleep now love, for real this time, dream about me.
Goodnight

01:37 AM Orange Duckie

> I will. I miss you love. Goodnight

Good thing I booked a separate hotel room from my team mates so I'm able to talk to her as much as I want.

I also brought some of her clothes that I borrowed (took) so I can wear it to sleep, it eases some of my yearning for her.

I put my phone down on the side table and closed my eyes with the biggest smile on my face hoping that I'd see my love in my dreams

:

:

Sunday

06:00 PM

JN: Baby! We made it! We're in the Finals for next month!

I said to my girlfriend feeling really happy. My friends already know about our victory through other cheer members and they sent me congratulatory text messages telling me how happy and proud they are for me.

My Parents also tried calling me to congratulate me and my team, they know how important this is for me so even though they were not able to watch me, they still make sure they're updated if I made it or not, they have people to let them know about details but I wanted Tangelo to be the first one to get an update from me, I want to talk to her first before anyone else

LS: Yay!! Oh my God! See?! I told you you'd make it! All your hard work paid off, I'm so proud of you love!

JN: Thank you love, I can't wait to celebrate with you...actually, can we uhm, go on a date Monday night? I promise nothing fancy, just a simple date, drive-in movie or something...?

I asked her shyly, this is the first time I'm asking someone out to go on a date with me that's why I'm feeling nervous, I know Tangelo is my girlfriend already but for some reason, asking her out is giving me a bit of an anxiety and panic attack

Is it too early to ask her out on a date?

What if she says 'No'?

LS: Sure love, whatever you want to do, I'm down for anything, I've never been to a drive-in movie before so it'll be a first for me, I'm excited

Whew..

Thank goodness

JN: Re-really? So we're uhm really going on a date?

I asked her again stuttering.. I just want to make sure she really wants to go out with me.

Tangelo giggled, she probably caught on with me being uncomfortable

LS: Yeah..? I mean do you really want to take me out Love?

JN: Of-of course I do! So-sorry I'm just a bit nervous, this is..my first time asking someone out so..

LS: Hey, it's alright, you did great, let's go out and celebrate tomorrow okay?

Lisa said smiling lovingly which made me feel a lot relieved.

I smiled back and nodded

JN: okay.. tomorrow it is then..I love you Tangelo, I can't wait to see you

LS: I love you too. what time do you think you'll be back here in Seoul?

JN: probably around 10:30 pm, what's up?

LS: I see, do you want to sleepover love? I miss you

My heart skipped a beat.

I really wanted to ask Tangelo if I can spend the night with her but I'm afraid I'm doing too much and I might be suffocating her already with my presence..

I'm so attached to her

I'm really really glad she asked me to be with her tonight.

JN: Really? Yeah Ok! you don't mind at all?

LS: ****giggle**** Yes Really. I haven't seen you in forever Jagiya. why do you sound so surprised?

JN: N-nothing, I just don't want you to feel that I'm becoming overbearing

LS: Overbearing?

Lisa asked knitting her eyebrows

JN: Yeah.. cos you know? I'm always sleeping over and--

LS: So? I never had a problem with it, I love sleeping and waking up next to you love, and besides, you're my girlfriend now, I want to be with you. if only I could be with you 24/7

I blushed at what she said, She's becoming so vocal with her feelings, she doesn't even hold back

JN: Y-Yah! Stop it you idiot! You're embarrassing me!

I said covering my face with a pillow, my heart is beating uncontrollably, I can't control my feelings

Lalisa laughed softly at my actions

LS: Hey Love, it's alright, I'm sorry, I'll see you tonight okay? don't forget to bring your uniform, I'll iron it for you.

I slowly removed the pillow from my face and I nodded shyly

LS: You're really adorable, My Beautiful Girl.. I love you Jen.

JN: I love you too.. A-anyways, I need to finish packing..uhm--see you tonight Tangelo

LS: See you my love.

Tangelo said giving me a virtual kiss then she hung up the phone

I closed my eyes and took deep breaths to calm my nerves. I couldn't contain my happiness.

The things that she said--I've heard it all before from other people, my ex's and my flings but howcome when it's her, It all sounds so brand new.

Damn that girl, she's turning me into her loyal puppy.

It's a good thing I don't have a tail or else it would be wagging like crazy for hours.

Tangelo...

What have you done to me?

Why am I...

So inlove with you?

LISA'S POV

10:45 PM

I'm in the living room watching a cooking show while waiting for my girlfriend

Yes.

Girlfriend.

Jennie and I are officially together, we've been dating for more than 48 hours now. I know I'm such a loser for actually counting the hours of her and I getting together but I don't care, I'm too happy.

Confessing my feelings for her came out of nowhere, I wasn't really planning on letting her know about how I feel this soon, instead, I took a chance and I'm blessed that she feels the same way.

I was planning to woo her and make her see how much I love and care for her but now that she's my girl, I can still proceed with my

plan, the only difference is that, this time, I won't have any restrictions.

I got Jennie a bouquet of red and orange roses to congratulate her for getting into the finals.

I'm so proud of my love, she worked hard and she almost injured herself for this, not to mention she still maintains her grades and her position as the 2nd top student in the whole senior class.

She's so amazing.

My Phone Vibrated.

Jennie's calling

She's here!!

LS: Baby are you here?!
I asked excitedly

JN: Tangelo.. I'm sorry I can't make it, something came up and I need to address it ASAP, I'm really sorry baby

Jennie said on the other line.

To say that I'm disappointed is an understatement, I was really looking forward on seeing her but I guess it can't be helped

LS: O-oh.. is that so? are you okay though?

JN: Yes I am.. are you mad?

LS: No of course not baby, It's totally fine, I underst---

Just then somebody knocked on my door
"Who could that be?" I whispered to myself

JN: What? did something happen?

LS: No, nothing, someone's knocking on my door right now

JN: Who's visiting you this late hours of the night??

Jennie asked sounding irritated but she sounds like she's whispering?

LS: Honey, calm down.. it's probably just a prank or something

JN: Well, Open the door and let me know who it is!

Jennie demanded

LS: Alright, alright..

I'm actually pretty nervous right now, this is one of those nights that I wish our door has a peephole.

I opened the door cautiously and---

"Surprise!"

It's my girlfriend

Jennie

Standing about 6 ft. away from my door

Ahh no wonder she's not using her normal voice

She's wearing her varsity jacket over my white V-neck shirt, black adidas soccer pants and white fluffy bunny slippers

She looks so adorable! Oh my goodness..

She's smiling widely holding out her arms

"Wha-what are you..doing here?" I asked confused then I hung up my phone

"Sleepover remember? Where's my hug Jagi?" Jennie said pouting

I smiled and ran to her giving her a bear hug

"My Baby.. you're actually here. I thought you weren't really going to make it" I said feeling relieved

"Are you kidding? I wouldn't miss spending time with you love" She said giggling

I broke off our hug and I gave her a quick kiss on the lips, She cupped my cheek and we smiled at each other

"I miss you so much, Tangelo"

"I miss you more my love, let's go inside yeah? let me carry your bag for you" I offered taking her duffle bag from her

"Aww, such a gentle woman and so sweet, thanks baby" Jennie said

"You're very welcome" I said grabbing her hand and pulled her inside then I closed the door and locked it

We went inside my room and I locked my door, she sat down on my bed smiling, she took off her slippers as she dangles her little feet

I smiled at the sight in front of me, I put down her bag and walked towards her.

I crouched down to match her and then I held on to her waist

She smiled and grabbed my cheeks, leaning in to give me a passionate kiss

"Hmmm... I missed your lips love.. I could kiss you for hours" I said to her in a daze

"Trust me, I feel the same way.." She said whispering on my lips

"I got a little surprise for you sweetie"

"Hmm? what is it?" She says as she continues to look into my eyes, smiling.

I needed to control myself and not lunge on her and have my way with her so I looked away and stood up, which is a bad idea because I felt a bit dizzy by the sudden change of position

"Whoa, you ok there love?" She asked worriedly, as she stood up quickly supporting me by my waist

"Yeah I am, I do that sometimes, I get dizzy when I stand up too quickly" I said feeling embarrassed

"Orthostatic Hypotension" She said matter of factly

"Ortho huh?"

"Google it baby, anyways where's your surprise for me?" She said

sounding excited

"Oh Right! wait there!" I said then I went to my closet and took out the bouquet of flowers

"For you love, congratulations again" I said handing Jennie the flowers

"Oh My.. how sweet and romantic...Thank You baby, they're lovely.." Jennie responded in awe then she smelled the flowers

"You're welcome, do you like it?"

"I love it my love.. especially the orange roses, it reminds me of my most favorite person in the world"

"And who might that be?" I asked her pretending I don't know who she's talking about

She put down the bouquet of flowers on my bed then she walked closer to me wrapping her arms around my neck

"She's standing right in front of me.. and I love her.. so much" Jennie said with so much sincerity in her voice

What Jennie said caught me off guard, I couldn't really move.

I know we have been saying I love you's to each other for the past couple of days but hearing her say it again in person just hits me differently..

And she said that she loves me.. SO MUCH!

"Jennie.. what did I do to deserve you?"

"Tangelo, I should be asking you that question, all I ever did was make your life a living hell.. I made your last year in high school miserable.. I never really apologized for fucking up your life.. I'm really sorry love.. I'm sorry for everything.. Please, forgive me" She said as tears suddenly fell down from her beautiful eyes

"Love don't be--"

I was going to tell her to not worry about it anymore but she interrupted me

"No, but I am, I really am sorry.. at first I thought I did all those things because you're just irritating and your hair really bothered me..but then as time passes, I realized that it's much more than that..I started developing feelings in some weird way and it just came to me all at once when we..had sex, I don't know, it sounds stupid but I--"

I cut her off, I couldn't stand the tears anymore

"Honey, Please stop, that's in the past now.. stop crying Jennie, this is supposed to be a happy night for you, you're not supposed to cry"

I said wiping her tears away, she closed her eyes leaning in to my touch but tears still continue to stream down her face

"My love, please look at me.."

She opened her eyes and she did what I asked her

"Do you see any hate in my eyes? do you not believe what I feel for you is real?"

"No, I do believe it Tangelo.. I just--"

"Then please.. don't talk about it anymore, it doesn't matter how recent it was, it's all in the past now, it already happened, it doesn't matter how we started, we're together now and we love each other, that's all that matters to me..that's more than enough, Yes we did have a rough start but let's not dwell on it anymore, ok?" I said smiling at her warmly

"Oh Lalisa.." She said hugging me tight "Thank you for loving me the way you do, I know I'm being so dramatic, it's probably because I've been away from you for so long.."

"You're not being dramatic okay? you just have a lot of feelings right now, that's totally normal" I said drawing circles on her back to comfort her

"Let's start over and forget about the past, we're happy now aren't we?"

"Yes, we are, I can honestly say that this is the happiest I've ever been, love" Jennie said pulling away from my hug cupping my cheek

"Me too Jennie, I'm very happy right now, so let's continue with that" I said to her then I leaned in to kiss her lips "I love you Jennie.. I love you a lot.." I whispered then I continued to kiss her

I really do not have time to reminisce about our past anymore. I want to make as many happy memories with her as much as I can.

She's leaving after graduation and we only have a few months together to be happy.

I don't give a damn if she treated me like shit, I love her and she loves me, that's what's important.

I know that what she feels for me is real

Because when you know, you know.

How we got together will probably be one of the biggest mysteries of my life.

We are a very random couple, but maybe it's destiny too, either way I have no regrets whatsoever.

I've said this quite a lot now but being with Jennie makes me the happiest.

JENNIE'S POV

Monday

7:00 AM Pioneer High (Hallway-Lockers)

"Hey babe! congratulations again!" Rosé came up from behind me giving me a back hug while I was taking out some of my books from my locker

"Ooof...Whoa" I said giggling then I turned around to face her "Thanks Chaengi."

"Sorry I couldn't be there, but I promise I'll watch you on Finals"

"Don't worry about it babe, I appreciate you, thank you" I said giving her a quick hug

"Can I just say, you look so different right now" Rosé said as she observes my face

"***giggle*** Different how? good or bad?"

"Definitely good, you're glowing"

"Who's glowing?" Irene asked coming out of nowhere which scared the crap out of Rosé and I

"Jisoos! don't do that, you almost gave me a heart attack" I said to her

"Ooooh, quite dramatic aren't we? Good morning to you two and Congratulations by the way babe, I knew you could do it! we'll be there for the Finals, Promise" She said smiling proudly as she gives me a hug as well

"Thanks babe"

"You look.. babe! you're blooming! Ooooh..who's the new guy huh?" Irene asked while giving me a playful smirk

"Huh? what are you talking about?" I asked pretending to be clueless

"Doesn't she look like she's blooming right now Rosé? the afterglow sex aura, I can feel it, tell us, who's the new beau? does he go to our school?" Irene teased bumping lightly on my right shoulder

I didn't answer her and I brushed off her teasing, thank goodness Rosé sensed that I was feeling uncomfortable so she came to my rescue.

"Irene stop it, she's going to tell us when she's ready, let Jennie and her new love enjoy their privacy right now, let's not spoil it for them" Rosé said wrapping her right arm around my shoulder

I let out a sigh of relief, I whispered thank you to her and she winked at me

"Fine, speaking of new love, here comes Tzuyu and her lover" Irene said smiling warmly at their direction

"Hey ladies! good morning!" Sana chirped holding Tzuyu's hand while our Chewy just waved *Hi* and smiled at us.

"Good morning" the three of us greeted them back.

Sana and Chewy made it official about two weeks ago. Tzuyu was a bit skeptical about starting a relationship with Sana at first, she tried avoiding her on a lot of occasions but Sana wasn't having any of it, She was really persistent and she finally convinced Tzuyu to be her girlfriend.

I'm still a bit surprised that Tzuyu said yes, I never would have thought she would have interest in dating girls let alone Sana, they're complete opposites of each other, but then again, who am I to talk?

So far so good for them though, they both look happy.

Me and My friends have no problem with it, we love Tzuyu, and we'll support her with whatever or whoever makes her happy.

Students have mixed reactions towards the two but I guess Tzuyu being a part of our group and Sana's *"I don't give a shit"* attitude, they didn't get much hate.

I smiled at them and thought about Tangelo and I

****Sigh..****

How I wish Lisa could be as brave as them, I couldn't help but feel a bit envious.

Last night, Her and I had a little talk, I wanted to out our relationship but she said that she doesn't think it's a good idea because of my stupid reputation

******Flashback to Last Night******

"Love, I don't care about my reputation anymore, I want you, I want people to know about us" I said to Lisa

"I understand baby but it's a little too soon don't you think? You just got out of a long term relationship and--" Lisa tried to reason out but I ignored her

"So? that fucker never meant shit to me, don't bring him up anymore!"

"Jen.." Lisa dragged on

"Tangelo, do you not want people to know that you're in a relationship with me? are you embarrassed or something?" I asked feeling offended

"What? No! of course not.. I just.. don't want you to be judged, I want to protect you"

I knitted my eyebrows

"Protect me from what? they're not gonna do shit to me"

"Jennie please, just, for now.. okay? let's enjoy ourselves in secret, the less people that know about us the better, people are nosy and they're going to be in our business and I don't want that, I want to enjoy you and what we have right now.."

"Fine... whatever" I said crossing my arms

"I love you, Jennie"

I exhaled sharply closing my eyes to ease my frustration and responded to her

"I love you too, Tangelo"

*****End of Flashback*****

"Hey, you ok there?" Rosé asked me worriedly, she probably noticed me becoming quiet all of a sudden.

"***smile*** Yeah, I'm fine Chaengi"

Rosé look worried and she didn't look convinced

"Jennie, if there's anything you want to tell me or us, don't hesitate okay? we're here for you"

"Thanks Rosie Posie, I will"

The bell rang signaling that first period is about to start

Tangelo is probably in the classroom already

Just the thought of seeing her again makes my heart flutter

For now, I'll do what she wants. But soon, This whole school will know that She's Mine, one way or another.

A/N: SaTzu for Lifeu 🐼👊👉👉

29.) Seumulahop

Title: Endlessly

Artist: Alina Baraz

<https://youtu.be/wk7pjDF3lIQ>

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

JENNIE'S POV

It's been a week since Tangelo and I started Dating.

Well, I don't really know if you could even call it dating because nobody really knows about us except maybe Sana and Jisoo.

Tangelo is really frustrating me, She's being firm about us keeping our relationship in secret for now, and my lovestruck ass just continues to obey her but my heart and my mind are really upset about it.

Whenever we're in school, we act as if we don't know each other and I hate it.

I'm currently at the cafeteria right now eating with my friends when some random guy tapped my right shoulder lightly which caused me to turn around

"Hey Miss Kim" the random guy said

"Uhm Hey..? What's up? Can I help you with something?" I asked him confused

"Yeah I--actually, I have..Flowers..for you Miss Kim" he said giving

me a bouquet of tulips while he blushes

"Oh Uh.. Thanks but uhm.. I'm allergic to tulips..sorry" I lied then I proceeded to fake sneeze then I cleared my throat

"My bad! sorry Miss Kim I didn't mean to--"

"No, it's fine, you're fine, you didn't know" I said to him

"Anyways.. I was wondering if maybe I could take you out on a date or something?"

"No. Sorry, I'm busy" I answered right away

"How about next week Miss Kim?" he asked again

"Nope, I'm going to be busy for the rest of the school year unfortunately, but hey there's a lot of pretty girls here in Pioneer, why don't you give them a go?" I told him

The guy exhaled sharply and just nodded then he walked away feeling defeated

I'm not going to lie, he's really attractive. He's tall, and even when he's in his school uniform, I could tell that he works out, but, he's not my type. I have no interest whatsoever.

The Only Person that I'm interested in is Lisa.

She got me in the palm of her hands and I'm in too deep.

I'm too in love to be distracted by shallow reasons such as people's outside appearance.

"Damn Jennie, again with the rejection? he's really cute too, you're single aren't you? why don't you have some fun?" Irene asked

"Nah, I'm over that phase, I'm good" I said then I took a bite of my chicken sandwich

"Yes she's way over cute boys sis, she's into citrus fruits now" Jisoo said out of nowhere

"Citrus Fruits? what do you mean? you're so random I swear"

Irene said rolling her eyes at my cousin

"Trust me babe, I'm not random, you're just not catching on yet"
Jisoo answered winking at her

I groaned and just ignored her, she's just going to keep teasing me if I tell her off. I already know she's just trying to get a rise out of me but I'm not going to give her that satisfaction.

"Chewy, where's your girlfriend?" Rosé asked

Tzuyu just shrugged "I don't know, She's probably outside eating with Lisa"

"Doesn't that bother you that she eats with someone else instead of eating lunch with you, her girlfriend?" Jisoo asked her with a teasing tone

This cousin of mine is really something is she? when I'm done being her target, she goes after Chewy.

"No, why should I be bothered? Sana tells me she loves me over and over again, Lisa is her friend before I'm her girlfriend, if she was really interested with Lisa then she should've made a move on her a long time ago" Tzuyu answered with ease then she took a sip of her drink while scrolling through her phone

Jisoo just giggled then she leaned in to whisper in my ear

"Hear that cousin? maybe take some notes from our Chewy, you might learn something"

"Chu, shut up will you?!" I angrily whispered at her

Just then I saw Sana with Lisa approaching our table

My world stopped and my heart is fluttering at the sight of my lover

"Hi Ladies" Sana greeted us which snapped me out of my trance

"Hey" we all greeted her

"Hi Koi, I miss you" Sana said turning her attention to Tzuyu

"We just saw each other a while ago you weirdo" Chewy said laughing softly

Sana shrugged "So? I love you Koi, it's natural that I'll miss you every second that I'm away from you"

"Whatever, you make me cringe. Sit down beside me and eat" Chewy said rolling her eyes at her

Sana just smiled and complied right away as she sat next to Tzuyu

Tzuyu smiled at her girlfriend lovingly then she gave Sana a quick peck on the lips and mouthed an "I love you too"

"Awww.. you guys are adorable, maybe I should get me a girlfriend too" Irene said jokingly

Rosé shook her head and laughed then she said hello to Lisa

"Hi Lalisa, nice of you to join us, come sit beside Jennie" Jisoo said out of nowhere grabbing her wrist a little roughly then she pulled Tangelo down

"Owww.." I heard Lisa say barely audible but I definitely heard it which made me upset

"Geez Chu could you be careful? you practically man handled her" I said irritated.

Lisa is a bit fragile and she might get a bruise from what my cousin did, I'm protective of my baby, I don't want her to get any scratches or bruises.

Jisoo just gave me a smirked and she finally left us alone

"Are you alright Tan--I mean Lisa?" I asked worriedly, I have the urge to kiss her lips but I had to fight it or I might upset her.

"Ye-yeah, I'm fine Miss Kim, Thank You" Lisa said giving me a tight smile

I felt a little stab in my chest when she called me "*Miss Kim*" again, it's like I'm a complete stranger to her

I'm really trying my best to control my temper and not blow up on her so I just gave her a fake smile and offered her half of my sandwich

"Eat" I said to her

"No, it's okay, I already ate" Lisa replied

"I know you're lying, take the other half or I'll get upset, you wouldn't want that right?" I said with a threatening tone but I made sure only Lisa can hear it

She knows better than to make me mad so she ended up taking it from me and she ate it.

While she's busy eating, I thought of a naughty idea

I put my left hand underneath the table and started rubbing Tangelo's thigh sensually while I talk to my friends, doing my best to keep a straight face.

This is fun

Lisa froze for a second, she tried to swat my hand away but I just pinched her and continued to do with what I'm doing.

Few moments later, another guy approached our table

"Hello beautiful ladies, especially you Miss Jennie Kim" the guy said confidently

It doesn't take a genius to figure out that the guy is cocky little prick and has a huge ego.

My friends responded to him but I didn't, I don't have time to deal with this ape right now, I'm busy rubbing on my girlfriend's long, sexy thighs and he's ruining the mood for me.

"Jennie, I have a little something for you" the ape said as he takes out a little blue box from Tiffany and Co. from his pocket.

He tried handing it to me but I shooed him right away because I felt Lisa's mood change.

She's not liking this at all.

"Not to be rude but what do you expect me to do with that, Sir?" I asked

"Wear it of course, it's a gift, from me to you"

"Sorry, I don't accept jewelry from strangers" I answered smugly

"Well then allow me to introduce myself, my name is---"

I didn't let him finish. Instead, I held out my right hand signaling him to stop talking, which he did

"I'm not really interested, you can go now" I said with a firm tone

"But I-" the guy tried to respond but Irene cut him off quick

"Yah! You heard my friend, she doesn't want your arrogant ass, so why don't you just run along and be on your way" Irene said while she glares at him

"Yeah, go away little boy, you're an eyesore and you're not welcome here" My cousin added

Rosé just gave him a judging look while Tzuyu waved her hand goodbye

The guy eventually left with his head down looking embarrassed.

"What a loser" Tzuyu said

"Wow, you girls practically ate him alive, he never stood a chance" Sana said

"That's not really it, he's being a conceited asshole and we don't tolerate that, who does he think he is approaching our group like he owns the place" Tzuyu explained

"Yeah I mean, I guess he was, but still, I feel bad" Sana told Tzuyu

"Why are you defending him anyway? Are you crushing on him or something?" Tzuyu said irritated and sounding jealous

"Whoa there, where did that come from? He's a monkey compare to you so why would I have a crush on him? but fine, I'll shut up ok? Sorry Koi, don't be upset anymore" Sana said worriedly lacing her right hand with Chewy's left hand, Tzuyu just rolled her eyes at her.

It got kind of awkward after Chewy and Sana's little banter but Jisoo was quick to save the day and told a little joke which lightened up the mood.

:

Lunch passed by quickly after that.

I wanted to walk with Lisa going to 5th period since we're in the same class but she has other plans

"Lisa, do you want to walk with me on our way to fifth period?" I asked feeling hopeful and excited but she shot it down just as fast

"Sorry Miss Kim, but I need to run some errands for Miss C. first, it might take a while" Lisa said nonchalantly

I just nodded and gave her a disappointed look

"I see, I get it. Fine. See you at fifth period then"

I waved goodbye at my friends then I walked out of the cafeteria feeling rejected.

Tangelo has been finding ways to avoid me and She's seriously getting on my nerves!

She acts so different when we're at school

It's like I have some kind of contagious disease that needs to be avoided at all costs.

I really can't stand being hidden like this, I need to talk to her.

I'm going to make her understand that there's no reason for us to hide our relationship.

I did what she asked me to do and so far, It's not working out, It's never gonna work out.

Lisa is mine and I am hers.

And whoever will dare to stand in our relationship will face me.

:
:

Lisa's Bedroom

I'm with Tangelo in her room, cuddling and making out, I decided that tonight will be the night that I'd talk about our relationship.

I tried to breakaway from our kiss but Tangelo just kept going, she moved her lips on my ear then on my jawline going down my neck on my most sensitive spot, She knows my body so well, She knows where to kiss me and where to touch me

It was getting steamy, my brain is getting foggy from all the sexual tension but I need to restrain myself from getting caught up with all this or else we'll end up having sex again and again and before I know it we're both tired and knocked out and we won't have a chance to talk and I'll miss my chance again

"Hmm..wait wait Tangelo, I'm not here for this, I need to talk to you" I said pushing her away gently

"Huh? Oh yeah- sorry baby, of course..Is everything okay?" She asked concerned cupping my cheek

"No everything's not ok, we need to talk about our relationship" I said which caused her to freak out for some reason

"Oh no..are you breaking up with me already Jennie-ya?! What did I do?! Whatever it is I'm sorry! don't break up with me! I love you Jagi, Please I'll do anything! I-" she rambled on but I stopped

her

"Ssshuusshh!" I said putting my index finger on her lips to shut her up "Idiot, why would I break up with you? You just totally jumped to conclusion there"

"S-sorry Jennie, it's because that's the unspoken official break up line" She said pouting

I rolled my eyes at her, good thing she's cute and I love her or I would've been extra annoyed.

"Look, stupid, I love you, I don't have any plans on breaking up with you alright? I'm talking about our relationship being hidden, I don't like it Lisa, I hate it! I want the whole school to know about us" I said with a demanding tone

"But Jennie what about your repu--"

"If you say reputation one more time I swear to God I'm going to kick your ass" I said threatening her

"Jennie, seriously? We talked about this already and you agreed didn't you?"

"Yes we did talk about it before and we're going to talk about it again. I only agreed to your suggestion to humor you but do you really think I'll let this go on forever? Lisa, People are going to know that you're my girlfriend whether you like it or not, and you're gonna agree with what I want or else you're dead meat arraseo?!"

I saw her visibly gulp and she nodded her head rapidly which means "Yes"

I smirked and gave her a quick kiss on the lips

"Good girl, see? That wasn't so bad now was it?" I said giggling

"Are you sure though Jennie? I don't want to ruin anything for you.." She said still feeling unsure

"How are you gonna ruin things for me? Ok I admit I was worried about my reputation and what people might say but then I thought, why should I care? We own the freaking school and besides, I'm

sick of guys checking you out, I happen to observe the way they look at you, I know they want to have their way with you and that's not happening. Ever. At least when people know about our relationship then they'll back off"

"Nobody's checking me out Jen, don't exaggerate"

"Oh but they do, you're just too clueless, especially now that you have a much darker hair color, it makes you look seductive, you're not aware of how attractive you are aren't you?"

"Well, what about you?" She asked raising an eyebrow

"What about me?" I answered with a sassy tone

"Guys in school are all over you, even outside school, some of them are even in college already and they go to Pioneer just to see you, ever since they knew about you being single they never stopped coming to you" Tangelo said sounding really upset

Is she seriously getting jealous right now?

"And who's fault is that Lisa? I never wanted to hide this relationship in the first place, you're the one who came up with all this and now you get upset because guys are coming on to me? Are you serious right now?" I said raising my voice a little bit

She didn't say anything anymore, she just leaned back by the headboard, crossing her arms and then she pouted

"Wow.. are you actually throwing a fit? It's not like I entertain those guys Lisa"

She still stayed quiet and looked away from me

I shook my head and took a deep breath

"Hey, Tangelo, look at me please?" I said cupping her cheek while I slowly turn her head to face me, her eyes are a bit glassy like she's fighting the urge to cry

I gave her a loving smile and kissed her lips

"Don't be jealous ok? There's no reason for you to be, didn't you

see how I deliberately rejected that guy from earlier?" I said to her and she nodded

"I only have eyes for you Tangelo, so you don't need to worry, alright? Even if the most richest and the most handsome guy in the world would offer me a billion dollars to be with him I still wouldn't get swayed, I promise" I re-assured her

Tangelo pouted harder and then she gave me a tight hug, I hugged her back while I draw circles on her back to relax her

"There, there.." I said then I kissed her cheek

"Jennie, you're not gonna leave me for them right? You love me..right Jagiya?"

I chuckled and nodded "I do, I love you..so so much, I'm not gonna leave you for them or anyone.. I promise you love"

Lisa broke away from our hug and then she looked deep into my eyes, almost like she's looking for reassurance

"I love you Lalisa, do you not feel it?" I asked her

"Of course I do Jennie-ya.."

"Good.. I'm glad.. It's You and I together 'til the end" I said to her

"Forever, Jennie" she said then she leaned in to give me a loving kiss on the lips

In all honesty, I meant every word. I don't know if it's just a rush of emotions or the feelings of all consuming love that I have for her but that's how I seriously feel, I have this strong feeling in my heart that Lisa is the one for me, that Lisa is my forever.

I know it's probably too early for me to think all these things but I really want to marry the little duckie in the near future, I want to tie her down so she wouldn't be able to escape from me anymore.

If only Same sex marriage in Korea is possible I would've asked

her to marry me already the minute she confessed her feelings for me.

I pulled away from the kiss and then I caressed her cheek

"So, Tangelo, just to clarify, you agree that you want our relationship to be known right?" I asked

"Yes Jennie"

"Good, I can't wait for them to know that I'm yours and you're mine" I said proudly

"Jennie-ya.. I love you, I'm sorry I suggested the idea of hiding our relationship, I guess I kind of got scared too..it was really selfish and insensitive of me love, I apologize.."

"Baby, it's alright now.. it's all in the past love. You don't need to be scared okay? I'm going to protect you.. forget about other people, it's our relationship love, our happiness, you make be a better person and I want to show off my beautiful lover, I don't know if you noticed but, I'm pretty boastful" I said jokingly while I gave her a playful wink

She just laughed softly and shook her head then she spoke up again

"I'm lucky to have you as my girlfriend, you're so perfect Jagiya" She said to me

"Trust me love, I'm the lucky one" I said sincerely then I hugged her again

I love you Tangelo..

I really really love you..

:

:

The Next Day in School, I came in our first period class and as soon as I saw my girlfriend, I approached her with the biggest smile plastered on my face.

Lisa was giving me a weird look but I just grinned at her

Last night, we agreed that we were gonna take it slow, like maybe hold hands or something but I have another plan.

I pretended to agree with her because I don't want to argue but I already made up my mind, I'm going to out our relationship *MY WAY*.

As soon as I got close enough, I grabbed her face tilting her head up and then I gave her a chaste kiss on the lips

"Good Morning, My Love" I said then I gave her a wink while biting my lower lip

Lisa was really shocked by my sudden action, I giggled and then pinched her cheeks and gave her another kiss

"Hey Minatozaki, Nice weather we're having right?" I said to Sana while she laughs her heart out

"Good job Kim, didn't know you have it in you" Sana said

"Oh you know me Minatozaki, I'm full of surprises" I replied then I turned my attention back to my lover

"Walk me later on my second period arraseo?" I said to Lisa and she just nodded.

She looks really embarrassed from what I did so she just put her head down on the table and covered herself with her jacket

I laughed and then I walked away to sit on my assigned seat.

Other students were looking at us but I really don't care, they can say whatever they want to say, just don't let me catch them saying something negative especially about Lisa or they will be in a lot trouble.

It's official now.

Finally.

Everybody will know that I'm taken

But the most important thing

Word will get around and everyone will know that I own Tangelo

I expect those thirsty bums who's lusting over her to leave My Girl alone..

They better back up the fuck up if they know what's good for them

30.) Seoreun

Title: Cross Me

Artist: Ed Sheeran ft. Chance The Rapper

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Trigger Warning. This Chapter was inspired by the song above.

"..But You Know I Fucking Love Her Now, Like Nobody Ever Could"

A/N: Rude Comments = MUTE.

LISA'S POV

It's been almost 2 weeks since Jennie boldly outed our relationship during our first period class and so far it's been good. Word Travels fast and by the end of the day, Everyone in Pioneer High knows that Jennie and I are dating.

We still get some weird looks here and there but since Jennie is the Queen Bee of School, nobody dared to say anything negative. They must've been really surprised though, I mean who wouldn't be?

Like I said before, Jennie and I are a very random couple, so I can't really blame the other students if they felt a little blindsided especially the ones who are trying or hoping to be Jennie's boyfriend.

Oh well, too bad for them

Jennie chose me.

Her Friends have been really supportive as well, although, they did admit that they already have an idea so they weren't really surprised when they found out that Jennie and I are already in a relationship

My Girlfriend's cousin would tease her a lot though, she would almost always point out Jennie's jealousy and possessiveness.

My Jagiya tries her best to ignore Jisoo but somedays she just really gets to her, Jennie almost strangled her if I hadn't ask her to stop.

:

We're inside Jennie's car eating our lunch, she wanted to have some alone time and she wants to get away from Jisoo's constant teasing so she brought us a bento box which she made from scratch and my favorite drink, chocolate uyu

"How's the food love?" Jennie asked

"It's very good baby, but I'm not surprised though, you can pass as a wife now" I told her while I continue to eat and enjoy my food not realizing what I just said.

"Good enough to be your wife?" Jennie said out of nowhere which caused me to choke

*****Cough! Cough! Cough!******

"Love! are you ok??!" Jennie asked sounding panicked then she pats and rubs my back

I continued to cough out the food that I swallowed halfway, I feel like I'm about to puke but I fought the urge to do so, Jennie then handed me her handkerchief as she continues to pat my back.

Few moments later, I finally stopped choking myself to death, I lightly punched my chest and wiped my eyes, Jennie instructed me to breathe and relax before handing me my chocolate milk drink.

"Geeez Tangelo.. glad to know that I'm not YOUR ideal type for a wife" Jennie said jokingly but I sensed a hint of hurt and disappointment in her tone.

"N-no sorry love it's not even that, you just caught me off guard that's all, I don't mean to offend you" I said feeling bad

"It's fine Tangelo, none taken, it was too soon for me to joke about it anyway, I mean we did just started going out.." Jennie said, I still feel that she's saddened by the way I reacted

I don't really mind what she said about her being my wife, It just really surprised me that she would say those words to me.

Yes, we love each other but I also know that she will be leaving soon, we tend not to talk about it though, it's like it's a given that it's forbidden to even bring up the fact that her and I will be separated after graduation.

In short, Her and I are in denial.

"You're not upset right, Jennie?" I asked worriedly

She shook her head 'No' and she just smiled at me, her eyes give her away though, she felt like I rejected her again

I'm on a roll, first I asked her if we could hide our relationship and now I acted like an idiot when she asked me if she's good enough to be my wife.

Way to go Lisa

I'm not going to be surprised if she's already thinking twice about us, I'm really hoping she wouldn't change her mind about me though, I love her and I don't ever want to lose her.

"I apologize love.. it's not even about the fact that if you're my type or not, you're wifey material in general, I'd be glad to make you mine forever" I told Jennie

She just smirked at me

"You don't have to say those things to make me feel better Tangelo, It's fine, really, I'm a big girl, I can take it"

"I mean it Jennie, if it's possible to marry you right now then I will, that is if you want to be married to me"

"Hmmm.. let me think about that one.. because you look like a flight risk to me.." Jennie said while she rubs her chin

I pouted.

I felt a bit offended and guilty at what she just said about me being a flight risk, to be honest, between the two of us, I'm the coward.

She's been out and proud about our relationship while I stand on the side, still caring about her reputation and being talked about negatively by others because she's dating a loser like me.

I can't help but think that maybe, I'm concerned about my image as well, I'm not as popular as my girlfriend but even if that's the case, I dislike the fact that I'm being in the center of the spotlight.

But I should've seen this coming though, I am dating one of the most desirable if not THE MOST desirable girl in this school

It's not Jennie's fault but..

I feel..insecure.

Does that make me selfish and unfair?

Probably...

Maybe I need to talk to Jennie about this.

I don't like keeping secrets from her

"Gotcha! I'm just joking Jagi, anyways let's finish our food then

we'll go to fifth period ok?" Jennie said pinching my cheek then she gave me a quick kiss on the lips

I just gave her a tight smile and nodded

"Honey, by the way, I might come home late tonight, Finals is in two weeks so we're practicing extra hours"

"Oh.. okay Jennie-ya, just be careful please?" I said.

I worry about her, she tends to push herself to her limits.

"Of course love, safety is the priority" She said confidently

I gave her a skeptical look because I know my girl, she's an over achiever and very competitive, but I can't really do anything about it, that's who she is, so all I can do is to trust her and always remind her to take care of herself.

"What's with the look Jagi?" She said raising an eyebrow

"Promise me you're not going to hurt yourself Jen" I said cupping her cheek

She smiled at me and nodded "I promise love"

"Jennie, I love you.. I'm sorry, I know I haven't been the best partner to you, we've only just begun and I already have a lot of shortcomings.. but please.. don't leave me, okay?"

"Tangelo, where is this coming from?" She asked worriedly

I just shook my head

"Just.. Promise me, okay?"

Jennie leaned in and gave me a kiss full of love then she pulled away

"I promise Tangelo, I love you, you're all I ever wanted, you're all I need"

"Sorry I'm being dramatic Jagi, let's eat now, we only have 20 minutes left" I said

"It's alright Tangelo, don't worry about it, anyways whatever it is that's bothering you, you can always talk to me about it okay? I'm your confidant" She said smiling me, giving me a re-assurance

"Yes love, you're my best friend, I trust you with my life" I said to her then I leaned in to kiss her on the lips. "I love you so much Jen.."

"I love you more, Tangelo"

After my dramatic moment, we ate our food and then waited for the school bell to ring.

We walked to our fifth period class hand in hand.

I thought about my worries and how unnecessary they are..

I shouldn't care anymore..

Jennie is mine now.

She chose me.

I love her and she loves me back.

She's all I need.

She's brave enough to claim me.

I should be brave enough to claim and fight for her too.

:
:

I'm in one of the classrooms cleaning up--Jennie's in her cheer practice right now so she couldn't meet me but we will hangout later tonight so it's okay.

I'm sweeping the floors when someone suddenly came in slamming the door which caused me to startle

What's Jennie doing here? I thought she's at practice?

I turned around and realized that it wasn't my girlfriend, it's some two strange girls, I don't know who they are

"Sorry, I'm just cleaning the classrooms here but uhm can I help you girls with something?" I asked but they didn't respond, they're giving me a really nasty look, they look really upset for some reason

Then out of nowhere, one girl signaled her partner to come at me

"He-hey! Wait a minute! What are you doing?! Let go! You're hurting me! Ooowwwww!!" I cried in pain

The girl ignored me.

She took both of my hands, twisted my wrist and she forcefully put my arms behind my back

"Who are you people and what do you want from me?!" I asked really confused of what's going on

The other girl marched towards me and she grabbed my chin aggressively

"Huh. So *THIS* is Miss Kim's girlfriend?" The girl said giving me a one over then raising an eyebrow, she's observing me but she's looking like she already has an opinion about me

"I don't see anything special, you're not pretty, you're not cute, you're not even attractive at all, you're tall though I'd give you that, but everything else is.. Meh." She continued then she lets go of my face harshly

"What do you want from me?!" I asked her feeling brave and scared at the same time, the girl who was holding me tightened her grip more which made me grimace, it's for sure going to leave a mark, I bruise like a peach.

"I want you to stop feeling like you run the whole damn school! just because you're the dating the owner's daughter doesn't make you invincible you got that?!" She said furiously

"Wh-what are you talking about? I'm not doing anything to make that kind of impression! Now please just let me go! I beg you! owwww!!" I said trying to reason out with her

"Oh but you are, and you're causing a lot of trouble for some of the students here, and I for one am getting sick of it! You're the janitor's daughter! You don't belong here! Leave Jennie Kim alone! Break up with her or else there's going to be consequences!" The Girl Demanded

"Are you out of your God damn mind?! I'm not breaking up with Jennie! What we have is real and no one not even YOU could ever change that!" I spat back

"Ahhh there's the fucking attitude, you're cocky now aren't you?! You little shit!"

Then out of nowhere, she slapped me hard on my left cheek and threw a hard punch on the right side of my face near my ear and my Jaw, I felt like my jaw got dislocated and my right ear started ringing, I also accidentally bit my lower lip because of the impact, I tasted blood and I felt it dripping out of my mouth.

"Stay away from her! This will be your first and final warning! If I see you again with her, things are going to get worst for you?! You got that?!"The girl said then she kicked and punched me twice in the gut really hard.

"Oowww!!!" I screamed

I couldn't help the tears falling down from my eyes because I'm in so much pain

"Jimin! Stop it! You said this isn't going to get physical! What if she tells Miss Jennie Kim about this?! We're done for! Oh my God! Why did I ever agree to this?!" The other girl said freaking out.

I felt her hold loosening and she eventually let go of me

I ended up kneeling on the floor holding on to my stomach, the pain is really excruciating I feel like I'm about to puke my organs out.

"Shut up Seol-hyun! quit being a fucking pussy! This chick ain't gonna tell shit to Miss Kim!" She said yelling at her friend then she turned her attention back to me

"Isn't that right you little cockroach?! You're not gonna tell on us right?!" The girl named Jimin said with a threatening tone

"Hey! What the fuck is going on here?!!" Another girl's voice came booming out of nowhere

"Oh shit! Fuck! it's Jessi! Jimin we're fucking dead! I'm getting the fuck out of here!" Seol-hyun said as she ran outside as fast as she could bumping the new girl

"Yah! You little shit! That's right you better run! If I see you again you're going to be deceased!" The new girl yelled then she turned her attention back to us

"Jimin?! You better not be doing what I think you're doing" the girl said

"Je-Jessi.. this is not what it looks like I swear.." Jimin said

"Did you beat up this poor girl?!" The new girl named Jessi said then she approached us

She kneeled down and checked on me, the girl is wearing a cheerleading uniform, meaning she's Jennie's team mate.

"Hey, are you okay? Let's go to the nurse's office" the girl said as she helped me stand up slowly

"Lisa?! shit! it's you! Oh Fuck!.. Cap is not going to be happy about this.." Jessie said worriedly

Then she spoke to my attacker

"Way to go Jimin! If Cap makes us work twice as hard during practice after finding out you beat up her girlfriend then you better hide because I'm beating you up myself! Get the fuck out of the way!" Jessi said angrily

"Come on Lisa, can you walk a little faster or do you want us to do it a bit slower?" Jessi asked

"N-no I'm fine.. really I- owwww.." I said almost falling down again but Jessi caught me

I'm still feeling a lot of pain in my stomach.

"You're certainly not fine! Shit! Cap is gonna go ape shit I just know it!.. come on Lisa.."

"Do-don't tell Jennie..plea--"

I try to tell Jessi not to let Jennie know but my mind is getting foggy and everything is spinning

"Lisa?! Lisa! Shit! Lis--"

I can hear Jessi call out my name but her voice is fading slowly.. and before I know it, I blacked out.

JENNIE'S POV

"One! Two! Three! Four! Five! Six! Seven! Eight! Good! Nice Job team!" My Co-Captain said (yelled) to our team while I do some stretches.

"Cap! We need Jessi here, we can't complete the routine without a flyer! and she's running late again!" Jade said to me, she looks really annoyed

"Where the hell is Jessi anyway?! did anybody try calling her?! Finals is in two weeks and she's still acting like it's only our regular season!" Dahyun said getting frustrated

"Let me call that little tardy beyotch, when she gets here I swear to God I'm gonna tell her ass to do ten burpees!" Seulgi said fuming

My team is really feeling the pressure right now especially us seniors because we want to make everything perfect since it's our last year.

I try not to get too worked up about it anymore though, ever

since Tangelo and I officially outed our relationship, I noticed (and my team as well) that I became calmer and more cheerful, so I let Seulgi do all the nagging and yelling now.

I'm thankful for my team though, when they found out about me dating a girl, they were very supportive about it. We treat each other like family, even though I'm on their asses most of the time, they still respected me and showed Lisa and I their love.

"Relax will you? I'll call her, she's not going to answer you because she knows you're going to yell at her for being late. let me just get my phone" I said then I went to one of the empty seats where I left my phone

I was going to dial Jessi's number when her name suddenly flashed on my screen

"*****giggle***** See? she's calling right now, she probably got us some doughnuts or something that's why she's running late"

"We highly doubt that!" Some of my team mates said contradicting me.

I just shook my head in amusement

JN: Jessica Ho. Where the hell are ya? Seulgi's gonna kill you when you get here, you better have some doughnuts with you or else---

I said but she interrupted me, she sounds like she's running out of breath for some reason

JeHo: Cap! You need to get here in the Nurse's office ASAP!

Jessi said sounding really panicked

I'm feeling nervous all of a sudden

JN: Why? what's going on?! are you alright? are you hurt?!

JeHo: I'm fine but Lisa--

Lisa? what does she have to do with this? what the hell is going on?!

JN: What happened Jess?!

JeHo: This bitch named Jimin beat her up pretty bad, she fainted Jen, she sustained some injuries and--

I blocked her out after hearing Lisa sustained Injuries

My world stopped when I heard what my team mate was telling me, I can feel my face turning pale but it got easily replaced by raging anger.

There's going to be a fucking blood bath

That Fucking Jimin whoever the hell that creature is will see hell by the end of this week!

I'll fucking kill her!

JN: Be right there Jess.

I said as calm as possible then I hung up the phone.

"Is everything alright Cap?" Nayeon asked approaching me together with Seulgi

"No. Lisa, she got jumped" I said containing my tears

"What?! who the hell would dare do such a thing?!" Seulgi asked

"Some fucking animal named Jimin" I answered angrily

"Is she alright though?! nothing serious right?" Nayeon asked concerned while putting her hand on my arm gently

I closed my eyes to take some deep breaths then I answered her

"Jessi said she sustained some injuries and she fainted"

"Shit..." Nayeon whispered

"Seulgi, take over for me babe, I'm gonna go to Lisa"

"That goes without saying Cap, do what you need to do, go to your girl, she needs you, we'll be fine" She said

"Thanks, and Nayeon please assist Seulgi ok?" I said to her and she nodded

"Go Jen" Nayeon said

I waved them goodbye and ran as fast as I could

I felt tears falling from my eyes, I'm worried about my love, she's really fragile and I already know the fucking injuries were serious because she ended up fainting

I'm feeling a lot of anger right now, That Bitch is going to pay for what she did to My Lisa.

:
:

"Lisa?! Lisa! Nurse! Where's Lisa Manoban? I need to see her ASAP!" I said to the nurse.

I didn't mean to sound rude but I'm just really freaking out

"Miss Kim try to relax, she's resting right now, she's in the room getting some rest" The nurse said then she stood up opening the door to the room where Lisa's at

I ran to my girlfriend immediately and observed her injuries, she has a big bruise by her jawline and her lower lip is busted open, her left cheek has big red mark which means she probably got slapped too.

Lisa is groaning weakly and she's grimacing even when she's

knocked out meaning she's still in a lot of pain, I uncovered her slowly and saw some "grab marks" on her wrists as well.

I couldn't help but feel disheartened, I have never seen her this.. Vulnerable.

"My Baby.. what have they done to you?" I said crying in despair

"Cap.." I heard Jessi say

"Jessi! you know who fucking did this to her?!" I asked my team mate demanding for some answers. She gave me a sympathetic look and she nodded slowly

"They better run for the hills for what they did to Lisa!" I yelled angrily

"Miss Kim, calm down and lower your voice, the patient is trying to rest, I'll leave now." The nurse said closing the door.

I didn't retaliate and just complied, I don't want to cause more discomfort to Lisa.

"Cap, cool it okay? you don't need to get your hands dirty for this, I got you. we're going to make them pay" Jessi said to me

"I want to make that bitch suffer Jess!" I angrily whispered

"And we will, just..let me handle it, I promise you she'll regret ever messing with Lisa" Jessi reassured me.

I looked at her and nodded.

She then gave me a hug to comfort me and I cried some more.

"There, there Jennie.. wipe those tears, she'll probably wake up in an hour or so, don't let her see you cry or she'll get worried.."

I took a deep breath to calm my nerves and I did what she asked me

Jessi is a very good friend of mine and Jisoo, we go way back since middle school, I met her during one of the parties our family held.

The Ho's has a really close connection to us Kims. Our grandfathers were practically brothers, they fought side by side during the Korean War, her father and mine are really close friends as well.

She's a really tough chick, she was born and raised in Queens, New York then she moved here to Korea when she was 11 years old. Her family has connections with the toughest gangs in the country, also with the Yakuza, Mafia, The Bloods and The Crips, and If I'm not mistaken, she also said that her family is connected with the Mexican Cartels.

If anybody tries to mess with The Kims, their Family will come in to rescue 100% and do the dirty work for us.

When she says she got your back, she means it.

She proved it to me before when some guy that I rejected tried to spread some nasty rumors about me during freshman year, the guy ended up going to the hospital and was confined for a week.

"Thank you Jessi, who would've thought your tardy ass would save Lisa"

"I know right?! Girl you better believe I'll be late again tomorrow!" She said proudly and I laughed

"I better go now Cap before Seulgi kicks my ass, will you be okay here?" She asked and I nodded

"Yes go ahead Jess, oh and just a heads up, Seulgi's going to make you do 10 Burpees" I said

"Burpees?! you know what maybe I'll have her get jumped too" She said annoyed but I know she's joking.. I think?

"You better not! anyways go, and thank you again babe"

"No Problem sis. take care later going home, give Lisa a hug for me" She said then she rushed out the door.

My smile faltered as soon as Jessi left and I took a good look at my baby again..

I'm feeling so helpless and weak..

I couldn't stand seeing Tangelo like this

Jessi said she'll take care of the girl who attacked Lisa.. but I really want to get involve and hurt her myself.

I want..

NO!

I need to get my revenge on her for hurting my Precious Baby

"Tangelo..My Love, Don't worry, I'll take care of that bitch.. rest easy baby, I'll be here when you wake up.. I love you so much, I'm sorry I wasn't able to defend you" I whispered as tears streamed down my face again.

I feel so guilty, I promised myself that I'll treat her right but I couldn't even protect her..

Forgive me Love..

JESSI'S POV

That Same Night..

11 PM

"Ahh..Owww.. S-stop it.. Pl-please I'm begging you..you've done enough already.. I'm sorry..I'm sorry for hurting Lisa.. Please let me go.. I'm dying.." Jimin said weakly bawling her eyes out, she's kneeling on the ground holding on to her stomach then she started coughing out blood.

We're in an empty dark alley at the moment, I brought two men to cover me.

"Tsk tsk..you're exaggerating, trust me I've seen people die from getting beat up and you're far from it.." I said then I gave her a hard slap in the face

"You know.. your face and your fucking attitude have been irritating me.. I've been observing you for quite some time now during 3rd period, how you talk back to our teacher and you're slut shaming girls who are prettier than you, how trashy.. and I see you around school bullying the weak..but look at you now..begging for me to stop, can't handle the big dogs huh bitch?!" I said then I kicked her on her right rib

The other girl she was with from earlier while beating up Lisa already passed out after some brutal beating

"You messed with the wrong girl Jimin.. you mess with Lisa that means you mess with Jennie, and when you mess with Jennie, you mess with me"

I then took out my phone and dialed Jennie's number

"You can come out from you car now babe, I'll let you have the final blow" I said then I hung up

I let Jennie come with me and let her watch as I beat the crap out of Jimin, but she told me that she wants to take a turn at kicking Jimin's ass too so I granted her wish.

Few moments later, Jennie came approaching us, she has her hair up and she's wearing a black shirt over her black Chanel leather Jacket, with black pants and black Christian Louboutin spiked heels.

"Uh-Oh..It's your Funeral Jimin" I said giving her an evil grin

"So. this is the bitch huh" Jennie said with a dark tone of voice

"Looking good Jen and Yep that's the loser. Here, choose, don't forget to wear gloves sis" I said while my two men showed her a bat and an empty wine bottle.

"Thanks Jess" She said smiling at me, I then gave her a pair of black gloves, she put them on and then she took the empty wine bottle from one of the guys.

"Classy Choice, I expect nothing less from you" I said smirking at her and she gave me a wink, she then turned her attention back to Jimin.

Jennie crouched down to level with her, then she grabbed a fistful of Jimin's hair which forced the pathetic bitch to look at her.

"You Fucking Pest!! how dare you hurt my wife!! " Jennie yelled which sent chills down my spine, I've never seen her this angry before

"Mi-miss Kim, I'm so-sorry, I-I just thought that She-she didn't deserve you.. and th-that she's only using you.. I made A HUGE Mistake Miss Kim..Please.. tell them to let go of me.. I beg you.." Jimin said as she continues to cry.

"Your Sorry is no good here you fucking bitch! you fucking dare touch my Lisa with those filthy hands?!you're not worthy!! and who the fuck do you think you are to say that she doesn't deserve me?! I could kill you right now!" Jennie continued to yell then she raised the bottle of empty wine ready to swing at Jimin with full force when she suddenly stopped.

"What's wrong Jen?" I asked her but she didn't answer

Jennie ended up dropping the bottle and she let go of Jimin like

she's throwing away a pile of garbage then she stood up

"You disgust me, you're a pathetic excuse for a human being" I heard her say then she spit on Jimin's face but she isn't done yet, Jennie targeted her face again and this time, she kicked her hard with her spiked heels.

"Ouch! That's gotta hurt, I feel bad for your Red Bottoms Cap" I said chuckling

"Take care of the rest Jess, I'm not stooping down to this monkey looking creature's level" She said which caused me to laugh

"Got it babe, boys, collect these bitches and take them to the hospital, make sure everything is clear and not get Jennie and I involved in this mess got it?! " I said commanding the two goons with me and they nodded already knowing what to do

After instructing the two goons, Jennie and I walked out of the scene back to our cars as if nothing happened

"Thanks Jess, I'll see you tomorrow"

"Anytime hun, take care." I said giving her a quick hug

"You too babe, bye" She said then she unlocked her car, got in and drove off while I did the same

:

While driving home, I smirked to myself feeling satisfied.

Jimin does irritate me a lot and Jennie is like a sister to me, whatever is important to her is important to me as well.

Nobody's messing with my family and gets away with it.

Bow Down to the Queen

A/N: If anyone is curious what Jennie's spiked heels look like, here it is:

Thanks for Reading, Voting and Commenting Gorgies.

31.) Seoreunhana

Title: Obvious

Artist: Ariana Grande

<https://youtu.be/9Sldg-8dVGU>

LISA'S POV

Saturday-3 Days After the Jimin incident

"Jagiya.. say ahhh.." Jennie said as she fed me with some chocolate chip pancakes

"Ahhhh..." I said opening my mouth wide then she put the pancake in while I ate the food happily

Jennie prepared breakfast in bed for me, She woke up pretty early to do it. She brought the ingredients last night after cheer practice and she made the pancakes from scratch, they're really good

"Jagiya the pancakes are amazing! I love it!" I said clapping my hands

"Awww.. you mean it Tangelo?" Jennie said

"Yes! I do! I could eat this all day everyda--owwww!!!" I started to say but I stopped when my jaw suddenly started hurting again

"Love! are you alright??" Jennie asked worriedly

"Ye-Yeah baby.. it's just.. my jaw.." I said grimacing in pain

"My poor baby.." Jennie said then she started rubbing my right jaw gently "Take it easy Tangelo.. don't get too excited.. look what happened.." she continued

"Ye-yeah.. sorry love, didn't mean to make you worry.." I said to her

"It's alright.. it's not your fault.." Jennie said with her voice cracking

"Love.. please don't cry again.." I said holding her hand

"I..can't help it Lisa.. I'm so sorry.. if I hadn't left you alone then this wouldn't have happened to you.." Jennie said and she ended up crying for the nth time since I gained consciousness.

"Honey.. look at me..I'm alright now see? the bruises are fading gradually and I don't hear any ringing in my ear anymore.." I said to her

"But baby I---"

"Love, we went to the doctors already, they did tests on me, I don't have any contusion on my head, I didn't break any bones..nothing major..I'm not going to lie though, the affected areas still hurt a bit but trust me I'll be ok..so don't worry about me anymore.." I said re-assuring Jennie to help calm her down but it didn't, I made it worse

"Are you insane?! How could you ask me to not worry about you! you don't know how scared I was! you don't know how much pain I felt when I saw you lying unconscious with all the injuries all over

your body! you don't know how much it hurt me that I couldn't protect you! I hate that bitch who hurt you! I should've killed her!" She said raging with so much anger

"Jen.. come here.. please honey?" I said opening my arms wide signaling her to give me a hug, she glaring at me but her face eventually softened and she let herself be engulfed in a bear hug.

"Thank you baby.. for being on top of everything, for loving me, taking care of me.. this isn't your fault okay? it's not like you know that this would happen to me.. but anyways the important thing is that I'm safe, I'm okay because of you.. so please stop blaming yourself" I said to her while I stroke her hair

Jennie didn't say anything, she hugged me tight for a while and then she pulled away

"Let me feed you some more Tangelo, chew slowly this time and try not to be too excited" She said with a serious tone

Ever since the Jimin incident, Jennie became more protective of me, I was excused the rest of the week and Miss Momo also gave me time off from work with pay for two weeks because of what happened.

Jennie asked her father to hire extra help to clean up the school and she also asked to give my papa one month PTO so he can take a break, luckily, Jennie's father agreed to what she requested.

She told me that Jimin is in the Hospital, apparently she got beat up by a couple of guys when she was walking back to her condo unit after a night out. Jimin also got kicked out of Pioneer High the following day after the incident.

I felt bad for her because she got a double whammy, granted she hurt me but I guess since I know what it feels to get beaten, I'm

sympathizing with her.

:
:

After breakfast, Jennie and I decided to take a little walk at the nearby park, I have been in bed for almost 72 hours so I figured I need to move around before I start getting bed sores

"Love, are you ok? does anything hurt?" Jennie asked concerned while she walks slowly matching my pace since I can't really move much

"Yes love, I'm fine, nothing's hurting me I just wanted to take it slow and maximize my time with you" I said winking at her

"Yuck! you're giving me goosebumps and not the good kind either, if you weren't so weak right now I would've beaten you up myself from what you just said" she said rolling her eyes at me

I giggled and then I grabbed her left hand and laced it with my right hand.

"No but seriously Tangelo, let me know if you have any pain okay?" Jennie said and I nodded

"Yes love I will and Thank you again for taking care of me, I'm feeling much better now because of you" I said squeezing her hand

"You're welcome love.. anyways, do you mind if I stay with you the whole week? I mean you know sleep and such, My Parents are on their monthly honeymoon and I don't want to feel left out" Jennie said

I chuckled "Wait, did you just say monthly honeymoon? and yes of course love, you can stay with us, no need to ask."

Jennie groaned and nodded "Yes, those two take monthly trips together to different romantic places, they've been doing that ever since I can remember, you know they would force me to take those trips with them when I was young? they would make out in front of me and say cheesy lines to each other, the disrespect I swear"

I laughed hard at what she said

"What's so funny?" She asked irritated

"I'm just imagining your little self witnessing all that, I can picture it now, your face all scrunched in disgust and wanting to walk out on your parents"

She laughed with me and said "That is so accurate, I even came to a point where I almost threw a pitcher of water at them, they're so gross"

"Nah.. they're sweet, like you, in your own way of course" I said to her

"Whatever. Anyways, You know what I just realized? You're just like my Dad" She says

"I am? like how?" I said kinking my eyebrows

"Yeah..he's really sweet to my mom, very affectionate and caters to her always, that's probably the reason why I chose you" Jennie said as she looks at me smiling warmly

"What do you mean love?" I asked confused

"Well, I read in some article before that Women who enjoy good childhood relationships with their fathers are more likely to select a lifetime partner who resemble their dad's qualities" She says to me

I couldn't help but smile and blush at the same time, I feel so happy.

Jennie really knows just what to say but of course, I had to ruin it for her

"I don't think that's accurate Honey" I said to her.

She kinked an eyebrow and gave me a questioning look

I winked at her and I continued "I mean, I had a very good relationship with my dad too when I was a kid up to now, but he doesn't have sadistic qualities like you love"

I laughed out loud after saying that but Jennie didn't appreciate the joke so she kicked me in the shin

"Owwwiieeee..." I said while I continue laughing

"You're an idiot you know that? If I'm a sadist then you're a masochist, I just kicked you in the shin and you're laughing? I should kick your ass right now, let's see if you'd find that hilarious" She said glaring at me

"I love you so much Jen" I said to her changing the topic

"Shut the hell up you stupid monkey!" Jennie said still irritated

I let go of her hand and I wrapped her to a side hug with my right arm around her shoulder giving her a kiss on her temple then I

scratched her chin, she eventually warmed up to me again and told me that she loves me too.

We continued walking, enjoying our quality time together like an old married couple.

I'm lucky to have her by my side.

My Partner for Life

No one can do it better than my beloved

My Jennie

:

:

Later that Night

"Awww baby look at those kittens! they're so adorable!! they look just like you love" I gushed as me and my lover watch Animal Planet

"The heck are you talking about you weirdo, I do not look like those kittens" Jennie said

"Uh, Yeah you do. especially that white one right there! ooooooh.. my little Jennie kitten, so adorable I want to cry" I said squeezing Jennie into a tight hug while I place small kisses on her chubby cheek

"Tangerine.. owwww.. you're hurting me! let go before I smack you!" She warned me but I ignored her.

"Gaaahhhh!!! SOOOO CUTEETEE!!!" I squealed pretty loudly in Jennie's ear which caused her to pinch my arm

"Owwwieeee...why'd you do that for?" I asked pouting

"Shut up! I told you to let go of me! and your father is sleeping already and you're over here making a lot of noise, be considerate will you?!" She angrily whispered

"Awww but I was just admiring the kittens love" I said pouting harder to make her feel bad but it didn't work

"Shut it! just watch and stop squealing, my ears are about to bleed" Jennie said, she looks really annoyed now, but still cute.

"Fine, but can I cuddle and squeeze you then while I watch? you know.. to suppress the screaming?" I asked wiggling my eyebrows

She rolled her eyes at me and crossed her arms "Whatever, just as long as it keeps you from screaming like a crazy cat lady"

"Yay! I love you Honey, thank you" I said engulfing her into a bear hug but she gave me an irritated look

"You're an unusual human being you know that? I must be crazy to be dating someone like you" She said trying to offend me but I'm so used to her by now that I don't even take it as an offense anymore.

"Ouch..that hurt.. but you love me, right Honey?" I said giving her a stupid grin to irk her more

She groaned in annoyance

She tapped my forehead lightly and then she squeezed my cheeks as she leans close to give me a quick kiss on the lips

"I do, I love you, A LOT, that's why I put up with all this" She said smiling at me with her eyes full of love and admiration.

Jennie's not really good with cutesy words. but when she tells me she loves me, I know that she means it.

:
:
:

The Weekends we spent together rolled by pretty fast and before I know it, it's Monday Already.

Jennie and I didn't need to wake up early today since Papa is on leave for a month but we did have breakfast with him with Jennie cooking for us.

I'm so lucky to have such a caring girlfriend who can cook. She feeds me really well that I gradually start gaining weight.

We got in school 10 minutes before 7 AM but Jennie had to meet with her team so we went our separate ways, She was very hesitant on leaving me alone at first but I assured her that I'll be fine.

I'm in the hallway getting my books for my first and second period when all of a sudden

"Lisa-chan! whaddup?! how you doing?! I miss you!" Sana said hugging me from behind

"Owww.. Sana-chan take it easy, my tummy still hurts.." I said slowly facing her

"Ooops! Sorry sis, but other than that are you doing better?" Sana asked

"Yes, Jennie took really good care of me"

"That's good to hear, Sorry I didn't get to visit you much" Sana said feeling bad

"Sana-chan it's really okay, I know you covered for me during the weekends and I know how tiring it must've been for you, I'm sorry you had to cover my shifts for me.." I said to her, I feel guilty for not being able to work last weekend

"Lisa, don't be sorry, it's not your fault alright? it's the least I could do for you.. I'm so upset about what happened, If only I found out about it sooner, I would've had those bitches tortured" Sana said with a serious tone

"Whoa..chill out Sana-chan, I'm fine now see? and besides.. those girls.. they're in the hospital right now.. they suffered major injuries especially Jimin.."

"Serves her right" My friend said with no remorse

"Sana-chan, don't say that.."

"Don't tell me you actually feel bad for her? after what she's done to you?! she should be in jail!" Sana said getting more upset

"Hey, relax okay? and Thank you for worrying about me, I love you, Sana" I said hugging her

"I love you too Lisa-chan, I got you, no matter what, you're my sister for life" Sana said hugging me back

"Okay, I've had enough of this, Minatozaki, get off my girl before

I kick your ass" we heard Jennie say from behind

Sana pulled away from me as she laughs

"Good morning to you too Kim"

"Honey, Hi, how was the meeting with the team?" I said hugging her and I kissed her on the lips

"Fine" She answered coldly while she glares at Sana

"Aww come on Jennie-chan, don't be like that" Sana said linking her arms with Jennie then drags her forcing my girlfriend to walk with her ahead of me.

"Lisa-chan come on let's go to class"

I let out a breath of relief, Jennie was about to rage on us again, good thing Sana's a quick thinker and was able to intervene

While they're walking ahead of me, I observed the two

It looks like Sana is whispering something to Jennie. My girlfriend looks uncomfortable for some reason.

Sana just kept talking and laughing at the same time then she wrapped an arm around Jennie like she's comforting her.

Sana then looked back at me and winked.

Huh? I wonder what those two are talking about?

JENNIE'S POV

Pioneer High

6:50 AM

"Tangelo, are you sure you're going to be okay?"

Today is her first day back ever since she got..jumped.. and I'm feeling very anxious on leaving her alone by herself.

You could say that I was traumatized about what happened, I'm scared that My Wife would get hurt again.

"Love, I swear I'll be fine, don't worry.." She said caressing my cheek but I swatted her hand away

"Ugh! How could I not worry?! will you quit saying that! it makes me mad when you say such non-sense!" I said feeling frustrated

"Okay, alright, I'm sorry, calm down Honey.. anyways like I said I'll be fine, don't be upset anymore" Tangelo said giving me a quick hug

"Fine, but call me as soon as you feel uncomfortable or just for anything, the meeting will be quick, I'll meet you by your locker so wait for me there okay? I love you" I instructed her

"I will Honey, I love you too" She responded then I gave her a

tight hug wrapping my arms around her neck pulling her closer to me

"Stay safe until then, I love you so much, see you in a bit" I whispered to her kissing her cheek then I pulled away

"**smile** See you love"

I scratched her chin for a bit then I went on my way.

The meeting took almost 20 minutes because My team and I are having some minor problems with some of the routines but luckily, it was resolved right away but we're having issues with the hotels and transportation.

Seulgi and I had a little miscommunication about that one so to prevent further complications, I decided to just take on the responsibility to get the meeting over with, the sooner this is over, the sooner I can get to My Wife.

:
:

After meeting up with my team, I rushed to Tangelo's locker only to find her and Sana hugging, I don't know if my mind was playing tricks on me but I think I saw Sana mouthing an "*I love you too*" to Lisa.

I know I shouldn't be jealous of Sana anymore because she's dating one of my best friends but it's automatic whenever I see someone get really close to Tangelo.

Like I said before, I consider everyone a threat when it comes to Lisa.

I walked towards them, they're on their own little world so I spoke up to get their attention

"Okay, I've had enough of this, Minatozaki, get off my girl before I kick your ass" I said threatening Sana

Sana pulled away from Lisa and she laughed

"Good morning to you too Kim" She said to me

"Honey, Hi, how was the meeting with the team?" Lisa said as she approached me giving me a hug and a kiss

"Fine" I answered her coldly while I give Sana a death stare.

"Aww come on Jennie-chan, don't be like that" Sana said linking her arms with mine, then she dragged me forcing me to walk with her leaving Tangelo behind

Unfortunately for me, we three are all in the same class for first period so I have no choice but to walk along with her.

"Lisa-chan come on let's go to class" Sana said calling Lisa out then she turned her attention to me

"I know you sent those girls to the Hospital Jennie" Sana whispered while she giggles

"Shut up Sana or Tangelo might hear you" I said whispering back but with a more aggressive tone

"She won't hear us, she's like 10 ft. away, Come on Jen, admit it, you did it right?"

"So what if I did Minatozaki? are you going to tell Lisa about it?" I said glaring at her

"Nah, I just wanted to say that you did a good job, I would've probably done the same if My Tzuyu was in the same position as Lisa-chan.. The only minor difference between us is..I probably would've ended them and then throw their bodies in the ocean" Sana said and I know she meant it.

I'm not even surprised anymore because I was willing to go down

that road too but then..

"Trust me Sana, I was so tempted to have the both of them killed but Lisa would hate me if she finds out"

"Awww.. you really love her don't you Jennie? that's so cute." Sana said with a teasing tone.

She wrapped an arm around me then she looked back at Lisa

****sigh*** I do Minatozaki, I love her so much, I would do anything for her" I shamelessly admitted my feelings for Lisa to her friend.

"She loves you a lot too Jennie, I can't say that what you did was good but to be honest, I've only known you for a short amount of time and this is probably a premature statement but, I noticed that you and I can get really crazy when we're..In Love, So I totally understand why you did what you did, that took a lot of self control not killing Jimin. good for you that you didn't push through with it."

I didn't respond to Sana anymore and just continued walking with her, Lisa eventually caught up with us and took me away from Sana.

She took off Sana's arm around me and she laced her left hand with my right hand pulling me closer to her.

"Hey hey, let go of Jennie, quit hogging her, she's mine" Tangelo said jokingly but I sensed a hint of possessiveness in her voice

"All yours sis, Short People ain't my type anyway" Sana said

walking ahead of us

I was going to say something but Lisa tugged my hand, I looked at her and she's smiling at me

"I love you Jennie"

"***smile*** I love you more, Jagiya" I said squeezing her hand

"Come with me to Practice later yeah?"

"Sure love! I would love that!"

Good thing she agreed.

I mean it doesn't matter if she said 'No' anyway

I would've forced her to come with me because there is no way in hell she's leaving my sight again after school hours.

:

:

Pioneer High Gymnasium

4 PM

Lisa and I arrived in the gym, The Team swarmed us as soon as they saw my wife with me.

They all knew about what happened to her so they checked on her right away, especially Nayeon, Seulgi and Dahyun.

It was very sweet of them to ask Lisa how she was doing. I was touched by how they worried about her considering this is the first time that they're actually meeting Tangelo

"Are you alright now Lisa?" Nayeon asked

"Y-yes Miss Nayeon, I am, thank you" Lisa answered shyly

"You're so polite Lisa, just call us by our names, we're all friends here" Seulgi said to her smiling

"She's lying, don't listen to her Lisa, WE'RE All friends here except for her, nobody likes Seulgi, even Cap secretly hates her" Dahyun said laughing while Seulgi glares at her

"Hey do not drag me into any of that, I'm not getting involved" I said holding my hands up saving myself from drama

"Anyways, Guys! Is everyone here?!" I asked but they were unsure so I did a quick roll call

After 5 minutes everyone seems to be here except Jessi.. as usual

"Where the hell is Jessica again?!" I asked a bit irritated.

I need to assign the room mates today for the hotel so I can start booking it tonight

"Cap! I'm here! I'm Here! Sorry I'm late but I got you guys some doughnuts!" She said showing at least 4 boxes of it.

She set down the doughnuts on the bleachers, Everyone in the team completely ignored me and went to where Jessi put the doughnuts to get a piece

I rolled my eyes and gave up turning my attention back to my wife

"Jagiya, you want a doughnut?" I asked Lisa

"I think it's only for your team mates honey" Lisa said shyly, I was gonna say something but Jessi approached us to say hi

"Lisa! Nice to see you! How are you doing?" Jessi asked

"I'm fine Miss Jessi, thank you by the way for saving me and helping me, I owe you" Lisa said bowing her head

"You don't need to do that Lisa, and you don't owe me anything, Jennie's my sister, whatever she values, I value as well, I'm glad you're ok" Jessi said with relief

I gave Jessi a smile and she winked at me

"You want a doughnut?" Jessi asked Lisa

"Ah no that's alright Miss Jessi" Lisa said giving Jessi a tight lip smile

"Come on, I bought a lot, let's go? Choose whatever you want" Jessi said dragging Lisa with her

I just smiled and walked behind them

This is going to be a long day of practice..

32.) Seoreundul

Title: Terrified

Artist: Katharine Mcphee

<https://youtu.be/tHpXxBDXsJw>

JENNIE'S POV

2 Days Before The Cheerleading National Championships

Location: Lisa's Bedroom

Lisa and I are cuddling at the moment after making love. We've been going out for almost a month now and so far so good, It's amazing actually.

We're on that Honeymoon Phase and our feelings and bond are stronger than ever, I've never been more in love with her before than I am now and each day I learn/observe something new about her that fascinates me

Like how she can fall asleep anywhere, it doesn't matter what time it is or what position she's in, she falls asleep like a kitten, unbothered and carefree..speaking of kittens, she considers herself as a cat person even though she doesn't own a cat.

Whenever she dances, her bangs doesn't seem to move at all, it stays in place which is weirdly cool.

She loves chocolates and loves snacking.

I love her little mole on the upper left side of her cheek just under her eye, it's so cute.

Her smile that's so bright, The Sun is Jealous.

Whenever I have a crappy day, just seeing her adorable little duckie face makes up for every bad thing that's happened.

My baby makes it all better.

"I love you Jennie" Tangelo said while she peppers my face especially my cheeks with her kisses

"Love stop it.. that tickles" I said as I giggle but she didn't stop, she continued to kiss me on my neck then she proceeded to smell my hair inhaling my scent

"Love, you smell so good"

"Tangelo, enough.. my scent is gonna run out if you keep doing that..Oh by the way I need to tell you something"

"Hmmm? What is it, Love?"

"Love, My Parents..They want to meet you" I told her

"They do? you told them about me?" She asked smiling

"Yeah I did, same day after we outed our relationship. So, what do you say? Dinner on Thursday?" I asked her hoping she'd say yes

"Yes of course Jennie! Although, I gotta admit I'm feeling kind of

nervous, I mean, we're talking about your parents here.."

"I know love, but I do want you to meet them too, they are your future in laws after all" I said jokingly which made her stiffen

"Relax Tangelo, I'm joking, Geeeezz...and I thought I had commitment issues" I said rolling my eyes at her

"N-no it's not that, sorry love, I'm just really intimidated, what if they won't like me?" Tangelo said sounding a bit insecure

"They will, you're a charmer baby and you're really adorable, I'm sure it'll be fine. They're going to watch me during the Finals and you promised me you'll be there too didn't you?"

"Yes love, I already asked Miss Momo and she said Yes. Okay honey, I'm down with meeting your parents" Tangelo said then she gave me a chaste kiss on the lips

In reality, I was pretty surprised myself when My Parents told me the other night that they wanted to meet Lisa.

Yes I did tell them about Tangelo, their reactions was what I expected--- They didn't like it one bit.

My father was quiet but obviously against it while my mother was visibly upset.

They actually told me to break things off with Tangelo but I wasn't having it because there's No way am I letting them break us up.

So the other night when I was having dinner with them, that's when it all happened

******Flashback******

"Jennie, are you still with your little girlfriend dear?" My mother asked with a neutral tone

****Sigh****

"Yes I still am mother, and her name is Lisa" I answered with quite a bit of an attitude which is something I don't usually do

"Right..of course, Lisa. Anyways, Your Father and I would like to meet her" She said nonchalantly which is shocking

"Y-you do?"

"Yes Dear, why do you sound so surprised?" My Father asked

"Uh? I don't know Dad, maybe because when I told you about me dating Lisa WHO'S A GIRL, You guys weren't exactly subtle on hiding the fact that you don't approve of it" I said raising an eyebrow

"We apologize dear, It was just.. surprising to us, I mean.. It's not really something that your mother and I are accustomed to.." My Father said defensively

"What are you trying to say Dad?"

I can feel myself getting upset again

"Jennie-ya, calm down dear, What your Father meant is that we apologize for our initial reaction, it was rude of us, we love you dear, we hope you know that" My mom said calmly

I didn't say anymore and just continued eating

"So, will it be okay if we have dinner with Lisa Thursday Night?" My Father said trying to redeem himself

I don't have a good feeling about this. It's kind of sketchy for me, but then again this is the first time that they asked to meet someone who I'm in a relationship with.

This could be a good chance for them to get to know Lisa, Maybe they'll change their minds about us dating and see how wonderful and amazing Tangelo really is

"Okay Dad, I'll let her know, thank you for giving her a chance" I said giving them a tight lip smile

"No worries dear, whatever makes our only child Happy" He said then he stood up giving me a brief hug and kiss on top of my head then he sat back down and continued to eat dinner while my mother gave me her warmest smile.

******End of Flashback******

I'm pretty nervous about Tangelo meeting my parents, I do not know what to expect but I'm just hoping for the best.

Hopefully they won't disrespect Lisa in front of me or else I'll get

really upset.

Tangelo is my main source of happiness right now and I know that she will be for a long long time and I'm not going to let anyone, Not Even My Parents get in the way of that

I'm well aware that I'm still young, but I also know what I want, and I want to be with Tangelo for the rest of my life and the next lives after that.

"Hey, You alright there?" Lisa asked booping my nose

"H-huh? Oh--Ye-Yeah.. I'm fine baby" I answered, smiling at her

"***smirk*** Where did you just go? you just totally spaced out on me"

I shook my head and then I leaned on her chest

"Nowhere, love" I said then I put my arm over her stomach hugging her then I closed my eyes

I'm not about to tell her about me being uncomfortable with the meeting, She might back out and get insecure and that's the last thing I want to happen.

This is where I belong..

This is where I want to be..

This is where I NEED to be..

With My Soulmate..

With My Love.

She Completes Me.

I'm nothing without her.

LISA'S POV

THURSDAY NIGHT (Dinner with Jennie's Parents)

Tonight is the night that I'm going to meet my girlfriend's parents for the first time.

We're on our way to Jennie's house and to say that me being nervous and anxious is an understatement.

I couldn't really sleep last night because I'm feeling really intimidated--I mean who wouldn't be? They're Jennie's Parents! They own Pioneer High and Her Family belongs to the Top 1%.

What if they won't like me?

What if they decided that I'm not good enough for their daughter?

What if they want Jennie and I to break up?

Will Jennie agree to it if they did ask her to break up with me?

But she said she loves me

But she loves her Parents too..

I don't want Jennie to leave me..

She wouldn't.. Right?

Jennie would never..

My panicked thoughts were interrupted when I felt Jennie's hand squeezed mine lightly

"Honey? We're here.." I heard Jennie say

"H-Huh?"

Jennie gave me a concerned look and circled her thumb with mine

"We're here Honey, You alright?" She asked

I gave her a tight lip smile and I nodded

"Ye-Yeah love, I'm just a little bit nervous right now so.."

"***smile*** I know love, but don't worry, I'll be with you okay? And I'm sure they're going to like you, they have to, because I love you"

I just looked at my lover not really knowing what to say to her.

I know what she just said is supposed to make me feel better, but it really didn't do much for my anxiety.

Well, it did a little bit, but that doesn't change the fact that I'm still a nervous wreck.

I hope this dinner goes well, I really can't afford to make a first bad impression.

Maybe if I show them how much I love and care for their daughter,

maybe they'll see that there's no need for them to worry about her being in a same sex relationship

I know it's a long shot but it's worth a try and there's nothing wrong with being hopeful because I have faith in Jennie and I's love for each other.

You can do this Lisa! Jennie is with you, she's not going to leave you hanging

"Let's go my love? They're waiting for us" Jennie said giving my hand another light squeeze

"Yes, let's go, oh. Wait there Jen" I said then I unlink our hands and got off her car.

I went to the driver's side and opened the door for her and held out my hand giving her a smile

She took my hand and while she blushes

"That was smooth, I mean I know you did it before but.. maybe you should do it more often? I kind of what to get use to that "

"I don't mind love, I'll do anything for you" I said to her

She chuckled at my cheesy line "Tangelo, you already have me, do you want me to fall deeper for you?"

"That's the plan, I know what I have and I'm planning to keep it for as long as I live"

I saw Jennie blush and smiled but she ended up rolling her eyes at me-- She finds it hard to react when I get all sweet and poetic

"You're such a cringe Tangelo! Now hurry and let's go in so we could leave ASAP"

Leave ASAP huh?

I guess she's as nervous as I am and---

What in the Actual Fuck??!

"Whoa Jennie! What in the Holy Hell.. this is your house?!!" I asked almost screaming because I'm really shocked at how enormous her house is.

I probably look ignorant right about now---my jaw dropped and I feel like my eyes are about to pop out of their sockets

(A/N: I couldn't find the front view of this mega mansion..Oh well)

"Uh..Yes? Kind of a late reaction there Honey, since we've been parked in front of it for the last 5 minutes?" She said amused at my reaction

"That's because I'm feeling really nervous I didn't even pay attention! This is not a house by the way! This is is like a freaking Mega Mansion or something!" I exclaimed

"Ok. Calm down Darling, we're here for dinner and not for you to admire the house"

"Yeah I know sorry but you know how much I love pretty houses,

Love" I said still gawking at Jennie's Home.

Damn!

This is where she grew up?!

I know Jennie's Family is rich but I didn't know that they're Filthy Rich!

Oh My Goodness!

This isn't helping with my anxious state at all

"I know love, let's talk about that some other time okay? Let's go, It's rude to keep them waiting" Jennie said as she pulled me leading us towards the front door of their mansion, putting the code to unlock it to get inside

As soon as we got in, a butler with three ladies wearing maid's outfit came and greeted us and took Jennie and I's jackets

"Thank You Mr. Jao" Jennie said and I bowed at him but the butler kept a straight face

"You're welcome Miss, your parents are waiting in the Dining Room" He said then he walked in ahead of us as we followed him

"Jisoos Jennie, you guys have a butler? How many staff do you guys have here?" I asked her whispering

"I'm not really sure love.." She answered but I know she knows

"Don't tell me you guys have a private chef too" I asked her again

It was supposed to be a joke this time but---

"On some occasions, The Chef is on call, he flies all the way from Japan to cook for us, I'm a huge fan of Japanese cuisine so My Father hired him so he could be available anytime I want to get my Japanese cravings"

"Michelin Star Chef I bet" I said to Jennie, at this point I wouldn't even be surprised if she said yes

"Yes, He's also a celebrity chef in his country if I'm not mistaken"

I didn't even bother saying anything anymore. Them hiring a Michelin star chef like it's nothing is one of the small proofs that Her and I have different worlds

Don't focus on that Lisa..

Focus on making her parents like you

After about a 2 minute walk, we finally arrived at their Dining room. I'm not gonna go into full details anymore on how big the dining room is, I'm sure you already get the idea (and the author is too lazy to write descriptions)

"Good Evening Mom and Dad" Jennie greeted them, they were sitting down by the Dining table having a conversation but as soon as they heard and saw Jennie, they automatically looked at our direction and smiled at their daughter

Both of her Parents stood up to greet us

"Sweetheart you finally arrived, and Oh this must be your

Girlfriend Lisa" Her Mother said giving Jennie a hug and a kiss on the cheek while she approached me and gave me a small hug before pulling away to give me a smile

"Good Evening Ma'am, Sir, Thank you for inviting me over for Dinner" I said bowing my head as low as possible to show respect while thanking the Gods that I didn't stutter

"Dear, you don't need to do that, You're okay" Her Father said putting a hand on my shoulder.

I looked up at him and he's smiling looking a bit amused.

"Come and let's eat, I hope you like Japanese food Lisa" her Father said to me while motioning us to sit down

"Yes sir, I love Japanese food" I answered smiling

"Very good, we'll get along just fine, Lisa"

Jennie held my hand tugging it lightly and she smiled at me. We went to the right side of the table, I pulled up a chair for her and then sat beside her while her Father sat in the middle and her Mother sat across from us.

As soon as we're seated down, Food Started coming to us.

There's a boat of different kinds of sushi, The butlers served us 5 pieces each and handed us fancy looking chopsticks

"Eat up Lisa, these are the finest Otoro sushi you could find, it will literally melt in your mouth, these are Jennie's favorite, I hope you'll like it" Jennie's Father said

I popped one in my mouth and he wasn't exaggerating at all, it's the best sushi I've ever tasted

"Do you like it Lisa?" Jennie asked

"I love it Jennie" I said sounding really happy and her Parents smiled at us warmly

"We're happy you like it, go ahead and get some more dear but don't get too full because we still have some Kobe Wagyu, Jennie loves those too" her mother said to me

Wow..

Jennie's Parents really spoil her

Just the way they they cater to Jennie's taste in expensive food is something else..

..I wonder if she really enjoys what I cook for her?

I use inexpensive ingredients and she seems to really like them.

Or was she perhaps pretending to like it so she wouldn't hurt my feelings?

"So, tell us a little bit something about yourself Lisa" her father said

"Oh uhm, I'm an only child sir, like Jennie. I live with my father in an apartment about a 20 minute bus ride from school-"

"Ah that's right, Jennie told us about that, Your Father is in the Sanitation department for Pioneer is that right?" Her father asked but not in a rude way

"Yes sir, that's actually the reason how I got it to Pioneer. Thank you for giving me the opportunity to attend your School"

"It's no problem at all, it's the least we could do to our Loyal employees and by the way, I want to apologize for what happened

to you. We don't tolerate bullying at Pioneer, Lisa--I hope you know that" Jennie's mother said

"We're increasing security and implementing more rules about it so you don't need to worry anymore. We want to promote a safe environment for our students and I also want to apologize for my daughter, I know she gave you a rough time for the first 4 months" Mr. Kim added, looking pointedly at my girlfriend

"Dad! How did you-- was it Jisoo?! it's her isn't it?!"

"No, that cousin of yours is loyal to you, she'd rather lose her condo unit than to throw you under the bus. I have my eyes and ears everywhere Jennie" Her Father said sounding a bit disappointed

"That's all in the Past Sir, Jennie has been nothing but attentive and caring, I'm grateful for her" I said coming to my girlfriend's defense

"I'm glad"

"Lisa, I'm sorry to be a bit invasive but you somehow look different..Are you full Korean?" Her mother asked curiously

"Yeah I noticed that too, you look foreign"

"Oh uhm, I'm half Korean and Half Thai, My Papa is from Thailand and he immigrated here in Korea and then he met My Mama" I answered them

"Oh.. no wonder, you look pretty by the way, my daughter has good taste" her mom said

"Mom!" Jennie said feeling embarrassed while her mom just giggled

"Th-Thank You Ma'am" I said shyly

"What does your Mother do?" Her mother asked

"She.. passed away right after giving birth to me, it's just me and my Father, Ma'am"

"Sorry I shouldn't have asked Lisa, please forgive my curiosity"

"No! Please Ma'am don't worry about it, It's fine really. I barely have any memory of my mother. It's no problem at all I promise, you don't need to apologize" I said re-assuring her

The second course of the meal was served after that and we continued to conversate with each other with My Girlfriend adding inputs here and there but she lets me and her parents do most of the talking.

Jennie's parents are really fun to talk to and they made me feel welcome.

There wasn't any dull moments with them, they didn't give out that air of arrogance, they're really humble and loving pair.

It's no wonder Jennie loves her Parents so much..I was nervous for nothing

:

After our Dinner, Mr. Kim told Jennie to show me around their house

"Jennie dear, why don't you give Lisa a tour of our House? Take her by the pool or the gaming room, play some billiards or arcade games or something"

"Good Idea Dad. Come on Love! You're gonna love the gaming room, we have retro arcade machines and air hockey and basketball hoops arcade! Let's have a little competition on who can score the most" Jennie said excitedly

"Take it easy on her Jennie-- forgive my daughter in advance Lisa, she tends to get physical when she loses" Mr. Kim said laughing

"That is if she wins against me, this girl has the worst luck, Dad. I'm not even worried about it, Come on Sweetheart let's go!" Jennie said as she pulls me away

"Honey wait, Th-Thank You for the lovely dinner Sir and Ma'am!" I said doing my best to bow and almost yelling because Jennie's really forceful.

NARRATOR'S POV

Jennie's Parents stayed in the Dining room after their daughter left with Lisa

"Hajoon, It seems like Jennie is quite taken with the girl, I've never seen her that happy before, what are we going to do? I'm worried she'll ruin our plans for our baby" Ji-Eun said to her husband

"Do not stress yourself out Darling, I know our daughter, she'll get bored with Lisa eventually, like every other boy she's been with, this is just a phase" Hajoon said re-assuring her wife

"Lisa, she's a nice girl, If it was in a different situation where she isn't in a romantic relationship with Jennie then I would certainly

approve of her but, not like this.. I want Jennie to have a normal Family, like how we raised her"

"I know My Love, just let Jennie have her fun with Lisa. She only has a few months left before she leaves for New York, she'll eventually forget about her, Our Daughter is still young, She'll meet new people who'll capture her interest, she's most likely just experimenting, curious even" Hajoon said doing his best to believe his own words

"I hope you're right Darling.. if not we're gonna have to do some drastic measures to separate them and I would hate to do that, I like Lisa as a person but not a partner for Jennie"

Ji-Eun is feeling bit hopeless because she sees it in her daughter eyes that She's really in-love with Lisa and she's afraid that her daughter will have the same attitude as her when it comes to love-- Fight for it until the end.

Her and her husband went through a lot of hardships before they got accepted back to Kim Family.

Ji-Eun didn't exactly come from an affluent family like Hajoon so she had to work 10x harder for her to be accepted and be a part of the Kim Clan.

She's really grateful when her Make-Up Company rised to the top and became a multi-billion dollar Empire but even then she knows in her heart that she still isn't good enough for them, She just decided to turn on a blind eye and focus on her Family

Her and Hajoon are already considered as '*Normal*' couple to the society but it was still hard for them be accepted by the Kims.

So with Jennie being in a same sex relationship and Lisa not coming

from a wealthy family, it will be a huge problem. She doesn't want her daughter to go through the same hell as her.

"I know Ji-Eun, I like her as well and I don't want to come to a point where we have to use force but I'm sure Jennie will eventually come to her senses.. just sit back Honey, we don't want to upset our daughter again" Hajoong said

Ji-Eun didn't say anything anymore and just agreed with her husband, she needs to trust him and trust that their daughter will make the right choice.

33.) Seoreunset

Title: The One

Artist: Kodaline

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Emotional Jennie

Night Before The National Championships

Daegu, South Korea

JENNIE'S POV

"Baby, you alright there? You've been a bit quiet since you got back..did you hurt yourself earlier when you were practicing with your team?" Tangelo asked worriedly while she rubs my cheek lightly

We're in My Hotel Room at the moment, I'm laying my head in between Tangelo's neck and upper chest as she wraps her arms protectively around me.

I just got back from our final practice for the National Championships, we only practiced for about 2 hours and then I let my team rest so they wouldn't get too exhausted for tomorrow's Competition.

"Hmmm..Yeah Love I'm alright, I didn't hurt myself don't worry.. I'm just a bit tired that's all" I said then I snuggled closer to my lover, yawning.

I do feel out of it lately, me being sad would be putting it lightly. After the Championships, there's really nothing to look forward to but Prom and Graduation.

The End of this school year is getting near and before I know it..

High school would be over

I'm feeling uneasy again.

Good thing my baby is here to calm me down.

"I'm really glad you're here My Love, You're helping me relax, I'm grateful for you and I appreciate your effort of being here to support me" I said looking up to her

She looked down at me smiling then she leaned in to give me a brief kiss on my lips

"I love you so much Jennie, I'll support everything you do as long as it doesn't hurt you or it's good for you"

"I love you too Tangelo, I don't know what I would do without you" I said cupping her cheek "I really want to be with you for the rest of my life.." I said smiling at her while looking deeply into her

eyes

She's the one, I just know it.

I don't want anyone else

I want Tangelo..

I need her..

I am nothing without her.

"I feel the same Jennie.." she said then she kissed the top of my head.

"We're going to be okay..right, love?" She then said linking our hands together squeezing mine like her life depends on it

I know what she's trying to imply, we've been doing our best to avoid this conversation ever since we got together..

I just nodded my head and gave her a reassuring smile, but in my mind, I'm a bit so-so with everything right now..

To be honest, the thought of being separated from my wife is what gives me the most anxiety to a point where I get panic attacks.

Tangelo isn't aware of it though.

I honestly don't know how to respond to her because even I don't know what's in store for us in the Future

I Love Tangelo So Much, Tangelo

She's all I know..

She occupies my mind 24/7, even when she's already beside me, She's all I could really think about.

She's My Addiction..

My Favorite Obsession.

All these worries started coming to me ever since we started our

relationship

Worries like

What are we going to be after graduation?

Is it going to be long distance for us? Or does she want to be in a relationship with someone who'll be physically there for her? I mean who wouldn't want that right?

What if she realizes that she doesn't want me anymore as soon as I go to New York because she doesn't want to be in a relationship with a person who's on the other side of the world

Am I just a phase to her? God! I hope not.. She's My Everything and I don't want to lose her to anyone..I won't be able to handle it..I would die if that happens..

Law school takes a really long time and I don't know if she's willing to wait for me..

Those worries and many more has been keeping me up all night. I have had nightmares about 'em and it only ever goes away when I'm sleeping next to Tangelo

I'm scared to death that she will completely forget about me after graduation.. I love her so much..

I can't live without her anymore

And then it came to me..

Plan A: I decided that I'm going to convince my parents to let me stay here in Seoul to study Law instead of going to New York, This is a 50/50 situation, it's either they agree or not

Actually, more on 99.9/o.1-99.9 being a Big No, my ass is going to New York no matter what and 0.1 meaning yes, they'll let me stay here in Korea so I can continue my relationship with Tangelo..

But in reality, everything is 100% ready, all I need to do is fly to the U.S. after graduation to get myself adjusted and start school during the Fall.

Plan B is that I'm going to convince (or force) Tangelo to come and live with me to New York until I'm done with school, I'll provide for her so she wouldn't need to worry about living expenses. Maybe she can even go to school there, she's smart and I know she'll be able to adapt.

My Parents really liked Lisa, They said it to me after we had dinner with them so I'm sure they wouldn't have a problem if I take Lisa with me to America, they know how Important my wife is to me, They Have to Agree.

But Jen, what about her Father? She can't just leave him behind.. A voice in my head popped out of nowhere

*But what about us huh? What about me? I can't do it without Lisa! She's my Life!--*I reasoned out with my conscience but of course, it has something smart to say

Jennie you won't always have your way, just because you want something to happen, doesn't mean it will or it needs to be done, That's the bitter reality... You can't just take Lisa away and bring her wherever you want, She has her whole life ahead of her, You're not giving her any choice at all

*So what?! She loves me! And I love her! I love Lisa more than anyone!--*I said feeling frustrated, I'm not even making any sense anymore

Jennie, Please, you know better, do the right thing, don't be selfish, her Father needs her-The pretend angel said but I still didn't want to listen to it

What about me? I need her too! No! I Really do not give a damn anymore! I Own Lisa! She's Mine!Mine!Mine! I don't care what you or anyone say! She's not leaving me! So shut the fuck up! I'm not doing the

*right thing! I'll do whatever the hell I want! I'm keeping her for myself!
Leave us the fuck alone!*

I'm sorry Mr. Manoban, I know I'm being selfish but Lisa belongs to me.. she already spent her first 18 years with you, that should be more than enough..she's spending the rest of her life with me now.

That's what she wants too anyway and Nobody will stand in the way of our love

I know it sounds insane that I thought of all those things but, My Logical reasoning(s) right now are being thrown out the window, all because I'm afraid that Lisa will leave me..

I guess Sana is right, when it comes to being in love, I'm Crazy. There's no point of denying it now, I'm embracing my darkness and I'm making it a part of me.

Just as long as I get to Keep Lisa..

Just as long as she stays by my side..

I was so caught up with my own thoughts that I didn't even realize Tangelo is already shaking me, looking at me with panic and fear present in her eyes

"Jennie?! Jennie-ya! Love! What the hell is going on? Love! Please relax! Breathe!" I heard Lisa say- tears streaming down her face

I'm having a panic attack in front of her, I guess it became a norm to me that I didn't even notice.

Earlier, I just said that she didn't know about my panic attacks but now, She's seeing it in full view times a hundred.

I'm shaking, hyperventilating and weeping like crazy.

I did my very best to focus on her, I closed my eyes and flooded my mind with images of Lisa.. her happy face, her smile, remembering her scent, when she says she loves me and wants to spend the rest of her life with me..

It took a while but I eventually calmed down

"Love.. what happened? Did you just have a Panic attack?" Lisa said as she wiped her tears then cupping both my cheeks

I looked at her intently and nodded

"Was it about the Nationals Baby? Please don't worry about it okay? I know you'll take home the trophy love" she said doing her best to smile

I wanted to tell her that the Nationals is the least of my worries right now, I wanted to tell her how scared I am of the future

How scared I am to be separated from her.. but it will just freak her out more.. this is the first time that she saw me having a mental breakdown and she's already losing it as well.

I think I started having these ever since we officially started our relationship and I've realized I've fallen for her deeper than I should which resulted in to me, developing a fear of losing her.. I wanted to hide this from Tangelo but I guess it's inevitable.

"Baby, do you want me to order room service? I can't let you out at this state, I'm worried about you" Tangelo offered still looking

worried

We were supposed to have dinner with my Family, Team and my friends but Lisa's right, It's best if I stay in our room for now and get some rest.

"Yes, Please love, I don't think I can get out like this either..Thank You baby, I'm sorry you had to witness that" I said to her

"Don't be sorry alright? That's what I'm here for Jennie, to comfort and care for you, I'm not here to judge you my love, I love you so much, always remember that" She said then she leaned in to give me a loving kiss on the lips..

*I can't let you go Lisa..
I just can't..
and best believe that I won't..
You're too Precious, too Special
I can't lose you, Nae Sarang..
I would die if that happens..*

:

:

THE NEXT DAY

"...Aannnnddd The Winner for this Year's National Cheerleading Competition is..The Pioneer Jets!"

We won! We won! We're the Champions! Four straight years of glory with my team! All the hard work paid off and I couldn't be more prouder!

"Cap! We won! We're the Champions!!!" My co-captain Seulgi said hugging me from behind then the whole team followed along and we all ended up going for a group hug, all of us crying tears of Happiness.

"I'm so proud of us! We made it Team! 4 years in a row bitches!" Jessi said and we all laughed

"Next Stop! Graduation! Woohooooo!!!" Dahyun said which made me tense but I caught myself and quickly recovered, pretending that I'm looking forward to it too when in Reality, it's the day that I'm dreading the most.

The Whole Team came up the stage and I let my co-captain do the acceptance speech since she was the one who came up with the winning routine and she was the one who worked hard the most, Seulgi deserves this Golden Moment, I'm glad I chose her as my co-captain.

My Parents and Friends also came and cheered us on, It was

supposed to be one of the Happiest Days of my life but all I could think about is graduation and Lisa..

Just thinking about being separated from Tangelo gives me so much heartache..

I need to convince my parents to let me stay here in Korea, I can't be away from Lisa

I can't or I'll go crazy

:

:

The Following Week- Thursday Night

Jennie's House

I decided that tonight, I'll talk to my parents and convince them to let me stay here in Korea, it's the only way I can be with Lisa, My Plan B isn't going to work, a few days of thinking finally gave me a clearer mind- Lisa is not going to come with me to America no matter how hard I beg her, She's not leaving her only Family here and I know that now.

But if I stay here at least I'll still get to be with My Love.

:

We're at the dining room about to finish supper, I cleared my throat, conditioning myself for what I'm about to do.

"Mom, Dad, I have something to tell you" I started

"Hmm? What is it dear? Is everything okay?" My mom asked worriedly

I shook my head and looked at both of them

"Mom, Dad, I don't want to go to New York anymore, I want to stay here in Seoul" I said boldly

"What non-sense are you talking about now Jennie? What do you mean you don't want to go to New York?" My Father said already sounding upset

"Dad, I don't want to attend Law School there anymore, I want to stay and continue my studies here in South Korea instead, this Country has a lot of good schools, I'm sure if you just talk to them and they see my grades they'll consider me for a late enrollm--" I tried giving my father an option but he cut me off

"Stop! Where is this coming from Jennie?!" My Father said raising his voice

"Dad I don't want to leave anymore! I want to stay here!" I repeated myself

"And why the sudden change of heart?! Tell me, is it Lisa?!" He asked with his fists clenched

"Yes! Okay?! Yes! I want to stay because I don't want to leave Lisa! I want to be with her Dad!" I answered truthfully, there's no point of denying it

"Jennie-ya it's already planned out, you can't just change your mind just because of one person" My Mother said doing her best to be calm interrupting My Dad and I's heated argument

"She's not JUST a person mom! I love her! Please just let me stay here with her in Korea, I beg you" I said to them while tears started falling from my eyes but my Mom wasn't having it either

"Jennie please be reasonable dear and think about what you're giving up here.. this is your future we're talking about, you'll meet new people and you'll forget about Lisa-"

"How could you even say that Mom! You're disregarding my feelings! I'm not going to New York! I've made up my mind!" I said feeling angry

"It's not up to you Jennie! We're already doing you a huge favor by letting you be with that Girl and this is how you repay us?! You better stop disrespecting your mother and I before I do something you'll regret!" My Father said threatening me but I didn't budge

"Dad No! I love Her! I don't want to be away from her! please I'll do anythi--"

My Father slammed his hands on the dining table hard and stood up abruptly from his chair

"Enough Jennie! I'm ending this conversation! You're going to New York and that's Final!" He said furiously then he tossed the table napkin on our table harshly and walked out

I turned to my mother hoping that she'll be on my side "Mom! Tell Dad he's being unreasonable!"

"Honey Please Think about what you're asking of us.. do not ruin your future" My pleaded but I don't want to hear any of it anymore

"Ruin my future?! I did everything you guys asked me to, I maintained my grades, I stayed on Top and now that I'm asking you to do one thing that I really want all of a sudden I'm ruining my future?!"

"Honey, Please Listen, we love you, we want what's best for you-" my mother continued but I cut her off.

I've had enough of this!

"If you really love me then listen to what I'm trying to tell you Mom! what's best for me is to be with Lisa! She's what I want! I need her!"

"I'm afraid we can't give you what you want this time Jennie, we're standing our ground, you're going to NYU wether you like it or not" she said with a stern voice this time

"You guys are so fucking unfair! I hate this! I'm never going to forgive you both if you ever separate me from Lisa!" I yelled then I stood up running away from my mom

:

I ran up to my room and locked myself in

This is such bullshit! They're acting like Lisa and I's relationship is going to be a burden for them!

I can't deal with this! They're being so selfish! I just want to be with the person I love the most! is that so wrong?! I'm not asking for too much here!

I should've just slept over at Lisa's house, I should've just stayed with her tonight.

I'm not going to let them take me away from her..

Lalisa...

I need to tie her down. I need to make sure that she's not going anywhere..

..That she's going to be MINE whatever happens.

:

:

That Same Night

11:00 PM

I drove to my cousin's place to think, as much as I want to go to Tangelo's place and tell her about my worries, I figured that she wouldn't be ready just yet.. I can't let her see my panicked state again, I need to figure out what I need to do first.

Next week is our Spring break and it's her birthday. I plan on spending time with her as much possible.

I didn't tell Tangelo about me going to Jisoo's place, she might suspect something. I just texted her that I'm going to sleep early and that I'll just see her tomorrow, good thing she bought it.

15 minutes of driving later and I finally arrived at Jisoo's place

"Chu! Open up!" I said with a bit of a loud voice while knocking desperately at her door

I knocked for about a minute before she finally answered

"Jendeuki what the hell do you want?! Why are you coming here unannounced?! You're so rude I swear!" My cousin said annoyed

with her eyes half open

"Jisoo!" I said crying then I hugged her

"Whoa! Jendeuki? What happened?" My cousin asked worriedly this time as she hugs me back "let's go inside, come in" she said breaking off our hug then she pulled me inside

"Sit down, why are you crying? did you and Lisa get into a fight?" Jisoo asked

"N-no Chu, but it's definitely about Lisa" I took a deep breath and spoke up again "Chu, I talked to my parents and I told them I don't want to go to New York anymore" I said to my cousin

"And I'm guessing the conversation didn't go well?" She said

"No, Me and my Parents got into a heated argument. They wanted me to push through our original plan but I don't want to do it anymore, I can't- I don't want to leave Lisa Chu.." I said sobbing covering my face with my hands

I don't really know what to do anymore, I just needed someone to vent out my frustrations and my anger

"Jennie.. I understand why you're upset but you gotta see it through your parents point of view as well.. I mean you deciding out of nowhere that you don't want to go to NYU anymore is something a bit random for them of course they'll react the way they did.."

I already know what she's telling me, My Parents and I clashed, I let my emotions get the best of me so of course that triggered them.

"Chu.. Lisa.. what about Lisa? What if she forgets about me? What if she gets into another relationship when I leave?" I asked my cousin "I don't want that to happen.. I don't think I'll be able to handle that.."

"I honestly don't know what to tell you Jendeuki.. but I'll do my best to help you, whatever you need, just let me know.." Jisoo said with a sad tone

"Chu, I want to marry her" I said seriously

My cousin went wide eyed and said "M-marry her? Are you sure about that Jennie? You've only been going out for less than 3 months.. think about what you're going to get yourself into Jen, that's a big commitment"

"I know that and I'm ready" I said very sure of myself

"What about Lisa? Is she ready? Just cos you want to marry her doesn't mean she's gonna want the same thing, she has her own mind Jennie, you can't rush these things, You should know better" Jisoo said sounding very skeptical which irritates me, she's not being supportive right now.

"I thought you said you were gonna help me?! You're not doing a very good job at it FYI" I said rolling my eyes at her

"That's not fair Jendeuki, how about you sleep on it first, you're tired and emotional right now, maybe tomorrow you'll see things a little differently"

"Are you against me marrying Lisa too?" I asked her

"Honestly, No, but the timing just isn't right Jennie..come on, get some rest first and let's talk about this again when you're a bit more calm and collected" Jisoo answered, she seems sincere about it.

I just stayed quiet and nodded, I didn't want to discuss marriage to Lisa with my cousin anymore. I've already made up my mind anyway, I'm going to make Tangelo marry me one way or another. right now, it's the only way I know to make sure that her and I's relationship will be secure, hopefully it won't take a lot of convincing.

My cousin offered me a fresh pair of clothes and new pair of underwear, I'm not planning on coming home tonight, I'm just going to borrow uniform from Her, I really don't want to go to school tomorrow but Lisa might get worried and I want to see her too anyway, she's the only one who can calm me down.

Lisa is the one for me. She's Destined to be with me.

I've never been this sure in my entire life, I only want her

My Tangelo.

It's her and I

Forever and Always.

34.) Seoreunnet

Title: Never Stop (Wedding Version)

Artist: SafetySuit

https://youtu.be/xa_H0XLCXA4

A/N: CHAPTER WITH TIME SKIPS ALL THE WAY TO THEIR GRADUATION

LISA'S POV

"Baby, do you have a passport?" Jennie asked as we're watching another home improvement show on television.

I'm laying on the couch with Jennie snuggled close to me, her head resting on my chest.

"Huh? Oh yeah, I do love" I answered slightly distracted while I stroke her hair

"Is it current?" She asked again, propping up her head to look at me

"Yes love, I renewed it a year ago I think? Why? What's up?" I said smiling at her

"Well, I was thinking.. maybe we should go somewhere, like out of the country"

"Where do you want to go love?"

"How about.. Australia, have you been there before?"

"Australia huh? And no not yet, I've only ever been to Thailand, when do you want to go Jen?"

"This coming Tuesday? It's our Spring break and it's your birthday week so an overseas trip would be good, right?" She said sounding hopeful

"Oh, but..that's so sudden love.. I don't know if Miss Momo would allow me to go.." I said hesitantly.

Miss Momo already gave me permission to accompany Jennie to her cheer competition, not to mention she gave me two weeks off because of that "Jimin incident" So I'm not sure asking for another week off would be such a great idea, I'm already pushing it.

"I already asked her, she said yes"

"Y-You did huh? She was cool with it?"

"Yeah.. it took a lot of begging though, if you don't believe me you can text her about it just to make sure"

"No, I do believe you baby" I said then I gave her a quick kiss on the lips

She smiled happily and she kissed my cheek

"Jennie-ya, the thing is since this is last minute, it's going to be expensive and-"

"Don't worry about it baby, everything's booked already, Our Flight, The Hotels, I even did our Itinerary, It's going to be super fun!" Jennie said excitedly

"Aww my wife is so efficient" I blurted out.

This is the first time I called Jennie that. I felt her tense under me which made me panic, I don't know what came over me

"Aaahhhh-Jen-Jennie! I didn't mean to-Oh God! I'm so sorry, please don't freak out okay? It was a spur of the moment and-"

Jennie giggled at my rumbling

"Tangelo! Hey! Relax.. it's fine, I'm totally okay with you calling me your wife.. I don't mind at all.."

"You don't?" I asked her

She smiled and shook her head 'No'

"I would love for us to have that label.. maybe in the near future? What do you say?"

"What do you mean, Love?" I asked knitting my eyebrows

"Okay, let's say.. Maybe after graduation or even before graduation we get married..would you want that?" She asked looking at me intently

"I mean.. to be honest, I'm not really sure, aren't we a little too young to get married though? We need to secure our future first before anything.." I answered truthfully

"But.. would you want to get married, to me?" She asked again

"Yes, of course" I answered confidently and without any hesitation.

There's no doubt in my mind that I want to be with this woman for the rest of my life.

Even though we've only been dating for a couple of months, I know that she's the one for me.

Jennie seems to be satisfied with my answer because she leaned in giving me a loving and passionate kiss

"Lalisa.. I love you.. I really really love you.. do you understand?" Jennie said with so much sincerity in her voice

I nodded and cupped her cheek

"And I really really really love you more Jennie.. It's you and I, Forever and Always, My Love.."

For some reason, I'm feeling a lot of emotions tonight.

Maybe because it's the way Jennie makes me feel.

I'm so in love with her and I know she feels the same way.

I can't live without My Jennie

I'm nothing without her.

"Jennie, did you want to get married?"

"I do Tangelo, I'm not just asking randomly"

"**giggle** Ok. So Where's my ring?"

She rolled her eyes and pinched my cheek lightly

"I'm working on it. I thought you said we're too young for marriage and now you're eager to get an engagement ring?" She said laughing softly

"You know me, sometimes I change my mind about things"

"What about our relationship? Are you gonna change your mind about us after graduation?" She asked. She seems uneasy for some reason

"Of course not, I'm not about to change my mind about us Jennie, you're the best thing that's ever happened to me."

"Do you really mean that, Tangelo?"

"I do, Love" I answered

"Lisa, I'm serious about you, I've never imagined my future with anyone else except for you. Granted that I'm young and all but.. Tangelo, I do want to marry you, and If I'm honest, I want to do it soon" Jennie said.

I looked deep into her eyes and there was no hint of doubt in them

"How soon?" I asked her

"This coming week" She answered right away

"Where at? I'm pretty sure same-sex marriage in South Korea isn't legal"

"It's legal in Australia" Jennie said.

I gave her a playful look and a smirk which caused her to raised an

eyebrow

"What? Why are you giving me that look?" She asked irritated

"Ahhh So that's your plan isn't it? Why didn't you just say so?" I said wiggling my eyebrows then I hugged her tight

"What? Go straight to the point" Jennie said rolling her eyes at me

"You don't want to take me to Australia for my birthday, you want to take me there because you want to marry me huh? Sneaky sneaky.." I teased her

Jennie groaned in annoyance and slapped my face playfully

"Yah! I just said I'm serious about you, why are you taking it as a joke?!"

"Owwwiee.. I was just kidding.." I said pouting

"Not everything is a joke Tangelo! Do you see me laughing?"

"Love, Hey.. I'm sorry okay? You're right.. I shouldn't have joked about it.. forgive me" I said to her. I really do feel bad

She closed her eyes and took a deep breath and looked at me like she's about to say something that will change our lives forever

"Tangelo, Let's get married. I want to marry you"

I froze and I couldn't give her an answer right away. To be honest, I have all these conflicting feelings and thoughts

Me and her are a little too young

We're not even high school graduates yet

How am I supposed to meet her needs?

What would her parents say?

"Jennie, listen to me and don't take this the wrong way but, If we do get married, then what? I can't really provide for you yet, I don't have a stable job, we haven't graduated high school yet, and---"

"After Graduation then, how about that? let's get married after we graduate Jagi" She said still insisting about us being committed

"Jagi, I'm sorry but why are you rushing to get married anyway? how are you so sure that I'm the one you really want?"

"I just.. know, okay? I know in my heart that's it's you who I want. I thought you said you feel the same Tangelo? or you're just saying that because you're feeling pressured? be honest with me, I want to know where I stand in your life"

"Jennie it's not like that okay? I am sure about you, it's just that.. the things that you're used to.. I can't really promise that I can deliver.."

"I don't care about those things.. I want us, I want you, you're all I need, Lisa.. nothing else.. as long as I have you.. I'll be alright"

"If that's the case then I think it's about time we talk about you leaving this country right after we graduate." I paused then exhaled sharply and continued

"Okay, let's say we do get married then what? I'm gonna be left alone here while you study in the U.S. for..I don't know.. eight or ten years? You're going to meet a lot of people Jennie. I don't really want to sound insecure but let's face it, there are people who are way more attractive and has more interesting personality than me, how can I be sure you won't leave me for them?"

"Don't you think I have the same worries Lisa? that's why I want us

get married, and besides.. I'm not trying to go to New York anymore.."

"What? Why? I thought you wanted to be a lawyer, that's your dream" I said a bit surprised

"Yes but I can still be a lawyer if I stay here"

"Well, what did your parents say?"

"They're against me staying here.."

"See? There you go.. you can't just give up your dream career and school, Jennie"

"Let's runaway, Lisa" Jennie said totally ignoring what I just told her

"What?!" I exclaimed

Okay, this is getting more and more ridiculous..

"Lisa, My Parents.. they want me to be separated from you---I don't want that, I don't know what I would do without you, so let's runaway and leave everything behind, My Love" Jennie said then she started crying

"Jennie.."

"Lisa.. I love you so much, it kills me just thinking about being away from you.. I can't do it.."

Her parents wants us to break up? But they seem to approve of our relationship last time I had dinner with them

Maybe they were just being polite and didn't want to be rude..

I don't want to break up with Jennie..I can't do it either

Maybe getting married IS the only way to make sure her and I will stay together, forever

Even if it means we're going to be in a long distance relationship, at least we both have something to hold on to..

"Okay, Let's do it." I said to her.

She's giving me a look like she couldn't believe what she's hearing so I repeated myself to make myself clear

"Let's get married in Australia, Jennie"

I don't know where this decision is going to take us but, all I know is that I love her, and I don't ever want us to break up.

Jennie.. She's My Life

Nobody's gonna take her away from me

I'm not going to let them take my baby!

JENNIE'S POV

It's Sunday Night and I decided to stay in my house tonight and speak to my parents again.

I'm going to have to apologize to them about my behavior the other day because if I don't, it's just going to make things worse for Lisa and I

Lisa agreed for us to get married in Australia and I couldn't be any more happier about it but I need to get my parent's trust first and make them think that I'm pushing through our plans for me to leave Korea and study in New York.

:
:

The three of us are in the dining room eating our dinner. The environment is so tense and awkward. I'm not really used to this kind of treatment my parents are giving me right now but I need to suck it up if I want my plan to be successful.

I'm taking my chances here but if my acting is good and convincing enough then I shouldn't have a problem executing it.

"Mom.. Dad.. I want to apologize for how I behaved last time..I didn't mean what I said when I told you that I want to stay here, I don't want to give up my dream of becoming a lawyer and give up my dream school.. I was just caught up in the moment.." I said to them.

They both gave me a skeptical look, but their facial expression eventually softened, they've forgiven me, their faces are a dead give away.

Nice, this is easier than I thought.

They didn't say anything so I continued

"I decided to push through our plan and leave for New York as soon as I graduate from Pioneer" I said which made them smile

"Oh that's wonderful honey! we knew you're going to come to your senses!" My mom said happily, she stood up from her chair and gave me a hug

"Honey, isn't that nice, our daughter is going to become a lawyer just like you" She then said standing by my dad's side putting her hand on his shoulder, My Father nodded and smiled at her.

He looked at me and held my hand

"That's great news baby.. and listen, we also want to apologize as well, we want to make ourselves clear, your mother and I have nothing against Lisa.. it's just that---"

Yeah right Dad, nothing against Lisa huh? but you want us to break up?

"---we're really happy you made the right decision Jennie" He said finishing his speech.

I really didn't hear the rest of it, so I just nodded and gave him a tight lip smile

"but I need a favor to ask of you guys" I said to them with a serious tone

"Hmm.. what is it dear?" My mother asked sitting back to her chair

"I want you guys to leave Lisa and I alone. I want to spend my last months with her without any interruptions from the both of you, I only have less than 3 months with her and I want it to be peaceful"

They both looked at each other. My mom was about to say something, probably protest but my dad shook his head and gave her a stern look.

He turned his attention back to me as he sighed deeply

"Fine dear, do whatever you want, just keep your end of the bargain alright?" My father said as he gave me his warm, loving smile.

I knew I can get him to say yes, I'm not a Daddy's girl for nothing.

"Ok then, it's a deal. Leave us alone for the rest of the school year and I'll go to New York" I said while I did one clap then I continued eating

The rest of the night went well for the three of us, they seem to have bought my acting which is good, but I still need to be cautious.

I need to talk to Lisa and tell her to keep our marriage a secret first.

I know my dad, he's going to do everything in his power to get what he wants.

Too bad for him, I got that same attitude.

:
:

SYDNEY, AUSTRALIA

After 10 hours of Plane ride, We finally arrived in Australia.

It's Tangelo's birthday today and I feel bad because she spent the first 10 hours of it on the plane but she re-assured me that it's okay because it's a first for her and that makes it special.

She's such an understanding duckie, I'm going to be one lucky wife.

Tangelo and I decided to get married on April 1st--Sunday at the end of our trip.

Marriage in Australia requires people who wants to get married to give an authorized marriage celebrant at least 1 month and no more than 18 months before their wedding

We don't have that kind of time so I had to pull some strings and give up a huge chunk of my saved up allowance for this to work but it's going to be worth it.

I'm about to become Tangelo's wife, legally, what's money compared to that?

I also had to ask Rosé to help me since she knows a thing or two about these things which I find a bit weird but oh well, I'm not complaining and I'm not about to question her.

Rose's the only one who knows about Tangelo and I getting married. I figured the less people who know, the better.

She was..how do I say this.. She wasn't against me marrying

Tangelo but she was worried because I'm marrying young.

It took a lot of tears from me for her to finally say yes and agree to help me with all the last minute paperwork to make things easier for my future wife and I. She also let me stay in one of their Family's hotels---The Sydney Suite to be exact, she says it's her 'gift' to Tangelo and I.

:
:

PARK HYATT HOTEL- SYDNEY

"Whoa! the view is amazing honey! you can see the ocean and Sydney Opera House from here! oh wow and look at the ocean baby!" Tangelo said in awe

I approached her and hugged her from behind

"You're right, the view is gorgeous.. but, you're the most beautiful view in my opinion" I said then I kissed her shoulder.

She turned around to face me and gave me a tight hug and a kiss on the cheek

"That's really smooth and corny, honey. You're really trying to get in my pants tonight huh?" She said jokingly and I played along with her

"Yep. and I'm also trying to get married to you, is it working?" I asked her with a pout

"You don't even need to try Love, you already got me" Tangelo said leaning in to give me a kiss full of love

"Mmmm.. I love you so much wifey.." she said in a daze

"I love you too, Tangelo" I said cupping her cheek

"I got a question for you, Jen"

"Hmm? what is it?" I asked her

She didn't answer me, but instead, she pulled away from our hug and started kneeling down on one knee in front of me while she takes out a little red box from her pocket

"Oh My God.." I whispered to myself

"Jennie, I'm not really sure what a person should say when they're proposing but uhm.. I love you, you changed my life for the better and you're the biggest blessing that God gave to me.. I want to spend the rest of my life with you, My Love .. so will you make me the happiest human being in the world and become my wife?"

Tears started streaming down my face, I was going to propose to her tonight but her doing this really caught me off guard

"Uhm Jennie..? This is getting kind of awkward.. so uh..will you.. marry me?" she asked again, I took both of her hands and motioned her to stand up.

I hugged her tight and started bawling my eyes out

"Hey hey.. It's alright.. I thought you said you wanted to marry me? Is it really so bad that I asked?" She said jokingly but I felt a hint of nervousness in her voice

I pulled away and gave her a chaste kiss on the lips

"Yes, I'll marry you, Tangelo, I love you!" I said to her. I saw her face relaxed and she breathed out a sigh of relief

"Whew.. glad that's over, I really thought you'd say No, I was ready to fly back to Korea and hide somewhere in Jeju Island" She said laughing, she then took out the ring from the box and put it on my left ring finger.

"There" She said smiling proudly "Sorry it's not the a really fancy ring, that's all I could afford but my heart is in it"

"Love please, don't be sorry, It's perfect!" I said looking at the princess cut diamond ring full of admiration.

"I was planning to get down on one knee and I was going to ask you to marry me but.. you beat me to it" I said to her, then I took out a blue box from my jacket and opened it in front of her

"Let me get down on one knee for you too.." I said but she stopped me

"You don't need to do that! I'll marry you Jennie!" she said excitedly

I giggled and shook my head, I didn't listen to her, I got down on one knee anyway

"Tangelo, I already know the answer but.. okay, here it goes" I said closing my eyes taking a deep breath, I'm feeling nervous all of a sudden

"Lalisa.. will you give me the greatest honor and be my wife?" I asked her, I was going to say more but my nerves got to me

"***smile*** I'll marry you, Jennie"

I looked up to her with the biggest smile on my face. I then took her left hand and slid the ring on her left ring finger

She helped me stand up then she snaked her arms around my waist pulling me closer to her

"I love you, Mrs. Manoban" She said, it made me happy hearing her say that, but I think I'll be happier if it was the other way around.

"Okay, No. You and I both know that I'm the one who wears the pants in this relationship, You're going to be Mrs. Kim, Mrs. Kim" I said giving her a suggestive grin

She playfully rolled her eyes and let out an exaggerated sigh

"Fine, you're the Daddy, Jennie"

"Damn right I am" I said cockily

She leaned in and whispered to my ear, holding on to my waist possessively "Yes you are.. but in the bedroom.." she paused and gave my ear a small lick "I'M THE DADDY.." she said which gave me chills and goosebumps.

The things she just said turned me on, I wanted her to take me right there and then

My wish got granted right away

She scooped me up and carried me bridal style and took me to the bedroom.

:
:

Tangelo laid me down gently on the bed giving me a playful smirk

"I'll consider this as a birthday gift to myself" she said giving me a sexy grin and then starts undressing herself

I propped myself up using my elbows to get a better view of what

she's doing

She kicked off her heels and then started taking off her pants as fast as she could and then her shirt, I was biting my lip hard trying so hard to resist to urge to jump on her

She's now only wearing her black bra and her black panties-- then she went on top of me kissing my lips hungrily

"Mmmmmm..." she moaned, I took off my jacket and threw it somewhere on the floor, she started going for my right ear and then moved on my neck

I pushed her away for a second, she gave me a confused look but I ignored her and started stripping-- taking off my shirt, she got the message and she helped me take off my heels and then my pants

She then pushed me further up the bed, taking off my bra and my panties in record time

"Mmmm.. Lalisa, you too.." I said then I unhooked her bra then she slid off of her panties.

She started sucking lightly on my neck while she cupped my left breast massaging and pinching it lightly between her thumb and index finger

Lisa went back to my lips kissing me passionately, sticking in her tongue inside my mouth, tasting me while still holding on to my breast, I snaked my arms around her neck and wrapped my legs around her waist possessively

You're Mine..

Mine.

She pulled away from our kiss and then she started going down on the valley of my breasts
She went for my left breast first, attacking it with her lips, sucking while moaning at the same time

"Aaahhh fuuck.. Lalisa.." I said while I pushed her head more, urging her to suck harder, she complied right away and then she moved to my right breast giving it the same attention as she did to my other one.

She's so fucking good at this.. fuck, I can feel myself dripping already

While she's sucking on my titties, she slid down her right hand down my pussy.. she pressed her middle finger lightly in between my labias

"Aaaaaaahhh.." I moaned as my eyes rolled back, she's barely touching me. My body is too honest with Lisa, it knows how to respond to her touch

She got off my breasts and whispered on my lips seductively

"Mmmm..you're so wet for me darling..I haven't even done anything yet.." Lisa said while she continues to rub on my clit

She then took out her hand on my private area, I almost whined at the lost of contact but then she held out the hand that she touched me with and put it on my lips

"Open your mouth and suck on it.." she commanded and I did what she told me to do

I closed my eyes and opened my mouth, she put in her index and

middle finger inside then I started bobbing my head, licking it, cleaning it up for her, I then opened my eyes, making sure I make a sexy eye contact with her while I do my deed.

"Fuuccckkk Jen.." Lisa said while looking at me with half lidded eyes, she's really turned on with what I'm doing it, if she had a dick, it would be fully erected and it's about ready to explode at any moment

She took out her fingers from my mouth and she started kissing my lips aggressively

"You taste so fucking good, my love" she said then without wasting any more time, she went down on me, in between my legs

"Spread your legs for me baby" she said and I obeyed right away

She started licking on my thighs first which made me moan loudly

Damn, I'm acting like she haven't touched me for a week.. every time we make love, she gets more passionate and she's really into it which excites me, it's always a different experience with her but all in a very good way.

After she licks my thighs, she brushed off her nose on my pussy, sniffing it, inhaling my scent like it's our first time, she then licked my slit ever so slowly from bottom to top

"Oooooohhh shiittt! Fuckkk" I said holding on to the bed sheets

She's eating me out like she hasn't tasted me for a while, she licks and she's sucking me at the same time like my pussy is the most luxurious thing her tongue ever licked on.

"Fuckk.. Honey that feels so great.. don't stop...ahhhh.." I said wreathing in pleasure, my lower lip feels like it's about to bleed by how hard I'm biting it

Lisa then fingered me.. she entered me with her index and middle finger slowly, teasing me while she continues to suck on my clit

"Shit! Lisa.. fuck me baby.. please.." I said desperately, I felt her teasing smile in between my legs, if she isn't giving me so much pleasure right now I would've smacked her.

"Fuck me now you stupid! Stop giving me a hard time--ahhhhh!!" I said then out of nowhere, her pace started getting faster, My breasts are bouncing up and down by how hard she's fingering me

She's fucking me with her fingers and her tongue, I'm so wet that she can actually drink off of me, I can hear slurping on my pussy quenching her thirst

I can feel the pressure building up in my stomach and my bladder..I want to make this last longer but she's not making it easy

"Aaaaaah.. love.. I..aahhhh..."

She continues to pound in me hard and fast and before I know it.. I blew up on her, cumming in her mouth as she continuously lick me, sucking me dry.

Lisa is still inside me, she continues to eat me as I ride out my orgasm..

I, on the other hand is desperately trying to catch my breath, my chest rising and falling uncontrollably.. I closed my eyes and concentrated on my breathing..

Lisa came back up and wrapped me in her arms protectively kissing my forehead

"Breathe.. My Love" she said as she strokes my hair, her voice calms me down and my breathing finally went back to normal

"Baby, It's your birthday..let me return the favor.." I said feeling bad

"You don't have to love..you, letting out those sexy moans, trust me you've returned the favor tenfold..." she said then she tilted my chin up with her index finger to kiss my lips.

"I love you so much wifey.." she said

"I love you too wifey.. and Happy Birthday"

:
:

Days went by and we spent Lisa's birthday week going on road trips and to some of the most famous tourists spots here in Sydney and it's neighboring cities

And on April 1st-- Sunday Afternoon, Manoban, Lalisa officially became **Kim, Lalisa**.

We finally got married!

I thought people were exaggerating when they say that the day they got married is one of the happiest days of their lives but now, I can totally relate.

"Lalisa, Finally, You're officially mine, forever and ever" I said to her holding her hand as we walk out the city hall

"I've always been yours Jennie, I love you, Yeobo" She said making my heart flutter

"Hmm Yeobo huh? I like the sound of that, my love.." I said and she smiled at me.

Lalisa and I decided to keep our marriage on the low for now until we graduate high school.

We're planning on telling her Papa about us being married and move in a remote province in Korea or maybe to another country.

It's going to be hard but anywhere is fine as long as I'm with her.

Tangelo is my home now..

She belongs to me..

And All of me belongs to her..

LISA'S POV

It's been two and a half months since Jennie and I got married in Sydney, nobody really knows about it except for her friend Rosé

and My Father.

Papa was really shock when he first knew about it.

He wasn't speaking to me for the first two weeks after we told him about our marriage but he eventually came around and told me that he's happy for Jennie and I, although he did confess that he didn't get mad at us because we're two girls who got married young, he just felt bad because he felt left out.

But when Jennie and I explained the situation we're in, he understood and our relationship went back to normal. He also welcomed Jennie to our family with open arms.

I'm really happy being married to The Love of My Life. She's the best wife anyone could ever ask for. She takes really good care of me---She cooks for me, does my laundry then she folds them, She helps me clean up our apartment, gives me awesome massages and many more.

I told her that she didn't need to do all of that but she insisted on it because she said she wants to be a responsible and good wife.

I never would've imagined Jennie Kim doing all those things for me, I'm so blessed to have her.

Not only is she beautiful inside and out, She's also sexy as hell and charismatic as fuck and most of all, She loves me with all her heart.

We'll be graduating in a week, I've been picking up a lot of hours from work and Jennie also started working part time at a local restaurant a week after we got married because we're trying to save as much money as we can because after we graduate, we're moving

somewhere far.

We're almost at our goal with our savings since Jennie still has money from her saved up allowance over the years.

She cashed all of it out and we're keeping it in a safety box in my room because if she keeps it in a bank, Her parents will most likely be able to track her.

My wife agreed to take My Papa with us, I couldn't leave him alone by himself. I had to beg my father though, He didn't want to leave our apartment since it holds too many memories but he caved in after I cried a lot of tears.

I know I'm being selfish to my papa because I'm taking him away from his comfort zone but I do not want to constantly worry about him.

:
:
:

1 WEEK LATER

Graduation Day Is finally here--- After the ceremony, we'll proceed to our plan and go to a remote province.

I'm hoping it would work because we really don't have any '*Plan B*' right now

My wife will meet my Papa and I on midnight at a local Train Station and we'll start a new chapter of our lives together.

I'm honestly scared of what we're about to do, we're giving up a lot here especially her, but as long we're together, we know we'll be alright.

6:00 PM Gungdung-i

>I can't wait to see you later Yeobo, don't forget to bring our cash or we'll starve lol

6:01 PM

>Haha I won't forget Yeobo, I love you. I can't wait to see you too

6:03 PM Gungdung-i

>Congratulations by the way, you made it through high school, I'm a proud wife. I love you 🥰❤️👍👍

6:04 PM

>Believe me I'm the Prouder wife. Congratulations on being the class Salutatorian Honey. Such a smarty baby 👍👍

6:05 PM Gungdung-i

>Aww I'm blushing. Anyways see you later at midnight. I love you so much Yeobo. Don't trip ok? you don't want to look stupid in front of all these people, don't embarrass me lol kidding.

I rolled my eyes at her response

6:07 PM

>I won't, don't choke on your speech later, you don't want to look like an idiot in front of the crowd, you're a Kim after all, don't embarrass your ancestors 🙄

06:08 PM Gungdung-i

>Oh wow, the audacity of this girl. I want a divorce.

6:10 PM

>Geeez! Divorce already? I love you too much, you're not going anywhere Jennie 👍

6:11 PM Gungdung-i

>I'm kidding, it's You and I Forever. I love you. Ttyl. Mwaaahh



Jennie..

That's Right.

It's Her and I

Forever.

:
:
:

12:45 AM Train Terminal

"Lalisa, did you text Jennie? The train will leave soon dear, the next departure will be at 6 in the morning" My papa said calmly

"Yes papa I texted her, I even called her more than 10 times but she's not answering" I said feeling a bit anxious

Jennie-ya, where are you??

I tried calling her again but this time, her phone brought me directly to her voicemail

Did she just turn off her phone?

1:30 AM

The train that we're supposed to be on left about 30 minutes ago but Jennie still didn't show up

Maybe she's just running a bit late?

She does have a lot of clothes, maybe she's just double checking if she left something important

2:50 AM

Maybe she fell asleep? She did say that her family is going to throw her and her cousin a big party.

She's probably exhausted, I'm sure she'll call me when she wakes up

5:39 AM

I bought us 3 tickets for the next train, Jennie should be on her way here.

She's not going to leave me hanging right?

I mean I'm her wife now, I'm not just her girlfriend anymore..

She's not going to do that..

7:42 AM

We missed the train again and My papa has been sleepless and his tired.

I wanted to tell him to go home and we'll just pick him up when Jennie comes but he didn't want to leave me by myself.

Jennie is really pissing me off now! She hasn't called or texted me.

What's the matter with her?!

Was she just playing with me?!

Is this all just a big prank?!

12:50 PM

My papa and I decided to just go home.

I'm so mad at Jennie!

Why did she do this to us?!

To me?!

Was it all just a big lie?!

We had a freaking ceremony and all!

We signed papers for goodness sakes!

2 WEEKS LATER

I have been crying for days now.

Jennie hasn't tried to contact me at all---Not even a single text.

Nothing!

Did I do something wrong?

Where could she be?

Doesn't she love me anymore?!

Why didn't she show up at the Train Station?!

3 MONTHS LATER

Still no Jennie..

I haven't been sleeping and eating right. I've just been cooped up in my room and I don't want to see anyone..

I don't want to talk to anyone!!

I just want to see my wife!

I need to see her..

Jennie, Please come back to me, love..

Please save me from this misery..

I love you, Jennie..

Please...

To Be Continued...

A/N: I mean.. They DID get Married on April Fools Day So...
lolol

Thanks for Reading, Voting and Commenting--I really appreciate it, it shows me that I'm doing something right with the story even though the things that I write isn't accurate lol.

I have no idea about the legality of marriage in Australia, I just did some research and I'm not sure if the information that I read were legit and reliable but reminder again, this is a FAN FICTION--just go with it.

A New Chapter in their Lives is about to begin.

35.) Seoreundaseot

Title: Hello (Cover)

Artist: Leroy Sanchez

<https://youtu.be/vlZ9kjCrGJw>

A/N: Reminder (Again) This is *JUST A STORY*, If this story causes too much stress (or anger) to some of you then I advice for you to not continue reading, your mental health is important. Peace

8 YEARS LATER...

Seoul, South Korea

LISA'S POV

"Lisa-chan! is the proposal ready for our builder?" Sana asked

"Yes Sana-chan, I finished it Yesterday, hopefully they'll say yes" I said a bit nervous

"Don't worry, I'm sure they will, you're one of the best architects here in Seoul" Sana said proudly

I blushed and didn't say anything anymore

"So who are you meeting with anyway? I forgot to ask sorry, I was so busy with everything else I-"

"Oh, not a meeting, I'm doing a video call with the CEO of Gold Constructions, they're based in New York" Sana chan said which made me a bit queasy.

New York..

Hearing that place reminds me of my horrible past.. about a horrible person, but I shook it off.

I haven't thought about her for a while now and I'm not about to start again.

"Who's the CEO anyway?" I asked, for some reason, I got curious

"I think her name is Jane Park"

"Ahhh.. anyways how are things going with you and Tzuyu?"

"Oh you know, still working things out, you know when you've been together with someone for so long you tend to.. I don't know..and especially now that we're LDR" Sana said sounding a bit sad

"I see.. Sana-chan, I'm just here okay? I won't judge, whatever it is, we can talk about it.. I can be your outlet." I said to her, she just gave me a tight lip and nodded

Her and Tzuyu have been having problems ever since Tzuyu decided to go back to Taiwan and focus with their Family business, they've been in a long distance relationship for about a year now and Sana is still having a hard time adjusting.

Sana flies back and forth to Taiwan on Odd months and Tzuyu flies to Korea on Even months.

I feel bad for the both of them, especially for Sana, she really loves Tzuyu but she couldn't really stand being away from her.

She tried convincing Tzuyu to stay in Korea but Tzuyu wanted to try running their business first because she's the only heir of her parents, Sana understands though but it's just been really tough for her.

"Enough about me, how are things going with you and Kookie?" She asked giddily

I playfully rolled my eyes at her

"Sana-chan, you're asking me like Him and I are a new couple"

"**scoff** I mean with the way he treats you? he's practically courting you like everyday, bouquet of flowers every week? how ridiculous. Jisoos! do you remember when he used to give you one every single day? that boy I swear.."

"I know. Isn't he the sweetest though? I felt bad when I told him to stop giving me flowers everyday because I didn't know where to put them anymore, I didn't want to throw it away" I said pouting

"Oh boo hoo! Poor Lisa and her flowers, whatever shall you do with them? give it to me and I'll burn 'em all for you" Sana said rolling her eyes at me

"Okay? Attitude. You're the one started the convo about me and Jung-kook, Sana. Don't be bitter" I said jokingly

"Right. I shouldn't have asked, I hate seeing loved-up couple when I'm not with my Yoda...that stupid Tzuyu, why can't she just stay here in Korea with me? what's so great about Taiwan anyway?"

"Sana-chan, give her some time to figure out what she wants. She feels responsible for her parents right now but she'll come around. She makes a lot effort though doesn't she? She flies here once or twice on her Even Months, She even flies here on Odd months--She calls you everyday, texts you every hour or so--Tzuyu loves you, Sana.. just let her do her thing first"

"Yeah I know.. It's just.. I miss having sex with her everyday" She said non-chalant

"Goodness...T.M.I.--I didn't need to hear that"

"Please, like you and Kookie don't do it everyday"

"We *REALLY* don't" I said to her matter of factly

"Pssshhh, Yeah. Okay Lalisa, if you say so, but anyways I'm really happy for you guys, who would've thought you guys would end up together. it's been 4 years right?"

"Yes 4 years and yeah, I know, I'm lucky to have Jung-kook. I couldn't ask for a better partner, He's so good to me" I said to her as I feel myself smile like an idiot.

"You never thanked me for being the wingman ****pout****"

I just giggled and decided to humor her

"Thank You, Sana. if it wasn't for you, I would've never realized that Jung-kook is really the love of my life"

"You're welcome boo! ****wink**** "

Jungkook and I crossed each other's paths again 2 years after SHE left.

Him and Sana apparently kept in touch after graduation, I didn't have any idea that she became close friends with him.

Sana and Jung-kook--They saved me from completely destroying myself.

A Year after SHE left, My Father died due to heart attack. I thought I had already hit rock bottom when SHE left us hanging that night at the Train Station..

But I was wrong.

When I lost My Papa, I went past rock bottom and reached the fiery pits of Hell. He was my safety net and then he got taken away just like that.

I thought there was no way for me to escape from that dark place but Him and Sana reminded me that there's nowhere but up from where I was at.

Sana was really patient with me, She never gave up on me even when I was pushing her away. She's a true friend, My sister for life.

I'm also thankful for Tzuyu for understanding my situation, She never got jealous of Sana and I's friendship. We've actually become close friends now, She encouraged me to just keep my head up and reminded me to not push away the people who are trying to help.

Sana and Tzuyu are really blessed to have each other

My Jung-kook--He's the one who encouraged me to go back to school. He helped me take care of my paperwork and also with applying for financial aid.

His family owns a small real estate company and since I have interest with houses, I got into it and took a chance to be an architect.

I didn't really like it at first but overtime, I fell in love with it and as time passes, I was falling in love with him as well.

He helped me through schooling and helped me get back on track. He never took advantage of my vulnerability, He made me forget all the heartaches and sorrows of my past..

I guess everything just fell into place and it worked out for the best.

He knew about my relationship with HER since we three attended the same school but I never really told him or anyone, not even Sana about getting married to HER in Sydney.

I still use my maiden name for show, but legally speaking..

I'm a Kim.

Jung-kook was wondering why I was writing *Kim, Lalisa* on my application, I lied and said that I'm using my mother's last name because that's what's in my birth certificate since my mother and father are not married. Thank goodness he bought my story and it also helps that there's a lot of Kims in Korea or he would've suspected something.

I felt bad lying to my boyfriend, but I didn't want to risk my relationship with him.

I wish I could turn back time and slap my younger self for agreeing to be married that early and for agreeing to marry HER and actually take HER Last Name.

I wish I hadn't married HER

Jisoos! what was I thinking?

I honestly regret making that decision. It was seriously the worse one I've made so far. I was so caught up and high of happiness by our "Love" back then that I was too blind to see how evil **Jennie Kim** really is.

I bet she never really loved me.

It was all just a game to her.

She probably does have a reason for leaving me behind but it really doesn't matter anymore now..

I hate her to my very core.

I hate her for hurting me so much..

And I wish I hadn't met her at all...

Period.

Manhattan, New York City Borough

JENNIE'S POV

"Jen! You have a video call later with one of our clients from Japan and you also have another meeting with American Canyon Realtors at 2 PM, they're coming all the way from the Bay Area so we better not be late, and also, Your boyfriend called, he wanted to remind you about dinner at Peter Luger" My Business Partner/Best Friend Park, Jihyo said

I breathed tiredly and closed my eyes.

I've been having meetings non-stop, even on the weekends when it's supposed to be my "Off" from work.

I wish I could just take a break.

I just need a day..That's all I'm asking.

"Jennie-ya, do you want me to cancel your meetings?" Jihyo said giving me a sad look. She knows how it is because she's almost

always there when I attend meetings

"No, it's fine Jih, I just need to breathe a little, I'm exhausted" I said to her

"I know Jen, Just let me know if you change your mind okay? We can re-schedule the Video call" My friend said feeling bad for me

I nodded and gave her a tired smile

"I will, Jih. thank you, you're a good sister"

"I know, what will you do without me? ****wink****"

"Yes Yes, they don't call you God Jihyo for nothing" I said playfully rolling my eyes at her

"Damn straight, tattoo that on your cheeks please because you tend to forget sometimes you old hag" She says to me

"Old hag? I'm only a month older than you. You know, I should really fire your ass right now, do I need to remind you that I'm your BOSS?" I said with a serious tone

"Do I need to remind the boss that I saved her ass many times from horrible dates??" She spat back

I let out an annoyed groan

"Fine. Just leave me alone Jih, you're irritating me, and it's only Monday!" I exclaimed but it doesn't really faze her.

"You love me Jen" She said giggling then she walked out of my office but not without peeking at my door while she gives me a crying face, mocking me.

That girl is unbelievable, but she's right, I do love her, she's my best friend here in this crazy city.

I met Jihyo about 7 years ago--I was walking around begging for food and then I stumbled upon their restaurant and I ended up working for them (under the table) in Ithaca, New York. She's the owner's daughter. Her and I didn't really get along at first because she comes on too strong and too loud for my taste

We eventually became friends because according to Jihyo, she didn't have any choice but to be friends with me since her and I are the only Pretty Korean girls in Ithaca and *Pretty girls should always stick together*--Her words not mine.

Her Family saved me when I was in a hard place. They basically adopted me and treated me like their own, they gave me food, shelter--They were really kind to me, I can never repay them for what they've done for me. I owe them my second life.

Jihyo knows my story--She knows about my past life

How I was forcefully brought here to New York against my will, how my parents basically had me on watch 24/7, how they hid my passport so I couldn't go back to Korea..

So I couldn't go back to **HER**..

My parents threatened me that If I come back to Korea to be with Her again and I'd go against them then they will hurt Her and Her father. I know what they're capable of, so I didn't have any choice but to obey them.

I was stuck here.. And there was No Way Out.

I would cry every night for HER..

I always had dreams about HER even up to now, but not as often as I used to..

I know she's mad at me. She probably thinks that I left her hanging on purpose.

She probably thinks that I never even loved her in the first place

She hates me, I know that she does, but I can't blame her..

She waited for me, I know that she did, but I never showed up..

I wrote to her non-stop the first year that I was here in New York because I was limited on using my devices, it was only ever used for me to focus on my studies and nothing else, like I said, I was on watch 24/7. The only time I ever get my privacy is when I use the bathroom.

I wrote to her..I poured my heart out in each letter that I sent her, telling her how much I love her and miss her and how sorry I am for leaving without even saying goodbye.

I told her everything that was happening in my life here in New York but she never wrote back. I mean, why would she? She probably didn't even read my letters, she most likely burned it right away after she saw who it was from.

I eventually stopped writing to her after I escaped from My Parent's watch because I didn't want to be tracked by them and I might be causing her more trouble..

I was held captive.

My Parents didn't give me any choice at all, they took me away from Her..

But then, an opportunity came for me to finally escape them.

The city was in the middle of a crisis and looters where everywhere. One night, It got so out of control that my personal guards started panicking as well and I saw that as an opportunity to escape. I ran as fast as I could and I never looked back.

I found myself going to Ithaca, New York. It's about a 3-4 hour car ride from the City. I was so happy when I finally left that horrible place. I didn't care if I dropped out of NYU, I didn't care about being a lawyer anymore

I didn't care about anything in general, I was taken away from HER, I didn't have any purpose in life.

I walked around Ithaca for what feels like months with very little money in my hand, it lasted me for about a week. I slept in parks, waiting sheds, Homeless shelters.. I would beg some of the restaurants to hire me as their waitress and they only needed to repay me with food but they refused since they didn't want to hire an illegal person.

I starved for days, crying desperately for help but nobody seemed to care..Some people on the streets would give me some money and leave their leftovers in front of me and I would eat it, I didn't care anymore, when you're hungry and desperate, everything will taste good.

I kept walking around Ithaca, still not losing hope until one day, I found a quaint little Korean restaurant near Cornell University. It was closing time and I asked the owner if he could spare me some of their left overs because I was starving, I spoke to him in Korean and thankfully, He has a good heart

I cried in front of him when he gave me food. It was the first time in a long time since I had a hot decent meal. Mr. Park and his wife felt so bad for me that they invited me to sit down in their restaurant and eat the food there, they served me a lot of traditional Korean food that I missed so much

I told them some parts of my story of how I got to Ithaca and ended up being homeless. They didn't push through my past anymore though when they felt that I was feeling a bit uncomfortable talking about it.

Mr. and Mrs. Park decided that they'll hire me as their waitress, salary plus tips and three meals a day. They also offered me a place to stay in their restaurant--they had a free room there and they set up a little bed for me, even bought me a little TV for my entertainment.

They're really kind people.

Their daughter Jihyo however, was a different story. She hard-headed, Always giving her parents a headache.

She really didn't like me at first and the feeling was mutual. But one weird day, Her and I got to talking and we ended up having the best time and ever since then, we stick to each other like glue.

My musings were cut short when Jihyo paged me through my personal phone line

"Uhh? Jennie, When you're done day dreaming, you can eat your lunch, it's here, let me know so I can bring it there for you" She said then she looked at me pointedly.

My office is surrounded with glass so she can see right through.

"You're such a creep you know that? it's amazing how Daniel puts up with you" I responded with an annoyed tone over the phone

"I could say the same thing with Jackson" She retorted

"Ugh! shut it and bring me my food now!"

"Alright, Alright, Jisoos! You and your period mood swings I swear" She said giggling then she stood up from her chair and went in my office.

I didn't say anything anymore before I do something to her that I'll regret.

I might end up in Riker's Island.

I sighed deeply and massaged my temple

I should've closed my blinds

Jihyo came in with my burger from Shake Shack and a chocolate shake, I have this for lunch everyday since I was able to afford it again

"I envy you, how could you eat so much and still stay in shape" Jihyo said when I was about to take a bite off my burger

"I asked you to go to Pilates class with me but you kept refusing" I said to her then I chewed on my food

"Nah, sex with Daniel is good enough" She said smirking

"Ok, I just lost my appetite" I said putting down my burger dramatically

"Whatever, anyways eat fast you fat-ass, and by the way you still haven't confirmed with your boyfriend about dinner" Jihyo reminded me

"Oh! right right. Of course, yeah, I'll call him now" I said happily.

Jihyo gave me a sincere smile, She approves of Jackson and I's relationship.

Jackson Wang.

Him and I have been together for 3 years now, you could say he saved me from my heart break, and everything else in between.

He's a really nice guy, very smart, not to mention handsome and educated, He's a real gentleman. and I love him for it

I dialed his number and he answered right away

JW: Hey Bao, I miss you.

He said sweetly as his greeting to me which made me smile.

JN: Hey Bao, you just saw me last night, but ok, I guess I miss you too..kidding! sorry I didn't get to call you as soon as I could, I have a lot of things to--

JW: Bao, chill, it's fine okay? It's Monday today and I expected that you'd be busy, so anyways will you still be able to go to dinner later? or we can push back Friday, whatever's convenient for you babe.

JN: No Bao, no way! it's your 30th Birthday, big Three "O" we should celebrate it and then big party on Saturday, so be ready.

JW: Thank You Bao for taking care of everything, too bad you're not any good at surprises

He said teasing me.

He found out I was doing a surprise party for him which made me a bit upset but I let it go.

JN: **giggle** If you hadn't been snooping around and kept bugging Jihyo about it then it would've been perfect, you're such a child Jackson.

JW: But you love me

I smiled.

I do love him.

But I love giving him a hard time too

JN: Ha! Yeah ok. Sure.

My boyfriend ended up laughing at what I said, He knows how I am

JW: I love you Bao, I'll pick you up tonight

JN: Ok Bao, see ya. I love you too, and Happy Birthday.

JW: Thank You Bao, will I get to have some of that '*Birthday Sex*' people speak of tonight?

I shook my head and giggled

JN: I don't know babe, be a good boy and you might get your reward

I said playing along

JW: That means I'm definitely getting it tonight! Yes! I can't wait!

He said, I can feel his excitement over the phone

JN: **giggle** Bye Bao

JW: Bye Babe. I love you.

JN: I love you too.

I said then I hung up.

March 28.. his birthday is just after Hers...

I let out a deep sigh and continued on with my work.

I don't know why I'm thinking about Her again, It's just probably one of those days

I met Jackson when he was attending Cornell University to become a civil engineer, He's Jihyo's College Friend. They were on the same classes but Jihyo decided to drop out and ventured to become a realtor instead

Eventually, Jihyo attended New York School of Interior Design and can I just say, attending NYSID definitely benefited her. She excelled at it and she's now one of the best Interior Designers in the City, She very in demand, I'm proud of her.

Jackson would always eat dinner at Mr. and Mrs. Parks restaurant and Jihyo introduced us to each other.

There wasn't any automatic attraction whatsoever between us then. Jackson was in a 2 year relationship and I was still hung-up on Her..

We got closer a year after we got to know each other. Him and his ex girlfriend broke up because he found out she was cheating on him for 3 months with his supposed best friend. Jihyo and I were his confidant but him and I got closer as time goes by

We ended up dating 3 years later.

It was a slow process but at least we could say that our love had a foundation.

Like Jihyo, Jackson knows about my past. The difference between Him and Jihyo though? Jackson doesn't know about Her.

Jackson's Parents know me from back when we're still friends, He told them about my situation(with my permission of course) and

they helped me acquire a working visa--eventually leading up to me being a green card holder because his family sponsored me.

His Parents are the owners of one of the biggest Real Estate Developers/Builders in the East Coast. They saw potential in me so they encouraged me to go to school for business.

Mr. and Mrs. Jackson wanted to pay for my schooling but I refused since they hired me to become one of their real estate agents together with Jihyo.

When I was done with school, I worked for Wang Corp to gain some experience and when I got comfortable with what I'm doing and earned enough money, I decided to start my own Company 2 years later

I partnered up with Wang Corp. with Jackson as my main engineer and with Jihyo--My best agent who also has a masters with Interior design and together, We ended up making big waves in the Real Estate business as one of the best Rookie Construction Firms.

6 months prior to my decision of starting my Company, I applied for U.S. Citizenship since I'm already eligible for it.

"Miss Jennie Kim, since now that you're a U.S. Citizen, you can change your name to whatever you want, would you like to have that option?"

I know about this option--I asked Jihyo's Parents if I could adopt their last name out of respect even though It's a pretty common last name in Korea.

I wanted to erase my past and start a new beginning, and since Jihyo's family were the ones who helped me from start, it only makes sense that I want to be one of them.

Thankfully they agreed and gave me permission.

"Yes, I would like to be known as Jane Park"

36.) Seoreunyeoseot

Title: The Feeling (Cover)

Artistst: Leroy Sanchez and Jessica Sanchez

<https://youtu.be/mTbvAS4FnAE>

JENNIE'S POV

"Jennie-ya! go to the conference room now so you can do the video call" Jihyo said as she barges in my office

"Jih, I don't understand why I have to go there, My computer works fine, it can receive video calls" I said to her

"Will you quit complaining? it's just next door you lazy bum and besides, it makes us look professional" My best friend

"No it doesn't, You just want to show off what you did with the room" I said rolling my eyes for the nth time.

"Uh, Yeah it does you moron, I don't understand how your lazy ass became the CEO of this company, I oughta kick you out of your position, I bet I can do a better job" She said to me

"Pfft, yeah right, you're an indecisive retard, you won't be able to keep this company afloat and besides, I funded this company so..HA!" I said then I stood up from my chair

I hugged my best friend tight then I kissed her cheek to annoy her.

"Get off of me! you're gonna give me the ugly!" she said giggling

"But I thought you said pretty girls should always stick together?" I said pouting

"Yuck. Are you trying to be cute? Get your ass over there now!" Jihyo said with a bossy tone.

Jihyo and I talk to each other like we're mortal enemies but I trust her with my life, she proved her love and loyalty to me over and over again when I had nothing, in a way, she kind of reminds me of my cousin Jisoo

I wonder how she's doing..

"Who are we meeting again babe? You never told me the name" I asked as we go next door to the conference room, I sat down while Jihyo sets up the computer and the projector

"Miss Minatozaki" She said while focusing on what she's doing

I froze in my place hearing that name

"Mi-Minatozaki?" I repeated to clarify with her

"Yeah, why? what's up?" She asked but she isn't looking at my direction so she doesn't see how flustered I am

"No, it's nothing" I said then I cleared my throat

Maybe it's a different Minatozaki? it's probably a common last name in Japan..

"Are you ready Jen? what happened to you? why are you so pale all of a sudden?" Jihyo asked

"Oh, Am I?" I said then I laughed nervously "it's probably because of my period, my flow is pretty heavy today, I don't know, I'm probably anemic" I said

"Are you sure you want to do this? we can cancel Jen" Jihyo said worriedly

"I'm fine babe, let's start?" I said

Jihyo just continued to give me a worried look, she hugged me and started the call

My heart is beating 100 miles per minute, I don't know what to expect.. I'm really hoping it's not Sana..

Please God Please.. no, not her, not Sana..

Five rings later and the person finally answered

SHIT!

It's Really her!

Minatozaki, Sana!

When I saw her face on the screen, I wanted to scream and runaway, it looks like she wanted to do the same.

Sana and I are being transparent, we couldn't really hide the fact that we're shocked to see each other again, Jihyo however is still oblivious to what's going on

"Good Morning Miss Minatozaki--it's a pleasure to finally see you even if it's just a video call, anyways I would like to introduce you to the CEO of Gold Constructions, Miss Jane Park" Jihyo said proudly and then she looked at my direction

I didn't say anything and just continued to look at Sana with my eyes wide and my mouth slightly open while Sana does the same

I can see Jihyo with my peripheral vision looking back and forth between Sana and I with a confused look.

"Uhm.. Ladies?" Jihyo spoke up to break the ice

"Jennie Kim??!!" Sana exclaimed

"Minatozaki" I said calmly, I didn't want to look like an idiot like her

"You ladies know each other?" my friend said pointing at the both of us

"Yes" I said blankly

"Wait, there must be some kind of mistake, I'm supposed to be having a video meeting with a person named Jane Park, do you work for her? are you her proxy?" Sana asked

I exhaled sharply

"No, I'm not a proxy, you're looking at the one and only Jane Park, CEO of Gold Constructions" I said feeling confident all of a sudden.

I saw Sana glare at me but she eventually got it together and turned to her professional self

"I see.. well, shall we start?" She said with a calmer demeanor

:

The Video Call lasted for about an hour, we talked about the upcoming project for Park Hotels that is set to be built in Jeju Island in Korea.

Rosé, Park-one of my old best friends from high school is the person we're building the hotel for.

Rosé met up with Wang Corp about 6 months ago to hire them to be the land developer for their Family's chain of Hotels in Jeju Island and since Gold Constructions is affiliated with Wang Corp, they hired us to take care of building the hotel.

But even with the developer and the builder, Rosé still needed to hire someone locally who will oversee everything since they're more familiar with the place

And how convenient it is that it's Sana's company I'm going to have to be working with

Fucking Great!

"Alright, well, we're looking forward on working with you Ms. Jane Park" Sana said casually

"Same here Miss Minatozaki, Have a nice day" I responded

"You too. Bye" She said then she hung up

"OH MY FUCKING GOODNESS!" I yelled while I cover my face

with both of my hands shaking my head vigorously

"Jennie, what the hell is going on? You and Ms. Minatozaki were so awkward trying so hard to be professionals, you can't even look at each other straight, is there something I should know about?" Jihyo asked

I took a deep breath, I can feel my hands shaking

"Jih.. Minatozaki.. she's.. Lisa's Best friend from High school.." I said hesitantly

"Fuck.." Jihyo said then she put a hand on my back rubbing it to help me relax "You okay there?"

"Yeah, I'm fine but...Jih! I thought you said we were doing a Video call with someone who's from Japan?" I asked her

"Sorry Jennie I really didn't look through the file enough, I saw her last name and assumed that she's a Japanese developer from Japan that has a company in Korea" She answered

"What? that doesn't make any sense!"

"I know! I know..I'm sorry babe. But how was I supposed to know she was Lisa's best friend?" Jihyo said feeling bad

****Sigh****

"Right.. you're right..I should've double checked anyway, I didn't even bother looking at the her file either. I was thinking that the call was just a proposal project. I'm sorry Jih, it's just.. that was just really..intense..like.." I said but I'm out of words to say

"Like the Universe is somehow conspiring against you?" Jihyo said

"Ye-yeah something like that.. I don't even know anymore.. "

"Jennie who knows, she might not even be friends with Lisa anymore" my friend said doing her best to console me

"I..Jihyo, is it weird that I'm hoping she's still friends with Lalisa?" I asked

"No, it's not. It's just going to be weird if you want something to happen between the two of you again, but you won't do that right?" Jihyo said chuckling

"No. of course not, you just totally assumed something so unlikely. I love Jackson no doubt.. it's just, you know..I still feel bad for leaving her behind.." I said timidly

I'm really hoping Sana is still friends with Lisa because it kind of gives me comfort knowing that she wasn't alone when I was forcefully brought here to New York.

"Jen, it's not your fault okay? don't beat yourself up anymore.." Jihyo said

"But Jihyo---" I said and before I know it, tears started falling from my eyes

"Ssssshhh.. it's alright babe.. just let it out, I'm here.." Jihyo said hugging me tight

I held onto my best friend and cried my heart out, I don't know why I'm being an emotional wreck again, I thought I was over the fact that I left her and she hates me for it but seeing someone from our past reminded me of all the pain and sorrow from years ago, it came back to me all at once.

My friend pulled away from our hug and looked at me intently

"Jennie, do you want me to pull out on this project? I don't want you to feel pressured okay? there's other stuff we can work on, I know Rosé is your friend but I'm sure she'll understand since she knows about your history with Lisa and Sana.." Jihyo suggested

"No, Jihyo, it's alright, we can make this work, I have you and especially Jackson by my side, and you know, you could be right, she's probably not even friends with Lisa anymore, they probably drifted apart.. I'm sorry I was just a bit overwhelmed"

"Jennie, look at me okay? that was 8 years ago, you guys were still young, I mean I'm going to be honest, yes, most likely Lisa

hates you but it's not the end of the world okay? you just gotta deal with it like an adult. I know for sure you've moved on from her, she most likely moved on from you too..8 years is a long time"

I'm not going to lie, I felt uneasy when she said Lisa most likely moved on from me already, I didn't like the idea of her being in a relationship with someone else, but I didn't make it obvious

"Yeah.. We got this" I said to her smiling

"That's my girl" Jihyo said wiping my tears and then she kissed my forehead

"Pull yourself together okay? I gotta go, see you in a bit alright babe?" She said then she stood up closing the conference room door.

Thank You, Jihyo.

Just then, I received a random text from my boyfriend

14:23 Bao-Bao

> Hey, couldn't stop thinking about you again, I love you so much Bao, I can't wait for our date tonight

I smiled at the text message, It's what I needed to cheer me up and power through this day

I'm blessed to have Jackson in my life

14:24

> I love you too Bao, so much. I'll see you later birthday boy.

I replied then I put down my phone

Lalisa, I hope you're doing well.

Belated Happy Birthday.

SANA'S POV

"Alright, well, we're looking forward on working with you Ms. Jane Park" I said to HER like I'm not shaken up that I'm actually speaking to HER again after 8 Years

"Same here Ms. Minatozaki, Have a nice day" she responded with the same tone

"You too. Bye" I said to her then I hung up as soon as I could

I covered my face with both my hands, I wanted to scream at her, curse her out, make her explain why she suddenly left my friend without even saying good bye.

I tried my best to concentrate with the meeting, but I couldn't help but glare at her.

As soon as I saw Jennie's face on the screen, I wanted to runaway, I wanted to hangup but I kept in mind that I need to be professional, this is a big project for us since we're just starting, Jung-kook and Lisa are counting on me..

Lisa.. I should tell her about this

Just then, my phone started ringing which startled me.
Tzuyu's name flashed on the screen--she wants to FaceTime

TZ: Hey Koi, Good Morning.
My girlfriend greeted cheerfully

SN: Good Morning Baby
I said trying my best to give her a cheerful greeting but she sensed something was wrong

TZ: Hmmm.. what's going on Koi? meeting didn't go well?
I shook my head slowly

SN: Tzuyu.. Jennie..

I saw my girlfriend tense a little bit hearing her old friend's name but she composed herself and asked about her

TZ: What about Jennie?

SN: She was the one I had the meeting with Koi..

TZ: Wait.. I thought you said you were video calling a lady named Jane Park

She asked confused

SN: That's her, Jennie. she changed her name to Jane Park

TZ: Wow.. I.. Jennie.. how is she?

She asked, her and Lisa are good friends now but I can see it in her eyes that she genuinely wants to know how her old best friend is doing, I know she misses her a lot

SN: She looks well.. fine actually, like nothing happened
I responded bitterly

TZ: Koi..calm down okay?

SN: I'm going to tell Lisa about this, Koi..

TZ: Yeah, I think that's a good idea, I mean it's going to be hard on her part but it wouldn't be fair if you kept her in the dark, don't worry Koi, Lisa's a big girl, she's changed for the better the last 8 years and besides, she has Jung-kook now. she'll probably still get upset but I'm sure she's going to be professional about it.

SN: You think so sweetie?

TZ: I know so darling.. it will work out okay? I love you so much Sana. Please try not to worry anymore ok? I don't want my baby stressing out too much..

My Yoda said then she pouted with her pretty dimple showing.
I smiled at how adorable my lover is

SN: Ok..I'll try. Thank You Sweetheart, I love you too, I can't wait to see you next week

TZ: Same here darling, I'm staying for a week, thank you for being so patient with me, my love

SN: You're welcome Koi, I'm happy you're still mine after all these years.. let's stay together forever..

TZ: Yes, I love that Idea. I'm Yours Forever, Darling.

SN: Baby, how about a little preview? Send me some sexy naked pictures

TZ: Later okay? When I reach the office

SN: Promise??

I asked excitedly

TZ: Promise.

My girlfriend said with a sensual tone.

Tzuyu and I talked for at least an hour more but we both needed to go to our other meetings so we ended the call.

I'm glad I have my Yoda, she keeps me calm and gives me peace.

I love her forever.

Lalisa.. I hope you're ready for what I'm about to tell you.

THE NEXT DAY

LISA'S POV

I'm in my Condo Unit trying to finish up alternate proposals for the upcoming build in Jeju Island, I already have the final proposal but I wanted to do a draft or two just in case the one that we're presenting doesn't work out

My boyfriend will pick me up later for dinner, we're celebrating my birthday late since I was busy working on this project.

Sana called me earlier, she said that she'll stop by as soon as she's

done with her other meetings. She said it's something really important.

Sana sounded really upset and uneasy earlier.

I asked her what was wrong but she brushed me off and said that she needed to say it in person. I didn't push through it anymore since she seemed uncomfortable talking about it so I just let it go.

5 minutes later, I heard ridiculous loud knocks on my door.

Sana's here, she's the only one who does that.

"Alright! Alright! I'm coming! No need to break my door"

Sana went in as soon as I opened the door and went to my kitchen to get a bottled water

"Uhm.. come in.. I guess?" I whispered to my self then I pursed my lips

"So what's up? what's this important thing that you have to tell me in person" I asked Sana

"Lalisa, do you have any Hennessy or Patron or something? I need a shot" Sana said

"Uhm.. yeah, go for it, it's by the mini bar..wait a minute, you're not planning on getting drunk here are you? cos me and Jung-kook have a date and I don't want to have to baby sit"

"No, I just need a shot, and don't worry I'm not gonna interrupt your sexy time with your boyfriend you horny slut" She said and I just glared at her.

She found her way to the bar and took a quick shot of Patron

"What's going on? Why are you looking so tensed? Did Tzuyu and you had a fight or something?"

"No, it's not about Tzuyu and I, we're doing great. Listen, Lalisa,

promise me after I tell you this you let me know if you still want to work on the Jeju Hotel Project alright? We can always find another client"

"Uhm.. okay.. I promise? Tell me what happened? is it about that video call with Gold Constructions?"

"Yeah...Lalisa, I'll go straight to the point, the CEO of Gold Constructions---It's Jennie, Jennie Kim"

I froze on the spot.

I didn't know what to say, I can feel myself trembling after what my friend just said to me

No..No!

It can't be..

Why?!

Of all people?

Why her??!

I sat down on my couch trying to absorb what Sana just told me, and when it finally sunk in..

I started crying.

I thought I'm okay now, I thought she was gone, but just by hearing her name, everything came rushing back to me-

The pain and sorrow that she inflicted upon me, and my hate towards her just grew 10 times more.

"Lalisa.." I heard Sana say as she sat beside me on the couch rubbing my arm

I cried for about 10 minutes, I was a mess but Sana held me, doing her best to calm me down.

"Lisa-chan, we can pull out on this project okay? just say the word, you don't need to do this, we'll find another client I promise you.." Sana said but I shook my head

"N-no Sana, I'm fine, I'm sorry I just got a little carried away.. it's just that.. I-- why her?! I hate her Sana! I---don't.. Sana.." I said then I cried some more

"Lisa.. try to get it together okay? we can still get out of this, it's not like we've signed a contract already..we'll make it, we have other projects" Sana said re-assuring me

I wiped my tears and looked at my friend

"No, we can't do that Sana. This is a big project for us, we can't make a bad impression, I can handle this I promise. It's not like I'm going to be seeing her everyday anyway, worse case scenario is that I'm spending an hour with her and with lots of people" I said trying to convince myself of that possibility

"Ok.. just, let me know, we're presenting in two days, and we might sign a contract by then so think about it okay?"

"I will. Thank You, I should probably tell Jung-kook too" I said to her, I'm a bit more relaxed now

"You should Lisa-chan, anyways let me just drink a pitcher of water and rest for a bit, I need to get the alcohol out of my system" Sana said which caused me to giggle

"You didn't need to drink alcohol Sana, you're so dramatic I swear"

"Me? dramatic? tell that to your stupid ugly crying face after hearing about your Ex from 8 years ago" She said to me then she got up and went to my fridge again and took two more bottles of water

"Why you insensitive little bitc---"

"What time is your sex date with the lover boy anyway?" Sana said cutting me off

I was going to say something smart but she's right, what else is there to do after dinner?

"8:30 pm, so you still have time, anyways I gotta finish what I'm doing then get ready for Jung-kook, go sleep in my room, I need my living space"

She gave me a smirk and went to my room, closed the door and locked it.

I took a deep breath and gathered my thoughts

Ok Lisa.. you need to get it together. Sana has a point, she's my Ex from 8 years ago..

We're both adults now I'm sure the both of us will be able to work professionally.

I mean I know I can, I don't know about her.

if she's still as immature as I remember then I'll just do my best to avoid drama.

I don't have time for her stupid antics.

"From Jennie Kim to Jane Park huh?"

How Lamé.

:

:

9 PM

Jung-kook and I arrived at an Aquarium.. I was wondering why he took me here but when I saw a candle-lit dinner all set up with pianist and a singer, I was left awestruck.

"B-babe.. this is so.. incredible..wow, thank you" I said wrapping my arms around his neck and then I gave him a kiss on the lips

"All for you babe.." He said to me then he broke off our hug and lead us to our table.

He pulled up my chair for me and motioned me to sit down, he's such a gentleman, for 4 years that him and I have been together, He never changed, he's still as sweet, loving and caring as ever.

"Thank you sweetheart" I said to him as I sat down, he smiled and kissed my forehead then he proceeded to sit down on his chair.

"Babe, you look beautiful, as always" he said holding my hand

"All for you babe" I said copying him then I gave him a wink.

He just shook his head smiling as he turned all shades of red

"You're so cute babe, I still make you blush even though we've been together for years now huh?" I said with a conceited tone

"Well, you should see YOU through my eyes, then you'll understand why"

"Smooth, you'll definitely get some tonight" I joked which made him laugh

"I love you so much Lalisa, Belated Happy Birthday"

"I love you too sweetheart, thank you for loving me the way you do, I'm lucky to have you in my life" I said to him sincerely.

"No, I'm the lucky one. thank you for giving us a chance"

I didn't say anything anymore, I just leaned in on the table puckering my lips, he did the same and kissed me passionately.

:

:

Dinner was great, they served us top of the line food and drinks, the ambiance was amazing and my lover is perfect and very romantic.

Jung-kook and I really get have the same wavelength, we always have fun together and we get each other, he's really the best

boyfriend anyone could ever ask for.

I'm falling in love with him all over again.

Jung-kook, I wish for you to stay with me no matter what happens.. I love you.

I decided to just tell him about Jennie after dinner, I didn't want to ruin our moment and upset my boyfriend just because of that-girl.

It's probably going to be awkward but I'd rather be honest than to keep another secret from him. he doesn't deserve that.

:

:

12 Midnight

Lisa's Condo (Bedroom)

"Babe.. I have something to tell you" I said to my boyfriend

"Hmm? what is it babe?" He said wrapping me with his arms protectively

"So, you know that Builder from New York?The CEO"

"Yes, Sana did a video call with her right? what was her name again?" he asked but I just went straight to the point

"It's Jennie, Jennie Kim" I said

There was a long pause, nobody was speaking until he cleared his throat

"Wait a second, THE Jennie Kim? from Pioneer High?" He clarified

"Yeah, she's the CEO of Gold Constructions"

He chuckled and shook his head

"Wow.. small world huh babe? but will you be alright working with her?" He asked me worriedly

"Hold on, you're.. not upset?" I asked him

He chuckled "No, why would I be upset babe?"

"You know.. because she's my Ex"

"Yeah I know but that was years ago..there's no reason for me to be upset, it's not your fault her company was the chosen builder"

"Yeah, that's true, I just figured you'd be uncomfortable if we ever got a chance to work together" I said to him

"I'm not going to lie, probably, but the thing is it's inevitable and this is business you know? I'm sure you'll be able to handle it professionally, I believe in you" Jung-kook said to me

"Wow.. you're really amazing babe.. I probably would've been crazy jealous if I was in your position right now" I said snuggling closer to him

"I love you and I know that you love me too, there's no reason for me to be jealous or upset, I already got my dream girl, sorry to say this but I bet her leaving you behind is the biggest regret of her life" He said to me

"I highly doubt that, but enough about her. I just want you to know that you're the only one for me and I want to re-assure you that I'm yours, forever" I said to him

"Forever, Babe" He said leaning in to kiss me

Jennie.. you're not going to break us..

You're not going to break me again.

A/N: SaTzu Stay Strong ☐☐☐

I'm so glad I added these two in the story, they're an accident by the way, I didn't know about their ship when I started this story last June lol

37.) Seoreunilgop

Title: All These Years

Artist: Camila Cabello

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

1 Month Later

Location: Third Night Construction Headquarters

Seoul, South Korea

LISA'S POV

After many "Final" drafts of Hotel designs, planning, and everything else in between, Park Hotels officially signed our firm "Third Night" to be the Korean Counterpart of Gold Constructions.

We were getting a bit skeptical because the Park Family is very particular with how they want their Hotel to look like but they finally agreed on our "Final" Final design thanks to Sana, Jung-kook and I's team effort.

"Congratulations and welcome to the Team" Rosé said to the three of us extending her hand

"Thank You Ms. Park, It's an honor to be a part of this project" Sana said shaking Rosé's hand with delight and excitement

"Please Sana, enough with the formalities, the contract is signed, you can relax now" Rosé said giggling

"With all the proposals you made us do? are you kidding? our architect almost lost her mind" Sana said causing me to nudge her lightly

"***smile*** I know, I apologize but I knew Lisa would meet our standards"

"Yes, she's one of the best in the Country Miss Rosé" My boyfriend said proudly

"I believe it" She responded to my boyfriend and then she turned her attention back to me.

"Lisa, actually, can I talk to you for a second?"

"Of course, Ms. Park"

"I swear if you guys call me '*Ms. Park*' I'll have you do another draft again"

She then pulled me to the side giving me a worried look.

"Lisa, working on this project with Gold Constructions is not going to be a problem right?"

"No, it wouldn't be, I mean, it shouldn't be Rosé at least on my end." I said with confidence

"Ok, I just want to make sure, I honestly didn't know that Jennie's Company is affiliated with Wang Corp. but they're the best of the best so I just had to hire them"

"No worries Rosé. Yes, Her and I have history together but that was 8 years ago, we're both adults now and besides, I'm in a happy place with my boyfriend, so don't sweat it" I reassured her

"Good, it's good to see that you're happy, Mr. Jeon is a nice guy from what I remember from High school, you two are lucky to have each other"

"Thank You, I'm lucky he's mine. and Thank You again Rosé for trusting our firm, we won't let you down" I said then I bowed my head

"You're welcome, I know you'll do well, anyways, let's go back to them?"

"Sorry about that guys, I just needed to clear some things with Ms. Manoban here. anyways, since everything is settled with Third Night, I'll be contacting Gold Constructions, Ms. Jane Park is expected to fly here by next week to check out the site, can I ask you guys to accompany her to Jeju? she's been gone for a while and we want her to feel welcome"

I felt Sana and My boyfriend's gaze towards my direction but I didn't show them any hint of uneasiness whatsoever

"Sure Rosé, we can do that" I said smiling widely

I could've sworn I saw a hint of shock in Rosé's face but she quickly switched and gave me a small smile instead

"Thank You Lalisa, I'll keep in touch with you guys okay? Take care" She said waving her hand goodbye

As soon as she exited the door and we're sure she's out of our sight, the three of us let out a relieved, exaggerated sigh

"Holy Crap! Fucking Finally! Rosé's really tough! she really made us work didn't she?!" Sana said as she laughs

"She is but you gotta see it from her point of view, Park Hotels are known for Luxury, and besides, they paid the firm for the scrapped drafts so we really didn't lose anything, we're lucky we knew her from High School, that's a big plus."

"Hey Now, what are you trying to say Lisa-chan? she signed us because of our skills especially yours and my main engineer here. good job Lovebirds!" Sana said patting my boyfriend and I's back pretty hard

"Yah! knock it off! that hurts!" I said distancing myself from her pulling my boyfriend with me

"Sorry sorry, I'm just so proud of us, *Third Night Builders* is only 3 years old and we've managed to snag a big project already" Sana

said teary eyed

"Awww.. Sana-chan, we're proud of you too, you're a great CEO, give yourself the credit you deserve" I said hugging her

"Well, Yeah duh? it's really me who carried this team, I was just being polite, I didn't want you guys to feel incompetent"

"Owwiieee! I was kidding!..ouch! you bitch! that really hurt! Kookie! collect your girl before I do something bad to her! owwwww!!! "

"Babe, let's go, she seems serious about it" My boyfriend said shielding me from Sana

"Bye Sana-chan! feel better!" I said teasing her and she gave me the middle finger.

:

:

Parking Lot

"Babe, congratulations, Ms. Rosé really liked your proposal, I'm not kidding though, I think I saw heart eyes when she was looking at your design" Jung-kook said squeezing my hand

"Well, you helped me out baby, of course she'll like it"

"I helped you out? How? all I do is cling myself to you"

"You did a lot for me babe, you have no idea, to be honest, you were my inspiration behind that Final draft" I said to him shyly

He didn't say anything, I looked at him and saw that he's smiling and blushing like crazy, he then stopped walking all of a sudden and pulled me into a tight hug

"I love you so much Lalisa, I really do" He whispered in my ear then gave me a kiss on the cheek and buried his face on my neck

My heart melted at what he did

I really love him too.

When he found me, I was at my worse, but he never judged me, never left my side, he loved me even when I didn't love myself.

He saved me from Her..

"I love you too, My Love. Never leave me, okay?"

He broke off our hug and looked deep into my eyes

"Never, Lalisa" He said then he leaned in, kissing my lips full of love.

1 WEEK LATER

JENNIE'S POV

Location: Jennie's Apartment-- Avalon Riverview/Avalon Bay Communities

Long Island City, New York

8 PM

"Bao, I'm going to Miss you, this is the first time in a long time that you're going to be away from me" Jackson said with a sad tone, hugging me from behind while I take out some of my clothes from my closet

I turned around to face him, wrapping my arms around his neck and I gave him a peck on the lips to make him smile but he ended up giving me a cute pout

"I'm sorry Bao, I'm going to miss you too. If only I could bring you with me but you need to be here for our build, it's almost done though.. and I'll see you in three weeks yeah?" I said giving him a loving smile

I'm flying alone to Korea tomorrow night and I'm a bit nervous about it, I really wish he could come with me to ease the tension that I'm feeling but sadly, he has prior commitments

*****Sigh*****

Being a grown-up sucks sometimes.

"Yes, three weeks, It's going to be my first time to see Korea, I expect to have a good time and for you to show me around" He said kissing my cheeks

"Come on Bao, when did I ever not give you a good time?" I said with a flirty tone

"True..damn, I'm really going to Miss You Baby, please please call and text me okay? I'll be waiting for it like a loyal puppy to his master"

"Of course, you don't even need to say it, that's automatic" I said pinching his cheeks

He looked at me then he caressed my cheek

"I love you so much Jennie.. You're going to be alright though right?"

He knows about My broken relationship with My Parents and he's been seriously worried sick that they might do what they did to me again 8 years ago but I reassured him that they can't hurt me anymore, I'm a much stronger version of myself now.

Jackson told me that no matter what happens, him and his family will always protect me, My Darling saved me from all the misery and I love him dearly.

I wish I met him sooner.

"I will Bao. Thank You, for everything, I owe you the life that I have right now, you're such a blessing to me, I hope you know that"

I said to him then I leaned in to give him a quick passionate kiss "I love you too, Jackson"

We ended up making out and making love after that, I didn't get to finish packing until it was around 1 in the morning.

:

John F. Kennedy International Airport

7 AM

"Bao, take care of yourself okay? call or text me right away as soon as you land" Jackson said then he pulled me into a tight hug

"Awww.. my little lovebug, don't worry I will" I responded hugging him back just as tight drawing circles on his back to relax him.

He didn't get to sleep much last night because he said he's missing me already, he actually ended up crying.

I felt so bad for him. My boyfriend isn't really a crier but I felt his longing for me

"I love you Bao, don't forget about me" He said pulling away from our hug

"Forget about you? not a chance Bao..anyways I gotta go alright? see you in three weeks my love, don't work too hard, I love you too" I said then I gave him a quick kiss on the lips.

I gave him a last hug, then I waved him goodbye, then I went to the business lounge to wait for my flight.

:

:

14 Hours Later, I finally arrived in Seoul.

Rosé contacted me other day saying that Sana's team is supposed to be picking me up. I told her that it isn't really necessary but she insisted because she wanted me to see Sana's Headquarters because that's where I'll be working for the next month.

Rosé also provided me a Suite to one of their hotels here in Seoul

so I wouldn't need to worry about my living space.

Hopefully the tour of Sana's building won't take long, I'm really tired from that 14 hour flight.

:

I'm in the baggage claim waiting for my luggages. I texted my boyfriend right away to let him know that I've arrived. I don't expect any response from him though since he's probably still asleep.

"Jane Park" a familiar voice called out my adopted name, I turned around to see Sana with a neutral expression

"Minatozaki" I said giving her the same treatment

"So, are you ready to go?" She asked like she's in a hurry

"Minatozaki, can't you see? I don't have my luggages yet"

"Why didn't you just have it delivered? what's the matter with you?"

"Why would I do that when I can wait for a few minutes instead of waiting for days?" I said irritated

She groaned and just ended up sitting down and waited with me

5 minutes later, I finally saw my luggages

I tried getting it out of the carousel but it was a little too heavy, Jackson was actually the one who did the carrying

"Need help Ms. Park?" Sana asked while she gives me a mocking grin

I rolled my eyes at her and said "No, I got this, I don't need your--whoa!"

"Still full of pride I see, here, let's take it out from the Carousel together" she said as she and I successfully got my first luggage

"What did you just say about me?!" I said feeling upset already

I do not have time for Sana's stupidity, I just got off a 14 hour flight, I'm hungry, tired--- I've only been here in Seoul for 30 minutes and she already managed to ruin my first day!

"I'm kidding, Sheesh will you relax?" She said as she took another luggage--that's 2 of 3

"Mind helping me out princess?" Sana asked but I refused to help her, she's still as annoying as ever.

"Do it yourself Minatozaki, I have a lot of Pride in me and it's too heavy for me to carry and besides, I only got one more, keep at it, you're doing a great job" I said grinning while crossing my arms

"Tch. Some things never change. Jennie, you're still a spoiled brat, I'd give you that" She said looking irritated then she carried my final luggage off the carousel "There, 3 out of 3, now let's go"

Sana walked ahead of me pulling one of my luggage and I followed her with me pulling two.

:

"How far away is your headquarters from the Airport, Minatozaki?"

"Not far, like 30 minutes"

"I see.." was all I said

I'll probably just take a nap then, I'm exhausted

We reached her SUV and we put the luggages in the trunk. I then got in at the back seat of the car, Sana looked back and gave me a weird look after entering the driver's side

"What are you doing?"

"What does it look like I'm doing? I'm putting on my seat belt"

"You're not going to sit in the passenger's seat? you're going to make me look like your personal driver."

"***smirk*** Nope. I won't be sitting there thanks, I still want to live, and besides, I'm sleepy and I don't want to sit next to a loud mouth"

She glared at me and didn't say anything anymore, she then looked in the front chanting "One month Sana, just one month"

"You're so dramatic, anyways I'm taking a nap, do a good job driving or else I won't give you a tip and a good review" I said laughing which resulted her to groan for the nth time.

:

:

30 Minutes Later, we finally arrived at their Headquarters and we started the tour right away.

The building looks very sleek and modern, it has 11 floors and it's very much like Gold Constructions' headquarters. It's pretty impressive. But of course, My Building is bigger and better.

"And this is going to be your office Ms. Jane, I hope it's good enough for your taste" Sana said with a teasing tone

"Sana, stop being a child and talk to me like an adult will you? I swear it's like I'm back in High School all over again" I said to her but she just stuck her tongue out

"Seriously? I hate you"

"You're about to hate me more, Lisa is on her way right now to present the materials that we're going to use" She said with an evil grin

I went wide eyed and my mouth hung open, my heart is beating like crazy at what she said

"Wha-what did you say? Lisa? as in Lisa Manoban?" I asked clarifying

"Yep" She said blankly

"What is she-- wha-what's her role in the project?" I asked with my voice trembling

"What? nobody briefed you about this? She's our main architect" Sana said and I started freaking out

*Oh my God! Oh my God! Oh my God! she's going to be here??
Why didn't anyone tell me that she's The Architect??!!!
That means I'm going to be working with her too??!!!*

I took out my phone hurriedly and checked myself out without realizing

I fixed my hair and checked my make up and

Oh my goodness I look so worn out! and I'm wearing soccer pants and a hoodie for Christ's sake!

I checked my breath and thank goodness it doesn't smell as bad

"You need a mint Ms. Jane?" Sana asked

"Yes! do you have any?! give me one" I said desperately

"Oooff--sorry left it in the car" Sana said laughing

"Why you little piece of sh--"

"Lisa! over here!" Sana said out of nowhere

I felt goosebumps all over my body, I wanted to runaway and hide in Timbuktu or something

*Shit!
Shit!*

Shit!

What do I do??!!

WHAT DO I DO??!!

Few seconds later, I feel a presence approaching us.

Someone tall is standing behind me and then she spoke

"Hey Ladies"

That Voice..

It's..

Lisa..

I turned around slowly and...

(A/N: This is Lisa's best look imo)

My Love..

My Yeobo..

My Baby..

Mine...

Mine...

Mine...

All Mine!

I'm claiming her against my will, It's like it's automatic.

I thought the sense entitlement of wanting to own her is long gone but

seeing her again looking like...THAT?!

What the Hell Jennie? No! Stop!

Let's think about Jackson quick!

Jackson!

Jackson!

Ja--Lis..

Lisa..

I mentally facepalmed myself, I'm so pathetic I swear.

But.. Lisa...

She's really here!

She's right in front of me!

"Ms. Jane? You there?" I heard Sana say then she snaps her fingers in front of me

"H-Huh? Yeah. I---" I stopped mid-sentence, I feel myself getting hot and I already know I'm blushing, I probably look like a freaking ripened tomato now.

Fuck My Life!

I wish the ground would just swallow me whole!

"Hi Ms. Jane Park, it's really nice to see you again" Lisa said to me smiling widely.

She has that aura of confidence but not in a cocky way, her smile is still as bright as I remember.

She's still so.. Beautiful, her face matured a bit her jawline is more defined..

She's so..HOT!

Wow...

I couldn't stop staring at her.

"Ms. Park?" Lisa called me again.

I saw a concerned look on her face as she put her hand on my shoulder which snapped me back to reality

"I-uh--It's ni-nice to see you too Ms. Manoban" I said moving away from her touch because if I don't, I might end up fainting.

"A-anyways, I think I need to rest now, could you drop me off to My Hotel Sana? I'm a little nauseated and tired" I said but she shook her head 'No'

"Awww sorry, No can-do Ms. Jane, this concludes our tour, I'm going to meet up with my other clients, But Hey! maybe Lisa can drop you off" Sana said like she really wants to initiate some kind of drama.

"Yeah, I can do that, sure, Park-Hyatt downtown, right? Ms. Jane?" Lisa said still smiling at me

"Uhm, on second thought I'll just take an Uber, drop off my luggages in my hotel will you Minatozaki? I'll text you the details, see you guys later. bye!" I said and I ran away like it's nobody's business.

"Wait! Ms. Jane!" I heard them both say but I didn't look back

I need to get away from her.

I need to or I might just lose my self control.

LISA'S POV

Location: Third Night Constructions Headquarters

"Wait! Ms. Jane!"

Sana and I both called her out but she just kept running and before I know it, she's out of sight

"What's up with her? Jennie's become such a weirdo" Sana commented

"Sana-chan, I know what you're trying to do, why are you giving her a hard time?" I said to my friend, I really don't appreciate how she treated Jennie.

I don't even know why I'm defending her when I'm supposed to hate her.

"Oh come on Lisa-chan, didn't you see how flustered she was when she saw you? I bet she still got the hots for you" My friend said nudging me on the side

"Hots for me? what is this the 90's? and will you Shut up, she's just really tired and she needed to rest"

"Whatever. Anyways, Change topic! Oooh Lala Lisa.. look at you though, you look very nice..and I loveeee your new hair, did you just get it done?" Sana pointed out

"Huh? Oh yeah.. Yesterday.. Uhm.. thanks" I said to her then I saw her smirking at me

"What's with the smirk?" I asked her knitting my eyebrows

"Oh nothing, I just find it **SUPER CONVENIENT** that you would actually get your hair done in advance and then dress up nicely on *THIS* Particular Day.. I mean..on a normal day you're just wearing a hoodie, sweats and sneakers and now you're looking like a Glamazon who's about to attend Paris Fashion week..but! I don't know? maybe it's just coincidence" She says

"Glamazon?I'm wearing a T-shirt for Goodness sakes and what are you trying to say? that I purposely made myself look good for her? is that it?" I asked feeling annoyed

"**Her?** what are you talking about? did I involve another person? Lisa-chan, why are you being so defensive?" she said laughing

"This is ridiculous, I don't have any time for this! talk to me when you're ready to be mature!" I said walking out on my friend

"Kk! love you!" Sana yelled out as she continues to laugh.

:

:

PARKING LOT

I stomped my way towards my car and entered, slamming my door

Stupid Sana! She's really pissing me off!

Is it so bad that I want to look pretty once in a while??

I'm so upset about what my friend said that I forgot that I was supposed to review the materials with her

"Oh well" I whispered to myself

I took a deep breath and closed my eyes, leaning back on my car seat-Flooding my mind with the images of Her..

Jennie...

My Jennie...

What??

NO!

Stop Lisa!

You Hate Her!

She Hurt You!

Ughh!

Why of all People did it have to be Jennie Kim?!

I was very anxious and nervous when I was walking into our Headquarters earlier--I actually threw up before meeting Sana and Her.. I didn't know what to expect

I kept telling myself not to slap her or yell at her and just act professional like I'm supposed to.

I'm 27 now, I should be able to handle my emotions better.

But when I saw her again.. My Heart was beating insanely fast, I thought I was going to have a heart attack.

All the hate that I felt for her over the years seemed to vanish

completely--like it wasn't even there in the first place.

All I felt was warmth and fuzzy feeling in my chest

Jennie still has those cute chubby cheeks..The feline eyes and that little mole on top of her left eyelid that I adored so much, and her beautiful baby face..

She was just wearing simple clothes and she barely have any make up on but she still managed to take my breath away..

To be honest, I wanted to squeeze her into a tight hug because she was looking so adorable, it took a lot of will power to stop myself from doing so...

It's not like I'm still in love with her, if I'm gonna have to choose between her and Jung-kook, I'm not even going to think twice about it--it's Jung-kook for sure.

It's just that.. I guess seeing her again after all these years..it hit me in a totally unexpected way.

****Sigh****

I need to get my shit together, This just nerves--I haven't seen her in a while, She's my Ex, No Need to be Nervous.

I promised myself that I'm not going to let my fucked up past ruin my present--more specifically, my relationship with my boyfriend. He's very important to me and I can't lose him

I have Jung-kook now..

He loves me a lot and I love him so much..

I wouldn't trade him for anything or ANYONE..

38.) Seoreunyeodeol

A/N: Warning, this book, if it isn't obvious enough--contains Cheating and Lying, so try not to get too carried away ☐☐♀☐

Title: Bed

Artist: J. Holiday

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

LISA'S POV

I'm on my way back to our office after having breakfast to cool myself off and get away from Sana's teasing.

Jennie is still stuck in my mind, I couldn't stop thinking about her.

It's been a few hours since I last saw her and for some odd reason, I'm actually finding myself wishing that I'd see her again before this day ends.

I'm really hating myself right now but at the same time, I feel so excited.

Why?

Maybe I'm just trying to prove something to her? Yeah that's it right?

I smirked to myself remembering at how she was staring at me earlier

She was so shocked that she started stuttering.

Alright, I admit it, Sana's right, I did glammed up for this day.. I

wanted to look pretty for her.

I wanted to show her that I'm way better than okay, I wanted to show her what she's missing.

Not to be conceited but, I wanted to rub it in her face at how attractive and confident I've become ever since she left me 8 years ago

I know I already have a boyfriend and all-I know that I shouldn't be trying to impress anyone except maybe for him but I couldn't help it.

It's not like I'm cheating on Jung-kook right?

As I continue to drive while thinking about my Ex, I heard my phone ring.

Sana's calling.

What does she want now?

My Phone is connected to my car via bluetooth so all I needed to do is to press the answer button on my steering wheel

LS: Yeoboseyo?

SN: Lisa-chan, I have a favor to ask you, can you drop off Jennie's Luggages later after work? I'm going to be stuck here in the office until ungodly hours and I feel bad if she'd stink because she doesn't have any clothes to wear.

LS: Wow, That's a mouthful, but ok, Sure, I'll drop it off

I said with a neutral tone but deep down I'm elated knowing that I'll get to see her again

SN: It's okay right?

LS: Yes! I already said I'll do it.

SN: Lisa-chan, don't get too excited now

My friend said with a teasing tone, I can already see her face right now.

LS: Whatever, I'm ending this. Bye!

After hanging up the phone, I found myself smiling again.

My wish was totally granted right away, I mean I didn't want to waste all the effort making myself look pretty just for her to stare at me for a few minutes so this is perfect, she'll get to see more of *THIS*.

Jennie..

I'll see you later.

:

:

7 PM

I'm at the entrance of Park-Hyatt Hotel, I asked the one of the Bellhops to help me out with the luggages, Jennie brought 3 big ones so I really couldn't carry all of them, It was already a struggle for Sana and I when we were taking it out from Her car.

I needed to call Jennie to let her know that I'm here, Sana gave me her number so I could contact her.

As I was about dial her number, I felt nervous all of a sudden, my hand is shaking for some reason

OK, Relax you idiot.

You've talked to her on the phone before

I took a deep breath and gathered up my strength then I pressed the call button, few rings later, she finally answered

JN: Hmmm...***yawn*** Yeoboseyo?

She answered sleepily

Shit.. I miss her bedroom voice

No Lisa! fucking focus!

I cleared my throat then I spoke up

LS: Hey Ms. Park, I'm sorry to wake you up from your nap, it's Lisa, I have your stuff with me, is it okay if we go to your room? I have the bellboy helping me out with it

JN: Oh..He-hey Lisa, Yeah sure, I'm on the 21st Floor Room 2117

LS: Ok. See you.

I said to her then I hung up

I told the bell boy that I'm just going to use the rest room real quick, I wanted to do some touch ups with my hair and make up, I sprayed some mint spray on my mouth and a little perfume on my neck.

When I'm satisfied with how I look, I exited the rest room and headed towards Jennie's suite.

:

:

I knocked on Jennie's Door and waited for a few seconds before she finally answered.

She opened the door and what I saw caught me off guard

She's rubbing her eyes and yawned cutely..

Jennie's just wearing a black silk robe, her hair is disheveled but in a really sexy way-like she just had sex-Sex Hair Look!

I found myself biting my lower lip unintentionally but Luckily, I caught myself and greeted her instead

"Hey Miss Jane. Sorry again to bother you, but I have your stuff" I said smiling at her

"No, it's fine Lalisa, come in" she said smiling back at me

The bell boy and I went in and we took her luggages from the Cart. I thanked him and gave him a small tip then he went on his

way

"Thank you for bringing it to me, sorry for taking up your time, can I offer you anything? I mean I'm sure Rosé wouldn't charge me if I took out some snacks or drinks from the fridge" She said giggling

"No, I'm fine Ms. Jane, you left so fast earlier that we didn't have any choice but to bring 'em to you" I joked making her look uncomfortable.

"Oh, yeah.. about that, I'm so sorry, I know I was being rude, I was just feeling a bit tired is all, I apologize" she said to me which made me feel bad

"No! You're fine Ms. Jane, sorry it was supposed to be a joke, I forgot that you just got off a long flight" I said rubbing my nape

There was an awkward silence between us, we both cleared our throats looking everywhere and anywhere-avoiding each other's gaze

"So Uhm.. how have you been?" She asked casually but I sensed a hint of uneasiness in her voice

"I've been okay..yeah, of course there's some ups and downs but I got through it so I guess I'm good. yeah. Uhm.. You?"

"Same as you.. ups and downs.. hell and back but I survived..so I guess I'm good too.."

"Ahh.. that's good then.."

There's another air of awkwardness between us, I'm actually wondering why I'm not excusing myself out yet, I mean, I already dropped off her luggages, my work here is done.

So why..

"The years have been really great to you Lalisa.. you look really pretty" Jennie said out of nowhere which made my heart skip a beat.

I'm starting to feel nervous again but I kept it together and I gave her a confident smile.

"Thanks, But look at you, you look really great Jen- I mean Ms. Jane, it's like you haven't aged at all"

"Aww, you think so? I was kind of hoping you'd say that I looked different too" she said pouting

Wow..that was adorable.

*****chuckle**** I mean yeah you look different too in a way, same but different, does that make sense?"

*****laugh**** I mean I feel like it doesn't but for some reason, I get what you're trying to say, so thank you for the compliment, I was trying to fish by the way but you were kind of slow there"

I giggled

"Oh shoot you were? It's not my fault, you're not very good at giving hints" I responded.

"What? Yeah I Am! I even did a little pout!" She said crossing her arms pouting harder

I laughed and shook my head

"Ok, Fine. You're still as beautiful as ever, more mature but in a really good way, you aged like fine wine. there. Happy?"

She just shrugged "Meh. Too late. Moment's gone. You hurt my feelings already"

"Awww.. come on, is there anything I can do to make you feel better?" I said playing along with her

Her playful demeanor changed all of a sudden to a more serious one.

"Yeah. Have Dinner with me" She said.

"H-huh? Dinner?"

"Yeah. Dinner"

She's looking at me like she's staring right into my soul while waiting for my answer. I feel a bit exposed.

"What do you say? Have dinner with me, Beautiful" Jennie said sensually as she repeated her invite

What the hell? Is she seriously flirting with me??

"Uhm, I.. I mean, I don't want to impose Ms. Jane" I said not giving her a straight answer

She shook her head and said "No, you're not imposing at all, if you were then I wouldn't have invited you.."

Damn, is it just me or is it getting a little hot in here

"Ok, but I gotta warn you, I have expensive taste now" I said jokingly to lighten up the mood

"Uh-Huh.. about that, Actually.. I was kind of hoping we could order room service and catch up, you know?" She said then she paused

She walked closer to me...as in close- invading my personal space.

"You can order whatever you want Lalisa, I'll pay.. I think it's more appropriate if we talk here in my suite, there's more privacy here, don't you agree?" She said to me

She's biting her lower lip- leaning in closer and closer. Our lips were about to touch but I stopped her, pushing her by her shoulders gently

"Jennie. Stop. What are you doing?"

"**smirk**What? I didn't do anything"

"You were about to do something"

"And what was I about to do? could you be more specific?" She asked me with a challenging tone but I stayed quiet.

I couldn't answer her.

She let out another playful smirk and traced her index finger on my collar bone

"Exactly. So Anyways, maybe we can talk about our upcoming project? don't make me beg now"

I thought about it for a second and I made up my mind, I'm going to agree with dinner, we are in this project together, might as well start early so we can finish early.

"Fine. As long as you're paying"

She chuckled and nodded her head

"Let me just change first, you can go ahead and order for us, I'll have whatever you're having" she said then she pulled one of her luggage to her room

"Oh okay.. Go Ahead Ms. Jane"

I picked up her hotel room phone to order.

:

20 minutes later, Jennie came out of her room wearing a loose white shirt crop top with black sports bra underneath it and really short jean shorts.

I swear part of her ass is showing by how short her shorts is, she also tied her hair into a neat pony tail and..

Is She Wearing Make-up?

I stared at her for a few seconds, she caught me and sent a flirtatious wink my way, I looked away quickly and prayed to heavens that I won't faint

Good God!

She's trying to do something I just know it, maybe having dinner with her isn't such a great idea, I should just go.

I heard her footsteps as she walks towards me, then she tapped my shoulder to get my attention.

I then turned around to face her

"Did you get to order for us already?" She asked

"Uh..yeah, Surf and Turf is what appealed to me the most, I hope that's okay"

"That's perfectly fine, I love seafood and red meat together" She said flashing her gummy smile

"That's.. great"

"What's wrong?" Jennie asked knitting her eyebrows

"N-nothing I just.. uhm, can I use your rest room real quick?"

"Yeah.. go ahead" she said then I went on my way, rushing to escape the sexual tension that I'm feeling, I don't want to assume anything but I just need to take a little breather

This is more than what I wished for. I just wanted to see her and now I'm having dinner with her?

I'm so stupid!

Why did I agree in the first place? I'm acting like a hormonal teenager again.

I stayed in the restroom for quite a while, Jennie had to knock just to get me out of there

"Lisa, are you alive? Food is here"

I opened the door and gave her an awkward smile

"Were you able to take care of your business or you need more time?" She asked concerned

"No, I'm fine now, let's eat?"

She smiled at me and nodded

"Yeah, lets, I already set up the food and everything"

We went on our way to the table, sat down and we started eating

It was a little bit awkward at first but of course, Jennie with her social self was able to come out with topics, some of it was about the project but most of the things we talked about had nothing to do with it

I gotta admit I do miss having conversations with her, we're just laughing, relating ourselves at the struggles of having a real estate business and everything else in between.

We didn't touch the past though, it was a big NO NO, it's too soon..

To be honest, I don't even think it's necessary to talk about it anymore

I know that this is a spur of the moment thought but maybe I should just forget about the past.. I've been holding on to it for the longest time now--- It's not healthy.

Talking to her again like this made me realize that her and I are in a much better place now and It got me thinking that maybe we could actually be friends.

Hating on Jennie is not going to benefit me anyway, it worked out for the best--in the end, I found the love of my life, I have a successful career, what more could I ask for really?

At the back of my mind though, I couldn't help but think about all the flirting and seducing that she was trying to do earlier, I knew she was trying to kiss me I mean duh? it was obvious, but maybe she was just being playful?

Oh well, just as long as she doesn't do it again.

I would hate to give her a slap if she tries to do something that's crossing the line.

:

:

"More wine?" Jennie asked

"Yeah sure, this is my second glass right?"

"Fifth actually" she answered matter of factly

"What?? I've reached my limit, I can only handle three usually"

No wonder I'm feeling a bit dizzy

"I mean, it's red wine, it's good for you, cheers" Jennie said putting up her glass, I did the same and we clinked it together

...We ended up finishing the whole bottle, I'm really drunk, I got carried away with our conversation and I just kept drinking wine with her

:

:

1:30 AM

"Alright.. well..it's REALLY **hiccup** Late..I'm going Ho-whoa! Hahaha I'm dizzy **hiccup** " I said almost falling on my face but luckily, Jennie caught me

"Lisa, maybe it's better if you stay here for tonight, it's not safe for you to drive while under the influence" Jennie suggested

"No..No I'm fine.. I can totally **hiccup** drive..Watch" I said getting out of her hold

I tried walking but I ended up falling on the floor, but instead of getting upset, I ended up laughing like a hyena

"Lalisa, why did you drink so much if you couldn't handle your alcohol? You're such a lightweight-- what an Amateur" she said helping me to stand up on my feet

"Hey! **hiccup** Who are you calling Miniature? **hiccup** You're shorter than I am" I said then I laughed again

"I said Amateur" Jennie responded

"Oooohhh.. whoops, my bad Ms. Jane" I said continuing to hiccup

She lead me to her bedroom and laid me down gently and tucked me into bed

"Hmmm.. That feels nice..Night Night..." I said smiling
But before I completely close my eyes..

I felt a something tracing my lips.. then out of nowhere, I don't know if I was imagining things but, I felt a hot breath on my mouth, kissing me..

The kiss felt passionate and there was a lot of yearning, it only lasted for maybe a few seconds then it was gone

"You're Mine, Lalisa"

I could've sworn I heard someone say, the tone of voice was full of Possessiveness-like the person literally wants to claim ownership over me, but my inebriated self was too out of it to comprehend if it was just my mind playing tricks on me or it was happening for real-

I don't even know anymore, Everything is literally spinning, I've never been this drunk before.

But I ended up responding to the person anyway

"I'm....Yours...." was the last thing I said before I completely blacked out.

JENNIE'S POV

I laid Lisa down gently on my bed, I'm doing my best to be careful not to hurt her because I know how fragile she is, when I got her completely on the bed, I tucked her in

"Hmmm.. That feels nice..Night Night.." She said but I didn't respond but instead, I kneeled down to level with her face

Her eyes are half closed but I know she's too drunk to even realize that I'm staring at her longingly. I traced my thumb on her lips as lightly as I could

I don't know what came over me but I ended up kissing her lips..It's so inviting, I couldn't help myself, I really wanted to take a bite but decided against it.

Her lips are still as delicious as I remember, it doesn't help with

the fact that her breath was hot and smelled of alcohol which for some reason, turned me on even more.

The kiss was short but I made sure there was passion involved, I know that what I did was wrong.

First of all, I'm in a very committed and serious relationship with Jackson second is that I'm kissing her and she's out cold, I'm taking advantage of her drunk self.

But I didn't feel any regret or shame at the moment, I'm actually glad I did it. I yearned for her for so long and now that she's in front of me, does she really think I'd miss the chance?

If I'm gonna be honest, I wanted to have my way with her.. do more to her than just kissing..

I want more from her but that wouldn't be fair, she looks so vulnerable and helpless and I would feel bad if I'd fuck her when she's at this state.

After the Kiss, I stared at her a little bit more, taking in her pretty features

"You're so unfair you know that? coming over here looking so beautiful.. did you do this on purpose to seduce me? because if you did then congratulations, you succeeded..I couldn't resist you, it's like you're asking to be fucked.." I said whispering to her then I paused and continued to admire her beauty

"You're Mine, Lalisa"

I said to her possessively but what I didn't expect was for her to actually respond to me

"I'm....Yours...."

Needless to say I was surprised, but I shouldn't be feeling it too much--She's drunk, She probably doesn't even know who she's talking to right now.

This girl probably thinks that she's talking to Elmo from Sesame

Street.

She has a wild imagination.

I consider myself more mature now because of all the hardships that I've been through over the years.. but, seeing her again, I can feel my old possessive and obsessive self coming back, it's trying to take over me and I'm having a hard time controlling it, so I stood up and left her alone before I do something that I shouldn't.

I went to the bathroom and took a warm shower, then out of nowhere, I can feel hot tears started streaming down my face.

I know I said earlier that I didn't feel bad about kissing Lisa but My Boyfriend's face suddenly flashed into my mind and a wave of guilt came to me all at once

I love Jackson, I have no doubt in my mind that I do, but the carnal desire that I felt for Lisa earlier was too strong and was heightened by alcohol.

After taking a shower, I took one pillow from my bed and a spare blanket from the closet and set them on the couch for me to sleep in.

Nobody needs to know about what I did, it was just a kiss, a simple kiss and nothing more.

Tomorrow when she wakes up, I'm sure she wouldn't even remember a thing.. and then..

I'll see her off with a smile.

:

:

THE NEXT DAY

8:30 AM

I woke up pretty early, I decided to make breakfast for Lisa and I.

I went to the grocery store conveniently located across the Hotel that I'm staying in, Good thing they opened early or else I wouldn't

be able to purchase the things that I need

Today is the first day that I'm going to be working at Third Night Headquarters, I rented a car yesterday and I scheduled it to be delivered to me later an hour after I get off work.

About 20 Minutes Later, Lisa finally got up

She walks sleepily to the kitchen yawning and scratching her head, she looks really adorable, I miss seeing her like this

It's as if we're back from playing house again 8 years ago.

No. Please don't go there Jen.

Lisa's just being nice and professional..

That's all there is to it.

"Hey. Good Morning" I said to her, smiling

"****yawn**** Hi.. Good Morning Ms. Jane, what time is it?" She asked as she sat down at the the little dining table

"It's 8:30, here's some advil and water for that hangover" I answered as I approached her

"Thank You! You're a lifesaver" She said giving me a weak smile

"No Problem, just sit back okay? I'm almost done cooking our breakfast"

"Oh Good! I'm starving! Are you making your famous pancakes?" She asked excitedly

I chuckled

"I don't know about famous but Yeah I made pancakes"

I finished cooking the bacon and eggs then I fixed two plates for her and I

"****smile****Uuuwaahhh! This looks so good! Thank you!"

"You're welcome, dig in"

And with that she started eating fast

"Hey slow down will you? You're going to choke, the food isn't going anywhere" I said worriedly

"I'm not going to cho- ****cough!**cough!**cough!****"

"Lisa!" I said standing up abruptly then I went behind her patting her back pretty hard

She continued coughing for a few seconds more then she cleared her throat

"Whew..that was close huh?" Lisa said laughing nervously

"I told you to slow down didn't I?!!"

"Whoa.. Hey.. don't be mad okay? I'll slow down this time I promise, just..relax" Lisa said holding up her hands

I just glared at her and then I went back to my seat

The whole breakfast was quiet after that, it got awkward again

I didn't mean to yell at her, I just panicked because I thought her airway was gonna be blocked completely.

I feel her gaze at my direction but I pretended that I'm not aware, I just kept eating.

After Breakfast she offered to wash the dishes while I clean up the table

:

"Well..Uh.. I'll see you later at the office Ms. Jane"

Lisa is now standing by the door

"Yeah, I'll see you later, are you sure you're able to drive now? Maybe you should call an uber" I told her

"No, I'm good, My Condo is not too far away from here, I'm completely sober now, thank you for last night"

"No Problem"

She opened the door but not without waving a goodbye to me, I waved back giving her a tight lip smile then she closed the door

I exhaled sharply and closed my eyes

I checked my phone and saw multiple missed facetime calls and messages from Jackson, I was totally caught up on Lisa and I's bonding that I forgot to update my boyfriend

I'm just going to tell him I got Jet lag, I mean it's still a perfect excuse since I just got here yesterday

Great..

24 hours here in Seoul and I'm already lying to Jackson.

"Lalisa.. What are you doing to me again?"

39.) Seoreunahop

Title: Breathe

Artist: Little Mix

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

JENNIE'S POV

I've arrived at *Third Night* Building around 10 in the morning, I took an uber since I don't have my rental car yet. I'm hoping it'll be a good day because I still feel a bit dizzy from my hangover.

I went in the elevator and pushed the 11th floor button, As soon as the elevator door opened, I went straight to my office that Sana provided for me.

It actually isn't that bad, The office is spacious and minimalistic with neutral colors, It's my style. Sana and I may not get along much but we have quite a lot in common and same taste when it comes to interiors.

I went in and left the door open, I sat down on my office chair and turned on the computer and started working.

I texted Jackson to let him know that I'm already in the office.

:

I was typing away when somebody knocked on my door, I looked up and it was Sana

"Hey Kim I mean, Ms. Park-good morning" She said smiling

"Hey" I responded blankly then went back to what I'm doing

"What's with the sour mood? It's your first day here in *Third Night*, try to be excited will you?"

"Sana, Please be quiet, You're making my headache worse"

"Headache? Ms. Park, You're barely starting, what'd you do last night?"

"Is this part of the job to be interrogated? Need I remind you that I don't work for you Minatozaki?"

"You don't, but you're working in *MY* building so.."

I scoffed and decided to just ignore her, She's just going to keep bugging me if I keep talking to her.

"Hey Lisa-chan! Good morning!" Sana said cheerfully

I automatically stopped what I'm doing when I heard Lisa's name

"Hey. Good Morning" I heard her say to Sana

I felt like my ears wiggled and I couldn't help but smile at the sound of her voice.

She then peaked in my office and greeted me good morning as well.

My heart is beating like crazy and I'm feeling so happy. I know I just saw her a few hours ago but that doesn't change the fact that seeing her again now excites me like a teenage girl crushing on the school's heartthrob.

But then, I heard another voice coming from what sounds like a

guy.

"Hey babe! you left your phone in my car" the guy said which caused the two girls to look at his direction.

Babe? So Tzuyu and Sana broke up?

I thought for sure they're still together, and here I am thinking forever actually exist

"Oh thank you babe"

Huh??

Wait a minute..

Did Lisa Just...?

I saw the guy approach Lisa instead of Sana. It felt like my world fell apart slowly before my eyes and my heart literally stopped when I saw him kiss her.

The heartbreak that I felt automatically changed to anger right away after realizing what happened-I wanted to slap the both of them especially Lisa for letting him kiss her.

"Ms. Park? Hey, are you alright?"

I didn't answer whoever asked me if I'm alright because I'm definitely NOT alright.

I'm about to murder someone!

I feel myself glaring at both Lisa and the guy who dared kiss her in front me. In my head, I'm already thinking hundreds of ways to hurt him.

I couldn't stand the environment that I'm in right now so I stood up from my chair and got out of the office before I kill someone-- Specifically, Lisa and her bastard of a boyfriend.

I made sure I bump shoulders with the cheating slut, maybe she'll get the hint that I'm fucking furious with her.

"Wait! Miss Park! where are you going? We're going to have a huddle in a little bit!"

I kept walking until I reached the elevator then U pressed the Rooftop button.

The elevator door was about to close when all of a sudden, somebody caught up to me.

It was Sana, as soon as the elevator door closed, she pressed the emergency button which made the elevator stop

"What the?! Sana! What did you do?!" I asked pissed off.

I tried to reach for the buttons but she blocked me

"I stopped the elevator obviously. What the hell was that about Kim?"

"I don't know what you're talking about, now move! I need to get some air!"

"I'm not moving, tell me what's up, why are you being weird?" Sana said crossing her arms

"You're a chid Sana, leave me the hell alone will you?!" I said while doing my best to get Her out of the way so I can press any button just to get out of the elevator because I feel suffocated

"You're Jealous aren't you?" Sana said

"What are you talking about now Minatazoki?!"

"You know what I'm talking about. It's because Lisa and Kookie isn't it? Why else would you throw a fit all of a sudden?"

"Give me a break! She can be with whoever fuck boy she wants to be with for all I care! Her and I are over! It's been 8 years! Obviously she fucking moved on already so why can't you?!"

"Why are you yelling Jennie? You need to relax"

"Don't tell me what to do! I'm yelling 'cos you're pissing me off! Why are you insisting that I'm Jealous?! Fuck Lisa! Fuck that guy! And especially, Fuck their Fucking Relationship!"

"I'm insisting? I only mentioned it once and you call that insisting? You're pathetic you know that? You keep telling me that I'm a child? you should take a good look at yourself right now, You can't even handle your emotions well and it's only your first day here" Sana said with a mocking tone

Her and I are in an angry staring match right now and neither one of us wants to back down

"You're going to be seeing a lot of them together Jennie, so you better get your shit together or pull out of the Jeju Project, if you're gonna let your Jealousy get in the way then I'm telling you right now, we don't need you or your company in this"

"Fuck You Sana!"

"I don't need you for that Kim, I have Tzuyu and she's great at it. Don't ruin this for us or you're gonna get what's coming to you. Arraseo?"

"Don't threaten me Minatozaki. I can destroy all this if I really

want to"

"I bet you can, but we're not gonna go down without a fight Kim, now throw all that senseless jealousy away. You want me to be honest to you? Lisa loves Jung-kook, he's the love of her life"

"Shut the fuck up! Why are you telling me all this! I don't need to hear it! it's unnecessary!"

"Oh but it is necessary. You could say that this is me rubbing it in your face that she's better off without you, you didn't deserve her Kim. You left her behind"

"Who do you think you are huh?! What happened between Lisa and I in the past is none of your business! You don't know what I've been through Sana, so I suggest you stop talking. You only know one side of the story, You only know her struggle and that's why Lisa's the victim in your point of view, right? But I'm not surprised, people always assume the worst in me"

"Fine, tell me your side then, help me understand why you're being like this"

"I don't need to tell you anything, Minatozaki"

"Alright then fuck it! If you don't want to then I'm totally fine with it but let me remind you again Jennie, this project is important to the three of us, especially to Lisa so you better keep those feelings intact and in control and do what you're supposed to do"

We didn't say anything to each other anymore, The elevator is just now full of tension and anger.

She then pressed the emergency button again-making the elevator run normally, The door opened and then she looked at me

pointedly

"Go get some of that air Jennie, I expect that you'll be back with a better persona since you're good at switching from one to another" She said then she got off the elevator.

I feel myself having a panic attack.

I haven't experienced this in so long, I did my best to steady my breathing but it seems impossible.

I had to gather all my will power just so I'll be able to press the rooftop button..

SANA'S POV

"Hey, what happened? is Ms. Park okay?" Lisa asked worriedly

"Yeah, she's fine. She said she just feel a bit nauseated, I guess she's still trying to adjust" I answered

"You sure Sana-chan? You guys took a while there.."

"Yes I'm sure. She just need some fresh air, she'll be back, don't worry okay? Anyways, I'll just go to my office real quick and review some things for the huddle, see you later"

:

I locked my office door as soon as I got in.

I know Lisa's going to bug me if I didn't, At least this way, She'll get the message that I do not want to be bothered.

I thought about Jennie, I know the things that I said to her wasn't fair.

I crossed the line when I brought up about her leaving Lisa behind and that she didn't deserve her.

I know for a fact that Jennie really loved Lisa, She probably does have a reason why she left all of a sudden.. and She's right, It's none of my business whatever happened between her and Lalisa..

I would be angry too if she were to meddle with My relationship with Tzuyu. If I was in the same position as her and someone would tell me that I didn't deserve my girlfriend, I would've probably hurt that someone, BAD.

I'm actually pretty surprised that I came out of The elevator alive. I saw it in her eyes that she was ready to strangle me, it's a good thing that she didn't.

I got carried away by my emotions which is rare. There was something about the environment and the aura that she was giving off that triggered me. I'm not blaming her though, it's not her fault she felt that way.

I wonder if she still has feelings for Lisa? Her reaction earlier could be anything really.

Maybe she was just a bit surprised that Lisa's in a relationship while she doesn't have a special someone right now and she's feeling left out?

But that doesn't mean she was jealous and still in love with Lisa.

*****Sigh..*****

I should've given her the benefit of the doubt first instead of saying those hurtful, insensitive things.

I just totally jumped to conclusions..

I don't want to admit this but, I do see Lisa as the victim in this, I mean what does she expect? Lisa is my friend, of course I'm gonna take Lisa's side.. but still, that doesn't give me the right to verbally harass her like that.

I know in my heart that Jennie's not a bad person, My Tzuyu wouldn't waste her time being friends with her if she was.

I admit, at that moment, I lacked better judgement--I should know better by now.

I should apologize to her, I attacked her out of nowhere.

If we're going to make this partnership work then the least we could do is to be civil with each other.

If Lisa can do it and she's the one who was actually hurt by Jennie then so can I.

I stayed in my office for about 30 minutes just thinking about the things that I said to her earlier.

That was really an immature move, Tzuyu will be very upset and disappointed if she knew about the way I acted.

I then decided to get out of my office and go to Jennie and apologize.

:

I walked towards her office, unsure if she's even there or she completely left the building.

As I get closer, I saw that her door is open, I peaked inside to check if she came back--lucky for me, She did.

She's typing on the computer, focused on what she's doing so she didn't notice my presence, I had to knock on her door so I could get her attention

"Hey" I said

"What do you want now Minatozaki? haven't you judged me enough already?" She responded bitterly without looking away from the computer screen

"Ms. Park, I want to apologize for my behavior earlier, I was out of line, it wasn't right that I said all those things to you and--"

"Save it Minatozaki, I don't need to hear your apologies" She said coldly

I pursed my lips, I didn't listen to her and I continued anyway

"Miss Jane, come on, I'm trying here"

She didn't say a word, there was an awkward air surrounding us.

I really don't know what to say to her next, her and I never really fought for real so this is kind of different for me, I don't know how to approach her.

She closed her eyes and exhaled sharply, then she finally looked at me eye to eye

"It's fine Sana, I want to apologize for my behavior too, you have a point anyway, I shouldn't have acted the way I did-don't worry about it anymore"

"Re-really? So that's it? we're alright now, yeah?" I said feeling unsure but I smiled at her anyway

"Yeah, we're alright Minatozaki" Jennie said smiling back at me

"Whew, Thank goodness, don't tell Tzuyu about this okay? She'll kill me if she finds out" I said laughing nervously

She smirked at me

"Didn't peg you for the submissive type Minatozaki, how are things with you and Tzuyu by the way? Everything good?"

"We're great! Thanks for asking. Actually, if you have time later, we can call her and maybe you girls can catch up, Yoda misses you"

"I would love that, I miss my Chewy too"

"Cool. Anyways I'll leave you alone Ms. Park, hopefully the rest of your day would go smoothly, You don't need to go to the huddle, I'll let you slide today. See you around"

"Thanks Minatozaki, see you" Jennie said then she continued on with what she was doing.

That was easy, I really thought she was gonna make me work just for her to accept my sorry but surprisingly, she didn't

Jennie, you continue to surprise me.

JENNIE'S POV

THE NEXT DAY

7 AM

Another day at the office, another day of torture and misery.

I'm feeling apprehensive of coming in at work today because Yesterday got a bit messy.

The confrontation that happened between Sana and I was something I never expected, I wasn't ready for it, Sana said some things that were hurtful and it got right through me.

Some of it because I was being judged without her knowing the whole story but in all honesty, I was upset because she pointed out one thing that I thought I'd never feel again.

Jealousy.

Overwhelming Jealousy.

Witnessing Lisa being kissed by someone and for her to actually return it willingly almost killed me.

I was in denial, I couldn't face the fact that after all these years, I still feel the same intense level jealousy that I felt when I was.. in love with her

It's been a whole 8 years since her and I parted ways, I can't accept the fact that she can still affect me this much..it's not Lisa's that fault I feel like this though.

I know that I love Jackson, It's just..I guess it's a confusing time, and I guess I miss my boyfriend too. I don't have anyone showing me affection and vice versa, I feel a little lonely without him

That's likely the reason why I acted like a jealous brat again.

It's gotta be it.

So today, I decided to just focus on what needs to be done, like what Sana said, I came here for The Jeju Hotel project, nothing more and in three weeks, I'll see Jackson again.

****knock**knock****

I looked up from my computer screen and saw Lisa with her bright smile, My heart fluttered as soon as she flashed those pearly whites with her eyes looking all happy.

She's so breathtaking..

"Hi Ms. Park, good morning"

"Hey. Good morning to you too, aren't you a little too early?" I asked her

She shrugged "I could say the same thing to you Miss"

"True, well, I came in to catch up from yesterday, I came in a bit late, I don't want to be behind schedule so.."

"Ahh.. I see, Anyways are you feeling better now Ms. Park? Sana said you were feeling a bit nauseated.."

Nauseated huh?

"Yes, much better thanks for asking"

"No problem. By the way, I was gonna grab something for breakfast before I start working, did you want anything? I can get it for you"

"No, I'm fine Lisa, thank--"

I was gonna decline her offer but then my stomach decided it wants to do it's mating call and grumbled loudly.

I wanted to punch my own gut for embarrassing me in front of Lisa.

Lisa heard it but she didn't show any mocking reaction, instead, her face looked concerned

"I'm gonna get you something ok Ms. Park? I'll see you in a bit"

"Wa-wait! Actually, can I come with you?"

"Uhm. Sure, did you have anything particular in mind?"

"American Diner perhaps?" I suggested

"I know just the place" She said beaming

Cute..

"Let's go Ms. Park?" Lisa said still smiling then she walked ahead

of me

:

We went to the building parking lot, Lisa offered to drive, I was planning on driving by myself and just follow her but she insisted

When we reached her car, she unlocked it with her remote and opened the door for me

"Awww, such a gentlewoman" I said to her before getting in the car

"Oh don't assume things Ms. Jane Park, I expect you to pay for breakfast" she said smirking

"Ahhh. There it is. I knew it was too good to be true" I said laughing then I went in the car with her closing the door after.

:

After about a 5 minute drive, we reached our destination, It's a hole in the wall restaurant here in Seoul called "Joy of Eating"

"Wow, this place is packed" I said

"Yes but don't worry, the turnover is pretty fast, the service is great so we really don't have to wait long- a lot of Americans come here especially on the weekends"

"Ahh- the food must be Authentic then"

"Yep. The Owner's an American so.."

"Hi Good Morning, table for two?" A waitress asked with a smile

"Yes please" Lisa answered.

She nodded and lead us to our table. We sat down then she asked us what we wanted to drink, both of us answered chocolate milk.

We checked out the Menu that was taped on the table, I chose the Denver Omelette while Lisa got the Suisun Scrambler.

10 minutes after ordering, the waitress came with our food and refilled our drinks

"Wow, they ARE fast" I said in amazement

"Told you. Let's eat Ms. Park, I'm starving"

I cut a small piece of my omelette and it tasted amazing, I suddenly missed New York and my breakfast dates with Jihyo.

"Are you ready for our trip to Jeju this Friday?" Lisa asked

"Huh? That's this Friday already? I thought it's not going to be until my last week here"

"Nah, *THIS* Friday, Sana already bought the tickets for us"

"Us? Who else is going by the way? is your *boyfriend* coming too?"
I asked her.

I'm well aware of the bitterness of my tone, saying '*your boyfriend*' left a bad taste in my mouth all of a sudden.

*I really hope he isn't or he might just end up with a black eye if he tries to do something again with My Lis-
Oh My Lord...*

Here I go again!!

Why??!!

"Huh? Oh No. It's just the two of us, He's attending a grand opening of this one shopping mall, he's one of the engineers so.."

Ok good.

The Two of Us..

Just The Two of Us.

"Ahh.. that's good then" I said happily

She looked at me a bit weird so I had to come up with some kind of an excuse

"You know? it's good that his build is done" I said looking away

"Aaahhh.. Yeah."

We ate in silence for a few minutes, I couldn't help but be curious about her relationship.

The guy that he's with now, I remember him from High School-I didn't like him then, and I certainly still don't like him now and I'm not going to be surprised if I'd end up hating him.

"So.. you and your boyfriend, how long have you guys been together?" I asked her.

I know I'm being a bit invasive but..

"4 going on 5 next Monday" She answered shortly

"I see.." was all I said

Ouch..

This is what I was afraid of, She got over me quicker than I thought..

I didn't know what to feel except for Jealousy, but I'm an adult now, I can't just act on my Jealous rage anymore like I used to.

Yesterday was an exception though, I mean hopefully that will be the last time I'll act on my emotions--I know for sure when I was younger, My Jealous Rage was way worse.

Come to think of it, I never really acted like that towards any of my boyfriends, even with Jackson. We talk about our exes every now and then but both of us do not get Jealous..

Well, at least I don't.

But when it comes to this Chick..
Jealousy is like an automatic reflex.

"Uhm.. what about you? Got anyone special?" She asked but she's focused with her food avoiding eye contact

"Yes, I do" I answered

"For how long now?" She asked still not looking at me

"Just turned 3 last February"

"Was he the only one after me?" She asked boldly which kind of surprised me

"Yeah. Just one, although I did go on some casual dates but they never worked out"

"What does he do?"

"He's a Civil Engineer"

"Do you love him?"

Whoa? Straight forward.

"I'm sorry but are we playing 20 questions right now?" I countered smiling

She just shrugged and she didn't say anything anymore, she just continued eating and so did I.

It got kind of awkward after she found out about Jackson.

I don't know if I'm being too sensitive but I feel like Lisa is somehow giving me the cold shoulder.

The rest of the breakfast stayed quiet, I wanted to start a conversation again with her but she put up an invisible wall and I don't exactly know how to go through it

What's the matter with her?

Why is she being cold to me all of a sudden..

25 Minutes Later

"Are you done Ms. Park?"

"Yeah, I am- let me just get the bill"

"Oh no that's fine, I got a tab here, they'll just charge it on me"

Lisa told me

"But I thought you said-"

"Let's go? We're gonna be late, Jung-kook just texted and he is in the office now " she said coldly then she walked ahead of me

"Right." I said then I followed her to her car

She still opened the door for me, as soon as I got in, I don't know if I'm overanalyzing things but she slammed the door on my face--I didn't bring it up to her anymore because it might just cause a misunderstanding between us and that's the last thing I want to happen

:

We reached the office in no time because Lisa drove faster than she did earlier, I wanted to ask her to slow down but I'm afraid she'd tell me off.

"Hi babe good morning" Her Boyfriend said with a bouquet of flowers in his hand

Lisa ran to him happily and gave him a hug and a kiss on the lips, I looked away immediately and walked towards my office.

When I reached my private space, I closed my door as fast as I could and locked it-

I'm having another panic attack
My breathing is out of control
I felt tears streaming down my face

I ended up sitting on the floor-

Silently crying in pain.

40.) Maheun

Title: Sad

Artist: LANY

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

LISA'S POV

Third Night Constructions

I'm not in my very best mood at the moment, I mentally scoffed just remembering what Jennie said earlier about having a boyfriend

So, she has a boyfriend huh? Figures, of course she has one, why wouldn't she?

I should've expected it, and they've been together for three years now?

Good Job Jennie, your relationship finally lasted for more than 6 months, didn't think you had it in you.

Dumb-ass.

I shouldn't have asked. Now, I'm going to be in a bad mood all day. It's not like I'm jealous of her dumb boyfriend, No way! It's just.. I guess the fact that she got over me too is just annoying and kind of insulting.

She's the one who left me and she has the audacity to actually replace me just like that??

And her boyfriend is a Civil Engineer too huh? but I bet her boyfriend is not even attractive, I bet mine is better looking, nicer, smarter-

Ughh! Jennie is making me very upset and It's only her second day here.

I know I said I should just let go of my Hate towards her but her having a boyfriend? Never mind.

The Hate is back on the table.

Stupid Jennie

Stupid Jennie's Boyfriend!

I don't even know who he is but I hate him already!

I hate him more than Jennie!

*****Knock**Knock*****

"Hey Lisa-chan, good morning" Sana greeted

"Hey" I answered shortly while I continue to check on some of the paper works

"Not a good day for you? it's only 10 in the morning"

"What do you want? I'm busy" I said bluntly

"Man, what's up with you, I didn't even do or say anything yet to trigger you"

"Nothing's up okay? I'm just not in the mood for anything" I said to her

"Why? did something happen?"

******sigh*****Yeah. I just... I found out something that I didn't need to know in the first place but of course, my stupid self just had to ask"

"Hmm.. what is it?"

"Promise you won't judge me?"

"Promise Lisa-chan. Is everything okay?"

"Yeah. well.. No.. I don't know.."

Ok.

Here it goes.

"Earlier, Jennie and I went out to get some breakfast, we got to talking about going to Jeju this Friday to check out the location and such, then she asked about Jung-kook if he's coming with us and then I told her no then she asked how long have I been with him and I said almost 5 years, Then It got awkward and for some reason so my stupid ass JUST HAD to ask if she has a boyfriend already and guess what her answer was??"

Sana opened her mouth and was about to say something but I cut her off

"She has a freaking boyfriend Dude! And they've been together for 3 years now! Like what the hell right?!! How could she replace me like that?? For what she did to me, she should be single forever! Uughhh!" I said frustrated putting my head on my propped hands like a child throwing a tantrum

Sana didn't say anything, I can feel her stare burning holes in my head

"Well. Aren't you gonna say anything? I mean this is totally normal right?" I asked my friend

"What's Totally normal?" Sana asked

"That I'm upset that she has a boyfriend!"

"Why are you yelling?" She asked

"I'm not! I'm just trying to emphasize my point!"

"Dude, you're totally yelling right now"

"Sana, if you're not gonna help me just leave me alone please"

She let out a teasing chuckle and said "Let me get this straight.. you're upset because you found out Jennie has a boyfriend of 3 years?"

"Yes! I mean what the hell right?!"

"Lisa, you and Jung-kook have been together for 4 years now"

"5 next week" I said correcting her

She pursed her lips and shook her head

"Okay..? 5 years. Your relationship is longer than hers so I don't--"

"Tch. You don't get it Sana" I said annoyed

"Oh trust me Lisa-chan, I get it" She said to me smirking

"You do?"

"Yes. You're Jealous" She said confidently

"I knew it, I knew you're gonna misinterpret what I'm trying to say"

"I mean what else could it be Lisa-chan? Seriously, you can try to justify to people why you're upset because you found out Jennie has a boyfriend and they're gonna draw the same conclusion as me"

"I'm not Jealous of her Ugly. Stupid. Boyfriend alright?!"

"Ugly and Stupid? have you met the guy?" Sana asked me

"No.. but I know her type, she always goes for the same type of guys"

"Ahhh. so you're aware that you're ugly and stupid?"

"What?!!" I said slamming my hands on my office table.

She laughed "Uhm Hello? Do I need to remind you? You're her ex Lalisa, so you're one of those Ugly and Stupid type that Jennie apparently always goes for"

"I said *GUYS*, I'm not a guy!"

She shrugged and said "Meh. Same difference"

I pursed my lips and glared at her

"Look. I'm gonna repeat myself one more time, I'm not Jealous alright? they can marry each other and have kids for all I care"

"Pfftt. Ok? then I don't know why you're acting like this, I mean, *YOU* have a boyfriend too so.." She said raising an eyebrow

I didn't say anything anymore, I just crossed my arms and stared into nothing.

I knew she's going to say that I'm jealous of Jennie's boyfriend but I'm REALLY REALLY NOT. I just feel like it's a complete slap in the face, I mean we're still married for God's sakes! She's the one who kept insisting that her and I should get married so I expected her to be Loyal to OUR Vow! or did she forget about it already?

I mean, if she's able to leave me behind and come back here like she did nothing wrong, then she most likely doesn't care about it anymore, is our marriage even legitimate in the first place? shit. of course it is, My current last name is the proof of that.

That dummy.. she even had the guts to fucking flirt and seduce me!

Well.. she did wine and dine'd me..

Wait. What the hell am I saying????!!

I should've learned my lesson by now.

8 years she left me here alone, never explained herself, she never tried reaching out to me, she NEVER loved me.

"Lisa, is going to Jeju Island with Jennie this coming Friday going to be a problem? because if it is just let me know so I can re-book it now and I'll just come with her next Monday"

"That won't be necessary Sana, If You do that then that's another cause of delay for this project and we're already working on a tight schedule, and besides, You of all people should know that I can handle my emotions better than anyone, especially, better than her"

"HA. Yeah, you're doing a very good job right now on keeping those feelings in check" She said rolling her eyes at me "Anyways I better get going, all these Jealousy is suffocating me, I've had enough of that from yesterday"

"What are you talking about now?" I asked her

She scoffed "It's nothing for you to be concerned about and as your BOSS Lalisa, I want you to focus on this project and nothing else, arraseo? I expect you'll give your 100% on this, don't screw this up for us" She said with a serious tone.

I exhaled sharply and just nodded then Sana finally left my office.

She can get really scary and intimidating when she's on 'BOSS' mode.

Sana invested a lot of her money in this company and I won't be the reason she'll get fucked over on this project.

I can't screw this up just because of this stupid Jealou--

*****Sigh..*****

Shit.

I'm so fucked.

:

:

WEDNESDAY

I decided to just ignore Jennie until our trip comes--not completely ignore her, I mean I still need to communicate with her since we're both part of the team that's working on this Jeju Project, just professional conversation and interaction but socializing wise? No way.

I focused on my boyfriend instead, I always have a good time with him anyway, he takes my mind off with the stupid stuff that I shouldn't be worrying about in the first place, like Jennie being in a three year relationship with an Ugly, Stupid--I bet he barely passed the boards Engineer boyfriend.

*What's so great about Engineers anyways? Architects are better
Sorry Jung-kook.*

Him and I are hanging out in his house just watching the basketball, it's the NBA playoffs season so he gets really invested in this.

I learned to enjoy it as well especially that our team is one step closer on winning the Western Conference--but tonight, I'm really down and not feeling it at all

"Hey. baby, you alright there? you've been quiet the rest of the game" Jung-kook said, we're lying down in his bed, his arms are wrapped around me while I rest my head on his chest.

"Oh. Yeah sorry babe, I'm just not feeling well"

"Are you coming down with something?" He asked worriedly

cupping my cheek

I smiled at him and shook my head

"No babe I'm fine, I'm just a bit tired, I haven't been getting any good sleep"

"Why is that? is something bothering you? you can tell me"

"No, it's nothing big really.. you know me babe, sometimes I tend to overthink about things that aren't important"

"Well, whatever it is, if you're ready to talk about it I'm just here alright?"

"I know baby, thank you.. anyways can I sleep over tonight? maybe cuddling with you would help me sleep better"

"Good idea, I think it would help you too and it would benefit me a lot" He said beaming then he kissed me on the lips.

:

THURSDAY MORNING

Welp, sleeping over at my boyfriend's house wasn't such a good idea after all-- him and I stayed up late doing the deed.. I admit, I was the one who initiated the whole thing

I wanted to forget.. I wanted to erase Jennie from my mind, all she does is occupy it ever since she got here and I do not find it very amusing at all, not one bit, and it bothers me to no end.

But unfortunately for me, It didn't help.. I still kept thinking about her.

I couldn't get her out of my mind..

:

Jung-kook and I are waiting for the elevator hand in hand to go to our office, we're the only ones here right now since it's a bit early but we wanted to work on the project since we were already awake anyway.

The elevator finally came, we went and was about to close the door when somebody yelled to hold the door for them-- and what do you know, it's the one and only Ms. Jane Park looking all Sexy and Pretty and..

That perfume that she wears smells so good.. I just want to jump on her, get her naked..do what grown ups do in bed.. be nasty with her and---

STOP! Oh My God! You just had your boyfriend's dick in you and you're lusting over someone else??

Why am I such a slut?!!

"Thank You.. Good morning you two" Jennie said a bit out of breath

Shit..

I remember those nights when we're making love and she's out of breath and---

"Good morning Ms. Park" Jung-kook responded.

I didn't say anything and just gave her a small nod, I didn't want to be obvious that I'm getting horny just by the sight of her.

Jennie went at the back of the elevator while we remained in the front.

Jung-kook suddenly lets go of my hand and snaked his arm around my waist possessively and then kissed my temple

"I love you, Lalisa" he said to me

I gave him an awkward smile, surprised by his sudden gesture but I responded anyway

"I..love you too babe" I said hesitantly

What was that about?

My boyfriend is usually sweet and all but he doesn't really do this things when people are around, I get that what he did was normal for most of the couple but it's a pretty bold move for him so it kind of caught me off guard.

I almost flinched but knowing Jennie's behind us, I pretended that what my boyfriend did is welcomed.

But I sensed something very weird, a very heavy feeling in my chest that I can't shake off..

I looked behind me for some reason and there--

I saw Jennie looking at us with a murderous glare, she made eye contact with me and I can just feel the dark aura seeping out of her, she's not even trying to hide it--

She's looking at us like she's ready to cut off my boyfriend's arms and legs and like she's about to throw me off the building as soon as we reach the top floor.

I looked away immediately, chills running down my spine

I'm feeling scared for my life.

*****Gulp*****

Why does she look like she's ready to give up her freedom just so she could kill both Jung-kook and I??

I didn't even do anything!

JENNIE'S POV

I said it last Tuesday to Sana and I'll say it again to myself now

Fuck Jeon! Fuck Lisa! and Fuck their Fucking relationship!!

I know what he's trying to do, he wants to show his dominance and rub it to my face that she finally got Lisa

This stupid, clueless boy, doesn't he know that Her and I are married? probably not, or you know what? even if he does know, he probably would still make a move on her, he looks like that kind of guy-- Desperate for Companionship.

He's been thirsty for my wife for the longest time and now that he finally got his chance he thinks he can just own her.

Lisa looked back at me and I made a very angry eye contact with her. If only looks could kill, her stupid boyfriend would've been gone 8 years ago.

If I was ever given a chance to torture this guy with Lisa watching, you better believe I'd grab that chance.

How fucking shameless..

And this stupid Lisa, really?? you're going to let him do that to you and say those things to you in front of your wife??

I oughta slap the both of you!

We reached our floor for what feels like forever and I got out of the elevator as fast as I could because I'm feeling smothered with all the outrageous flirting

I got started on my work right away, Lisa has been giving me the cold treatment ever since we had breakfast together, we were just talking about relationships and she got visibly upset and became all awkward around me when I told her I already have a boyfriend.

Is she upset that I'm in a relationship?!

Seriously?!

She's been together longer with her dumb boyfriend for almost 5 years

and she's bitter about me being in a relationship?!

We're both breaking our vows to each other, I can't believe she's being petty about it.

Who does she think she is? she got a boyfriend sooner than I did.

I didn't even try being in a relationship until I was sure I was ready and that didn't happen until I realized that I love Jackson.

Whatever, If she wants to act cold and treat me like I don't exist then that's fine.

I'm here to work on the hotel and not rekindle any old flame with her.

:

:

FRIDAY

8 PM

I'm at the airport about to check in for my flight to Jeju Island--I'm using one of the Kiosk instead of falling in line since it stretches out to no end, I want to go to my gate and sit down and get this shit over with.

I'm spending the weekends with her and we're going back here to Seoul Sunday Night.

Sana sent me the details last night on where we're going to stay.

It's a good thing that Sana got us separate rooms--who knows what level of awkwardness her and I are able to emit.

We might end up exploding.

:

I finally reached my gate and sat down on one the airport seats. Lisa texted earlier and she said she was on her way, I texted back a

short reply to let her know that I'm already inside waiting for flight

After about 30 minutes, she finally arrived

We saw each other and just gave each other a small nod, she sat far away from me which is fine because I didn't want to be near her either.

I'm still pissed about the fact that her and her bastard of a boyfriend decided to purposely do Public Display of Affection in front of me

How Childish.

They Deserve each other.

:
:

After almost 2 hours, we finally reached Jeju Island. We went straight to our Hotel to check in.

I couldn't wait to get into my bed and just relax, sitting next to Lisa during our flight was MIND NUMBINGLY EXHAUSTING--It was just quiet and awkward.

When we reached the hotel, I went to straight the reception area, I checked in first while Lisa went to the bathroom--I didn't bother waiting for her and just went straight to my room

:
The room that I got was huge, has a king size bed and I have the view of the ocean

Huh.

I underestimated Sana, I thought for sure she was gonna book me a mediocre room

I stayed in hotel Balcony to get some air when I suddenly heard

my door being opened

Huh? Who could it be?

Housekeeping this late?

And didn't I put the DO NOT DISTURB sign on the door handle?

I walked towards the door to see who it is, I was about to open the door but the person on the other side was able to do it first, to my surprise

It's Lisa

"Whew! Finally- that was an ordeal-Uh-what are you doing in my room?" She said giving me a weird look

I crossed my arms and raised an eyebrow

"I could ask you the same question, what are you doing here? this is MY room" I said emphasizing the MY part

"Uh, No it's not Ms. Park, Sana sent me the details, 7th Floor room 727"

"That's what she--Ahhh horse shit! I knew it's too good to be true!" I said with an angry tone

"What are you-Ahhh.... Fuck!" Lisa said finally catching on

"Let me call her" I said rolling my eyes and went to the balcony

I dialed Sana's number and she answered after 3 rings

JN: Minatozaki what kind of sick joke are you trying to pull here?!

SN: Uh ok? Hello to you too and what are you on about now?

JN: Why'd you book one room for Lisa and I to share?!!

SN: I didn't, I booked two different rooms

JN: Yes you did! The room details that you sent her were the same as mine!

SN: Alright fine I did, so what?

JN: What do you mean so what?! Do you have any idea how weird it is to be sharing the same room with your ex?!!

I angrily whispered

SN: Look Kim, it's the Middle of May, it's almost summer, all the Hotels are fully booked, you girls are lucky I even got you a suite, share the damn bed, it's king size! It can fit 5 people

JN: Minatozaki you're gonna pay for this on Monday I swear--

SN: Ok Bye!

JN: Wait! Minatozaki!

She hung up the phone.

I tried calling her again but this time, her line is busy

I went back inside and saw Lisa sitting down waiting

"What did she say? was there a misunderstanding?" She asked

"No, your cheap friend booked one suite for us to share" I answered

"Oh my God! Sana how could you?! This is a disaster! I can't share a room with-" She said standing up putting her palms on her forehead

I scoffed and rolled my eyes at her

"Oh please I'm not too thrilled to be sharing a room with you either Lisa so don't flatter yourself-I'm gonna go downstairs and book me a different room, I should've taken care of this myself anyway" I said then I went out of the room slamming the door

:

After about two hours of arguing with the Hotel Receptionist while looking through my phone online to find a Hotel proved to be pointless, I finally gave up and decided to call it a night-

I went back up the room and as soon as I opened the door, Lisa is already dead on the bed snoring

I groaned in annoyance and shook my head vigorously, It's midnight and our service will pick us up early tomorrow

I looked at Lisa's sleeping form, annoyed, I really want to throw a pillow at her face

This girl, it's like she's mocking me, and she's snoring so loud with her arms up and legs spread like that?

"You look like a grasshopper you know that? how did you get a boyfriend again?" I said to her even though I know she's not gonna hear me.

I decided to just take a bath for at least 30 minutes to relax my mind and body before I get into bed, there's no point stressing out anymore

I dried my hair and put on my sleeping gown and laid down on the bed next to Lisa, I'm so tired that I drifted off to sleep right

away

:

:

7:30 AM

I woke up at the sound of my phone alarm, I was gonna sit up to turn it off but something heavy is wrapped around my stomach

Lisa is spooning me with her head on my spine, right arm wrapped around my waist and her right leg on my thigh

I tried taking off her long limbs on me but it's no use since she kept wrapping me into a hug and she pulls me closer to her

"Lisa, get off of me, you're hugging me too tight" I said slightly looking back at her while I tap her arm

"Hmmm.. No..." She said then she snuggled closer to me

I took one of my pillows and smashed it on Lisa's head

"Lalisa! wake up!"

"Owwww...!!! What did you do that for??!" She said sitting up abruptly rubbing her head

I sat up too and ran a hand through my hair while I give her an irritated look

"You were hugging me too tight I couldn't breathe! tried waking you up but you won't budge!"

"You didn't need to smash your freaking pillow on me Jennie!"

"Yes I do! you kept pulling me closer to you and it's making me uncomfortable!"

She scoffed and then she stood up fixing her hair especially her bangs

"Like you didn't enjoy it, I bet you were dying for me to hug you, sorry Jennie but I advice for you to not overthink it, I have Jungkook" She said cockily while she gives me a smirk

I stood up as well and crossed my arms

"Oh wow, I bet *YOU* couldn't wait to get me into bed just so you could do that, let me remind you Lisa I have a boyfriend too!" I spit back giving her the same annoying smirk

Lisa's face suddenly turned red, she looks really angry and I could've sworn a flash of hurt in her eyes.

She didn't say anything anymore, she just walked to the bathroom and slammed the door which caused me to startle

I groaned and facepalmed myself.

I sat down on the bed and ran a hand through my hair

Great..

I pissed her off again..

I exhaled sharply and whispered

"I probably shouldn't have said anything.."

41.) Maheunhana

Title: Special

Artists: Lee Hi ft. JENNIE

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Sudden Change of Pace in this chapter cos why not?

I apologize for the errors, I did some last minute editing

LISA'S POV

Sunday Night

It's really pouring outside right now, we just got back from the the site where we're supposed to build the Hotel, it was cut short because the weather was really bad--

Whew! good thing we're flying back to Seoul tonight.

I don't want to have to deal with all this storm and I'm tired of Jennie's stupid face

Yesterday, of course she just **HAD** to remind me again that she's already in a relationship, granted I started the whole thing but still, she shouldn't have pulled the same card as I did.

I was just really embarrassed that I was hugging her and I didn't know how to get out of it so I decided to wing it but it backfired on me.

Karma is Real.

:

:

I'm inside our Hotel Room, I'm packing my stuff and checking the

drawers making sure I didn't leave anything that's valuable.

Jennie's already done with hers and she's in the bathroom taking a shower

I'm about to finish packing when I suddenly heard my phone ring, I checked to see who's calling me but it was an unregistered number, I answered anyway, it could be someone important

- "Yeoboseyo?"

- "Yes this is her...uh huh, yeah, wait, huh?"

- "What?!"

- "No No No!"

- "But! There must be something you can do!"

- "Please! I need to get back to Seoul, it's me and my boyfriend's anniversary tomorrow!"

- "The storm isn't that bad.."

- "Signal number 4? come on it's not even 5! It's completely safe to fly!"

- "No! wait! I'll pay you double! triple! No!"

The Lady on the other line hung-up on me, most likely because she got tired of my yelling and begging

Jennie got out of the bathroom looking upset as well but she's more composed than I am

"You got the phone call from the airline too?" I asked her

She just shrugged as she dries her hair with a towel

"This doesn't bother you at all? We're stuck here until God knows when!" I asked her panicked

"No it really doesn't, It's not like I needed to hurry back to Seoul anyway, we're just going to have to extend our stay here in the hotel and Sana's just gonna keep getting the tab, serves her right for being cheap" She said sitting down on her side of the bed while she looks at her phone smiling

I'm looking at her angrily, She really doesn't care if we get stuck here.

What's with the fucking smile?

She's probably texting her stupid boyfriend!

I don't know what came over me but I went to her side of the bed, I then took her phone away from her and threw it on the floor. Just the sight of her smiling because of another person, specifically her dumb ass boyfriend really irks me

"What the hell?! What's your problem?!" She said standing up to grab her phone

"Why are you acting like this isn't a big deal?! and you still have time to talk to your stupid boyfriend?!" I yelled

"You know what?! I've been meaning to ask you this. why do you have such a problem with my boyfriend?!"

"I don't have a problem with him alright?! I don't give a damn about him! I just find it ridiculous that you're actually still in the mood to fucking flirt with him while we're out here stranded!"

"I wasn't even fucking talking to him Lisa! I was looking at a damn meme!"

I felt myself getting red from embarrassment, I just totally sold myself out so I changed the topic ASAP before I dig myself in deeper

"Why are you acting like this isn't a big deal Jennie?!"

"Lisa! Listen to me and you listen well. We can't do anything about the storm alright?! It's out of our control, so will you be quiet and stop throwing tantrums you big baby!" she said glaring at me

"Yes it is! We're stuck here 'til the storm is over! You're only thinking about yourself that's why"

"Ok, you need to calm down, you're crossing the line"

"Don't tell me to calm down, Jennie!"

"So stop yelling at me then! It's not my fault there's a fucking storm!"

"It is your fault! Everything is your fucking fault!"

"What the fuck did I do?!"

"Ever since you came back here everything just went to shit!"

"Fucking wow! it's not my fault that all this is fucking happening! I'm not freaking mother nature Lisa!"

Her and I are having a stare down and nobody's going to surrender anytime soon--Jennie's upset and I'm furious.

"Why did you come back here huh?! why?! 8 fucking years Jennie and you waltz around like you own the place with a new fucking name! do you really think that's gonna give you a reset with everything that you fucking did?!" I said as I continue to yell at her

I know the things that I said were way off topic, but I'm really angry at the moment, everything is just really setting me off.

My temper is getting the best of me and she can be damn sure I'm going to let it consume me, it's time for her and I to talk about the past anyway.

"Ahhh! there it is! so now you want to bring up the past huh?! okay, come on! let's talk about that! Let's go!" she yelled back challenging me

"You fucking left me Jennie! I waited for you! me and my papa.. we fucking waited for you at the Train station but you never came!" I said trembling, pacing back and forth then I faced her again

"What did I fucking do to you Jennie huh?! all I ever did was love you! I gave you my everything--I thought you were the same but you fucking dropped me like I was nothing! was it really that easy for you to fucking leave me like that?! you fucking played me!"

"Lisa hear me out first--"Jennie was about to interrupt me but I didn't let her

"Don't speak! I'm still talking here!" I said to holding up my index finger, she closed her mouth and nodded so I continued

"I waited and waited...I cried for you Jennie! every damn day and night I would ask myself--why did she leave?! was I not good enough?! did she even love me?! or was this all just a big fucking joke?! cos if it was the you're the only one who's amused! and considering that you were the one who fucking insisted to get married then out of nowhere you took off without saying anything?!"

Jennie stayed quiet, taking in all the things that I say to her

"I was depressed Jennie! I couldn't eat, I couldn't sleep, I didn't work! I couldn't function at all!--all I ever did was think about you

to the point where I forgot that my papa needs me too! the school fucking fired him after graduation so he had to work multiple jobs to different places just so he could keep up with our bills! he overworked himself that he had a fucking heart attack!"

Jennie looked shocked and she turned pale when she heard about my papa's passing..she was trembling while she tried to approach me, she was about to take my hand but I evaded her

"You never called.. you never texted, emailed, not even a single fucking letter! did you really hate me that much Jennie?! was that your plan from the beginning? to fucking ruin me?! guess what?! you fucking succeeded! congratu-fucking-lations! until now you still manage to affect me big time! I promised myself that I'm not gonna let you get to me but.. but.. I--"

I couldn't say anything anymore--I ran out of words to say, I know I still have a lot of issues with her but the moment is just too much, it's overwhelming me right now, I've never dropped so many 'F' bombs in my life.

I'm out of breath so I ended up sitting on the bed covering my face with my hands as I continue to cry hysterically

Jennie sat down beside me, she let me cry until I couldn't cry anymore..when she was sure I'm done, she spoke up

"Lalisa, My Parents-- they drugged me" Jennie said staring into space

I looked at her confused

"That night.. I was on my way to the train station, I was already outside our gate.. I walked for a couple of miles because I didn't want to be tracked down by my parents but they had me followed, I tried to run away as fast as I could but they caught up to me, they injected me with a strong dose of sedative Lisa-- and when I woke up-- I was already in New York--" Jennie said then she held my hand squeezing it

"I begged them to let me go back to Korea to at least explain myself to you but they wouldn't let me--I tried escaping them again but it was just impossible, they took my passport so I couldn't go back to you.. my cellphone, laptop or my other devices were taken away from me, I was on watch 24/7..but even then, I wrote letters to you Lalisa.. and everyday I would drop it off at the post office.. but I guess with what you just said that I never wrote you one, they probably sabotaged that too.."

"You're telling me all this but how did you get at this point then? I'm pretty sure your parents wouldn't let you switch from law to business" I asked feeling skeptical

She sighed and closed her eyes then looked at me

"After my first year in New York, it was a hard time in the city, Some guy was shot by a cop, police brutality was a big issue--people were really outraged by it and they started looting the stores and other businesses--it was chaotic-- my security started panicking, they got distracted and I saw that as an opportunity to runaway"

She stopped for a second while she gave me a sad smile

"I rode the subway and ended up at a random bus station--I purchased a ticket to ride the bus, I didn't even know where it was going, I just asked the bus driver if she was driving somewhere far and she said she's traveling for four hours, I was really desperate to get out of that hell hole of a city so I took my chances and said fuck it"

Tears started falling from her eyes as she continues to tell me what happened to her

"So yeah.. the bus brought me to Ithaca, New York. I didn't have much money on me and I only have the clothes on my back.. the money that I had only lasted for a week and then I was on my own,

I was walking around the city, begging people for food or money, I even ate out of trash cans just to survive..that went on for.. I don't know? months? and then I came across this one little Korean restaurant, luckily, the owners were actually Korean.. they were really nice to me Lisa.. meeting them really turned my life around, I thought I was a lost cause"

She said smiling fondly as she talks about the family that helped her

"I met Jihyo Park, she's the owner's daughter and she became my best friend, then she introduced me to my now boyfriend, Jackson Wang"

I visibly flinched when she mentioned her boyfriend again, I think Jennie knows that I feel uncomfortable when she talks about him so she put her other hand on my thigh, tapping it lightly, silently asking me to be calm and just listen to her.

I got the message so I did my best to relax

"Jackson, He was a close friend first before he was my boyfriend. We didn't happen over night if that's what you're thinking.. Anyways, his family protected me, Lisa. They hid me away from my parents, they helped me in acquiring a working visa, sponsoring me so I can get a green card which eventually lead up to me becoming a U.S. citizen. I wanted a fresh start so I changed my name"

"You're not even Korean anymore then" I randomly said--

I don't know what else to say to her. All these things that she's telling me right now is a bit too much.

"No, I'm not. I'm an American now but that's not the point. Lisa, I'm sorry for all the pain that I've caused you. I was a coward, I know I didn't try hard enough for our relationship to work and

That's on me, That's my fault. I know there were a lot of chances that I could've reached out to you but I didn't, It's just that, I couldn't face you because I'm scared that you might not accept me anymore and You're right, I was only thinking about myself, but hear me out okay?"

I nodded my head slowly as I continue to listen to her.

"If you were in a life and death situation like I was, of course you're going to think about your survival. I know you hate me Lisa, but I need you to have an open mind okay? Self-care isn't selfish at all..It might not make sense to you but I will stand my ground with that one, that kind of mentality got me to where I am now, if I didn't think that way, I'd go completely insane"

"I understand you Jennie, I'm not a complete imbecile, but you can't blame me from feeling this way, so don't put me in a position where you're guilt tripping me"

I was about to untangle my hand with her but she held onto it tight.

She shook her head 'No'

"I'm not, I'm sorry if it sounded like I am.. anyways, I didn't want to get tracked down by my parents Lisa, and during those times when I wasn't getting any response from you from the letters that I wrote, I thought it was hopeless to try and that I was just causing you more trouble.."

"Causing me trouble? How?" I asked her

"Lisa, My Parents threatened me. If I tried getting back together

with you, they'll hurt you and your father, you know what they're capable of, they're really going to do it.. writing you those letters were already very risky but I couldn't help myself, and Lisa, I'm really sorry about your father.."

She faced me cupping my cheek as tears continue to fall from her face but she still tried to give me a warm smile.

"You were asking me earlier, did I even love you?" She said and then I nodded slowly while we looked deeply into each other's eyes

"I loved you, with all that I am..with everything that I had, but I was young back then Lisa, I couldn't do much, I didn't have any money, power or any influence, I didn't have anything, tell me, how do I go against someone that has more money than God? So I said to myself that if I do go back to Korea, I'll come back just as as strong if not, stronger than my Father.. over time, I admit I did lose track of my goals but please, don't ever doubt the love that I had for you okay?"

"Jennie..I--"

"But even then Lisa, I really am sorry for everything, I know you've been through hell too, I'm sorry I couldn't be there to go through it with you and for breaking our vow.. I'm just..I'm sorry, I know it's hard to forgive someone who hurt you so much, I know I practically destroyed your life just by being in it but one thing is for sure, I'm not sorry about loving you.. I will never be sorry about loving you Lisa. You, coming into my life was and still is the best thing that's ever happened to me"

"I don't know what to say Jennie.."

"That's okay Lisa, take your time, I know you still have a lot of anger towards me, and when you're ready to talk about it again and slap the shit out of me, I'm just here, you can tell me how much you

hate me, what I made you go through.. everything, I deserve it, I'll take it like a champ, I promise" She said wiping her tears as she finally gave me a genuine smile.

I smiled back while I rub my thumb with hers

"Okay" I said to her

We're just staring at each other intently, my eyes flickering from her eyes to her lips, I noticed that she's doing the same, I don't know who came on to whom but we found ourselves kissing each other's lips.

My heart is beating really fast, all I kept thinking about was her lips on mine, they're still as soft and gentle as I remember, she still kisses me like I'm the only person worthy enough to be kissed by her with so much passion

We kissed each other for a while until I came back to my senses and broke it off

"Wa-wait.. no, what are we doing?" I said looking away touching my lips with my index and middle finger

"Well, we WERE Kissing, obviously" Jennie said with obvious frustration in her voice

"No, we're not" I said in denial

"Uhm? yeah we were, are you demented?" She said a bit baffled

"Jennie, we're not in High School, we can't just kiss whenever we want anymore alright? I have a boyfriend" I said to her

She shrugged

"So? I have one too" She said smirking, she knows it's going to rile me up and it did..

That ticked me off so I grabbed her face and kissed her feverishly, I hate it when she reminds me that she has a fucking boyfriend.

Yes. I'm jealous.
Crazy jealous!

"Mmmmmpp..wait wait.." Jennie said pushing me away gently from her

"What?!" I said, now it's my turn to be frustrated.

"I thought you said we can't just kiss whenever anymore?" she asked acting all innocent

"No I didn't" I said to her

"Uh, yes you did, not even a minute ago, seriously, you need to get your brain checked or something, I think you may have early signs of dementia" she said grinning at me

"Oh shut up and sit on my lap will you?" I said to her, she shook her head while she smiled knowingly but she did what she's told, then she wrapped her legs around my waist, she cupped both of my cheeks as she leans forward to kiss my lips

I bit her lower lip lightly, that got her to open her mouth then I slid my tongue in smoothly to get a taste of her

"Jennie.. you still taste so good, baby.." I whispered in between our kisses

"Mmmm.. baby huh? are we just going to ignore the fact that we both have boyfriends?" she said pulling away slightly as she's grinding her private parts with mine

"Huh? boyfriend? what's that?" I said smirking at her, she laughed lightly then she leaned in to kiss my lips once again

At the back of my mind, Jung-kook is there, but he's fading away

fast as Jennie and I continue to make out.

I'm being selfish right now and I know I'm being the biggest slut but all I want to do is to fuck and be fucked by Jennie.

"You taste good too.. Tangelo" She said breathless as she breaks off our kiss to gasp for some air.

My heart skipped a beat when she called me *Tangelo* again

I admit, I miss that nickname, that's what she used to call me when we were young

To be honest, Jennie calling me 'Lisa' sounds so foreign to my ears.

"Tangelo huh?.. haven't heard that in so long.." I said caressing her cheek while giving her a loving smile, she did the same as she brushes her hand on my hair

"I know..I probably shouldn't be calling you that anymore though, I should call you Ashley or something" Jennie said then she booped my nose.

I chuckled

"Ashley? because my hair is ash brown?" I asked her

"Yeah.." she answered in a daze

"You always come up with the silliest nicknames Jen.." I said to her which made her giggle

"I really do huh? I'm not very creative, sorry, but what's your favorite out of all of them?" She said pecking my lips

"Hmmm.. let's see.." I said pretending to think, then I took her hand and raise it up in front of us

"I like Tangelo, that one's a given.." I said while I stretch out her index finger gently

"I also like Jagiya.. Honey.. Baby.." I continued while doing the

same gesture with her middle finger, ring finger and her pinky.

"But.. what I like the most.. I would say is.. Love" I said stretching out her thumb then I slowly put it in my mouth, sucking on it lightly making sure I make a seductive eye contact with her

Jennie moaned sexily in response

"I like that one the most too..it's my favorite actually" She said biting her lower lip

"Let's have sex, Love" I said to her out of nowhere

Jennie's eyes widened in surprise and then she laughed and shook her head

"What? what's so funny?" I asked confused while I let go of her hand

"Nothing, it's just.. way to be romantic there, love" She answered then she peppered my face with kisses

I groaned in frustration

Ughh! She's right, that wasn't very romantic at all, I sounded like a horny high school boy.

"I ruined it didn't I?" I asked pouting unintentionally

She shook her head 'No' and cupped both of my cheeks

"No no, of course not baby.. Sorry for laughing, I didn't mean it that way okay?" Jennie said feeling bad

"Then why did you laugh?" I said crossing my arms pouting harder

"Awww.. come here love, you're so cute.." she said uncrossing my arms, wrapping it around her waist instead "Again, I'm sorry for laughing, I just thought it was really adorable, don't feel bad, you didn't ruin it okay? if anything, I ruined it"

"Hmmm.. Yeah you did, but I forgive you" I said smiling widely then I pulled her close to me giving her a tight hug while I rest my

head on her chest,

"Thank you baby..So, what do you say? shall we proceed with the sex?" Jennie asked while she brushes the back of head

"Nope" I answered proudly

"No? You changed your mind already?" she asked pretending to be offended

"Take me out on a dinner date first will ya?" I said jokingly while pulling away from our hug

"Dinner Date? Sweetie, I'll buy you a whole restaurant if you want--if that's what it takes to get you to bed" She said with a cocky smile

"Ooooh.. Ms. Billionaire over here, that doesn't impress me much you know" I said playfully rolling my eyes at her

"I'm not a billionaire, try multi millionaire, love" She spit back

"How many millions are we talking about here?" I asked, it's not wrong to be curious right? she *IS* my wife after all.

"Couple of hundreds maybe? I don't know exactly..I lost count when I reached 200, I'll check later and I'll get back to you on that" She said with a boastful tone.

"Pssshh..You're such a show off, Jennie"

"Hey! you asked, I answered, am I in the wrong?" She said but I didn't say anything so she continued "..And besides.. what's mine is yours, and what's yours..is yours alone, I have no interest with it whatsoever, but you can have everything that I own love.. EVERYTHING" she said leaning in to give me a chaste kiss on the lips

"So.. if I say I want to have complete control over Gold Constructions, you'll give it to me?" I asked obviously still joking but Jennie gave me a serious look, like she's really ready to give it all up for me.

"Of course, you can have My Company, Love.." she said then she

traced her middle finger on my lips.

"Not only that, you can also have All My Money, Cars, Properties, Other Investments.." She said getting lost as she stares longingly at my lips "It was ALL for you in the first place..I did it all for you.."

"Really? Well, What about you?" I said tracing her spine lightly with my fingers down to her ass sensually

"Me?" she asked seductively as she leans in closer

"Yes, What if I say that I want to have you?" I whispered to her lips

"Hmm..what if I told you that...You never lost me?" She said then she closed the gap between us as she gives me a kiss full of passion, longing and desire.

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: This Chapter is such a pain to write! I hate confrontations and I feel like this chapter have an angst deficiency (if that makes sense)

You guys know why?

Because Chaennie Fics are keeping me occupied and distracted and I'm kind of getting tired of this book (Kidding! kinda..)

I need motivation to write.

NO SMUT Damn it! Use your Imagination! I'm pretty sure more than half of y'all have very good ones anyway lol Thank You for Reading, Commenting and Voting.

42.) Maheundul

Title: Playing with Fire

Artist: BLACKPINK

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

JENNIE'S POV

MONDAY

6 AM

"No.. Jagiya stop! that tickles!" I said laying down in bed laughing uncontrollably while Lisa sits on top of me tickling my sides

"Oh come on Jagi, I'm barely touching you" She said laughing

"S-stop Ta-Tangelo..or I--ahhh! I'm going to kick your ass I--hahahaha swear! S-stop!" I said getting pissed off

"Nope. I like you like this, being all helpless" Lisa teased

My fuse finally ran out after she said that she likes me being helpless, I was taking it easy on her but she just had to say the magic word, so I decided to fight fire with fire.

"That's..It! Gaaahhhh!!" I said getting up then I pinned her down, sitting on her stomach "I told your ass to stop!" I said raising my voice

"Now Jagi..calm down.. I was gonna stop, you just beat me to it.." Lisa said as she lets out a nervous laugh

"Yeah right. You can't fool me, Stupid. And now, you're going to pay" I said while I show her my evil grin

"J-Jagiya..No, please.. I bruise like a peach!" Lisa said begging

"I really don't give a damn, did you listen to me when I was asking you to stop?! huh?! did you?!" I said as I was getting ready to tickle her

"Jagiya.. No!" Tangelo protested then she started crying

Huh? What is this? Is she seriously going to use tears?

"Waterworks isn't going to work on me Tangelo, this isn't child's play anymore"

Lisa cried hysterically after hearing that which caught me by surprise.

I couldn't believe what I'm witnessing right now, She's really desperate for me not to tickle her.

"Ughhh! I hate you! you're such a drama queen!" I said getting off of her

She sat up slowly but then she continued to cry for about 5 minutes. I tried ignoring her but I couldn't, It was hard to because she cries like I abused her physically

"Stop crying okay? I didn't even do anything to you"

She didn't stop crying though, if anything she cried even harder

I rolled my eyes and shook my head

This is ridiculous

"Alright already.. Jisoos. I'm sorry okay? I'm not going to tickle you anymore, now dry those tears Tangelo" I said to her while I rub circles on her back to relax her

"Pro-promise?" She said looking at me wearing a cutesy expression while she pouts

"Ewww. why are you making that face?"

She shrugged and wiped her eyes

"Dunno, I wanted to look adorable***smile***"

"Whatever. Anyway, I'm going to Ahhhh---!! Tangelo! get off of me!"

"Rule number 1, never be fooled by the tears" She said then she started kissing and biting my neck lightly

"I swear to God if you tickle me again I'm going to throw you at the bottom of the ocean"

"I'm not going to torture you with tickles baby, quite the opposite actually, I'm going to pleasure you all day today.." She whispered in my ear

"Tangelo, again? we just got done having sex not even 20 minutes ago..mmmm..." I moaned while she nibbles on my ear

"Yeah? has it been that long? it's time for another round then.. and another..and another..and another..we'll have sex until this storm is over" She says then she moved to my lips kissing me full of fiery lust

"Mmmm.. I love that idea, you're such a genius.."

I wrapped my arms around her neck while we continue to make out, making each other feel good

"I hope this storm doesn't stop.." I whispered in between our kisses

"I'm praying for it not to, love.."

Her and I have been at it non-stop since last night. We would take breaks every now and then but we would jump on each other's bones again after regaining our strength.

I honestly can't believe we still have the same stamina as we did from 8 years ago

Or maybe because we're just really excited since her and I haven't had sex in a long time?

Either way, we both know we want this and we need this, because if we don't, then her and I will just keep clashing and stay mad at each other.

You could say that this is us putting the sexual tension in action, and it's benefiting the both of us very well.

Lisa was sucking on my boobs and she was about to go down on me when her phone suddenly rang which startled the both of us.

The moment was suddenly gone. I motioned for her to get up and answer it, She hesitantly did but before answering, she gave me a kiss on the lips which made me smile.

She's still as sweet and gentle..excluding the part where she tickles me to death.

Lisa grabbed her phone on the side table, she suddenly turned pale when she saw who's calling her

"What's wrong, love?" I asked her

"Nothing..It's uhm- it's Jung-kook, do you mind if I answer this in the bathroom love?"

I admit, a wave of overflowing Jealousy washed over me. I really wanted to stop her and tell her to stay with me and make love to me instead but I can't do anything about it..

I know how important her dumb boyfriend is to her, so I just gave her a comforting smile and nodded

"Thank You, it'll be quick okay?" She said then she gave me another quick peck on the lips

She put on her robe then she went to the bathroom to answer her stupid boyfriend's call.

I sat up in fetal-like position and sighed in exaggeration

"So much for pleasuring me all day today..huh Tangelo?" I whispered to myself smiling sadly like a pathetic fool

I stared anxiously at the bathroom door, waiting for the phone call with her boyfriend to end.

I'm hoping that it would be over soon. The more she stays there, the more I get nervous because I'm scared that she might push me away again

No..No!

I just got her back

Please Lisa..come back here ASAP.

PLEASE..

She stayed in the bathroom for another 15 minutes, when she finally came out, I almost jumped for joy, she was still looking pale and guilt is obviously written all over her face which made me anxious even more..

She sat down next to me on the bed then she put down her phone on the side table

"Is.. everything okay?" I asked hesitantly

"Huh? Oh ye-yeah, everything's good Jennie" She said calling me by my name again which kind of hurt my feelings but I didn't let it show

"Did you want to get some rest?"

Lisa just shook her head 'No' in response

The room is immediately filled with awkwardness, I didn't know what else to say to her and it looks like she doesn't know what to say either..

It stayed awkward and silent for what feels like forever until she spoke up again

"I'm sorry if I'm being weird.."

"No, no. don't be sorry okay? are you and him alright?"

"Yeah.. we're more than okay, he just called to greet me, It's our 5th Anniversary so uhm.."

"Oh.. is..is that so.." was all I said

I wanted to get out of bed and go to the bathroom to get some breathing space but I couldn't move.

She held my hand and intertwined it with hers

"We're fine okay? don't worry..I'm just a bit overwhelmed is all.." She said re-assuring me

"Tangelo, after this trip then what?" I asked worriedly.

I'm hoping she'll give me something that I can hold on to, I know I'm being pathetic but I'm desperate for her to keep me around

"What do you mean?" She asked genuinely confused

I took a deep breath and exhaled

"I mean like what are we gonna be after this? do you want some kind of relationship with me?" I asked her

"Jennie, I--"

****chuckle**** Great. I'm Jennie again huh" I said untangling my hand with hers while I shook my head

I leaned on the headboard looking away from her crossing my arms. I feel tears about to fall down from my eyes.

She cupped my cheek turning my head gently towards her

"Look at me please.. I'm sorry okay? just.. let me sort things out first.." Lisa said while she looks at me like she doesn't really know what to say

"I'm not asking for you to be fully committed to me..I just want to know if.. maybe we could continue what we started here.."

"What? like friends with benefits?" She clarified

"Y-yeah.. something like that" I said feeling uneasy

I lied. I actually want more than that from her but I know she wouldn't actually leave her boyfriend for me.. I mean who am I to her now anyway? I don't even know if she still recognizes me as her wife anymore, In her eyes, I'm probably just some girl who left her hanging 8 years ago.

"Do you want to be my.. side chick?" She asked

"If that's what it takes for me to stay by your side then I'll be whatever you want me to be.. just, don't push me away.. please"

"You don't need to say *please* okay?" Lisa said leaning in to kiss me on the lips "Let's do it.. I'll be your side piece too.." She whispered then she continued to kiss me on the side of my lips going down to my neck

You're not going to be a side piece.. you're going to be my main squeeze soon

I held on to Lisa desperately as tight as I could, like my life depended on it. I just want her to fuck me over and over until she

realizes that I'm the only one who will ever be good enough for her..

I know I'm pitiful, I don't give a shit if I'm her side chick.
Just as long as we have some type of relationship..

Just as long as I get to be with her again..

Her and I are both Playing with Fire but it's the least of my worries right now

Sorry Jackson, I love you but..

I'm still madly in love with my wife.

LISA'S POV

TUESDAY EVENING

7 PM

The Storm finally stopped and we got an okay from the Airport to Fly back to Seoul tonight at 9 pm so Jennie and I are currently doing our last minute checks before going to the airport making sure we didn't leave anything important or valuable.

"Jagi, you got everything you need?" she asked, her back is turned against me

"No, I think I left something over there on your side"

"Huh? what is it?" she asked confused, still not looking at me

I approached her then gave her a back hug

"Hmmmm... now I got everything" I said then I gave her a kiss on the neck which caused her to giggle

"Smooth, I almost dropped my panties there" She said slightly

looking back at me to kiss my cheek.

"Almost? not even completely dropping 'em? come on Jagi.. I'm Lalisa Ashley-Tangelo, give me something to work with here" I said turning her around to face me puckering my lips to kiss her but she's leaning back to avoid me.

"Nope! Nuh-uh, DON'T start again or we're going to be late for our flight" she said then she put her hand on my face blocking my kiss.

"Please? one more round Jagi and that's it, I promise *****pout*****"

I can see it in her eyes that she really wants to give in so bad, but she's doing her best to contain it and in the end, her self discipline won

"No Tangelo. We need to go back to Seoul, Your boss is going to kill you if you don't show her your plans for the site which you barely finished because you keep touching me every 2 seconds"

"I can't help it, I mean who in the right mind wouldn't want touch a butt naked Jennie Kim? only a dead person wouldn't or someone who's impotent or blind" I said wrapping her in a tighter hug

"Baby, stop messing around please? When we get back to Seoul then we can have sex as much as you want okay? I promise" she said then she gave me a quick kiss on the lips

"But.. okay, how about we join the mile high club?" I asked wiggling my eyebrows

"Be a good girl and I might just take you up on that offer, how's that?" She said biting her lower lip

"Done! I can't wait for later!"

Cheating, we're both cheating. Her and I are aware of it---We're both consenting adults and we're both guilty of it.

I didn't think I'd come to this point where her and I will be each other's side chick. We're both Playing with Fire, very dangerous yet exciting.

But, I'm a bit confused about our set-up. Technically, we're married, so this is totally fine right? It's normal for married couples to have sex and we haven't done it in years so her and I are making up for it, especially me since I'm the one who would always make the first move

I admit, I do think about Jung-kook.

Do I feel guilty? of course--- But everytime Jennie and I make love, everything else becomes a blur, Jung-kook is totally forgotten and out of the picture

Jennie is all I see, all I want to hear is her moaning my name, her screams of pleasure whenever I make her cum becomes my voice of reason and the way she looks at me before, during and after sex makes me just want to drown and dive deep into her over and over and over again.

I can't get enough of Jennie and her body-- it's like it's made for me to worship and have sex with. I'm not exactly sure if this is me falling back in love with her or this is just lust that I'm feeling.

It doesn't matter right now, I feel great, I feel happy and now that I got her back, I'm not about to let her go.

"Love, did you want to get some dinner first? or shall we just eat at the airport?" Jennie asked

"I wanted to have you for dinner but you're being a prude right now so I--Owww!!" I yelled in pain, Jennie just hit the back of my head

"Stop! Alright? I'm serious, or no mile high club"

"Okay..Okay.. but could we at least make out before we leave?"

She sighed in exaggeration and nodded--she finally caved.

"Fine, 10 minutes then we'll leave"

"**grin** Yes! 15 minutes"

"What? No Tangelo! I said 10--mmmmmmppp!--"

Jennie was about to protest but I decided to interrupt her and get some of that lip action

"You *kiss* talk *kiss* too much *kiss* " I said then I laid her down on the bed

In the end we ended up doing not just making out but I was able to squeeze in 2 quickies, Jennie wasn't very happy about it at first but she enjoyed it nonetheless.

:

:

We landed in Seoul around 10:45 PM, Jung-Kook texted and he said that he's already waiting for me at the arrival area.

I gave Jennie a heads up so she wouldn't feel blindsided

"Jagi, Jung-kook's here, he's picking me up" I said squeezing her hand, we're still on the plane waiting for the crew to let the passengers out

Jennie didn't say anything but she did squeeze my hand tighter, I feel like she's ready to break it

"Owww..Oucchhh.. Jagi stop, please, I told him he didn't have to pick me up..I swear..Owww..!!"

Jennie relaxed her death grip on my hand after some of the passengers heard my cries of pain. She's really upset right now and I understand.

Her and I had planned out that I'll be staying with her tonight in her Suite but with Jung-kook unexpectedly picking me up from the airport totally changed everything

It's not like I can tell him to go home or he might suspect something's up and we're going to get caught and that would be the end of something that's barely starting.

I certainly don't want to end things with Jennie this soon so I have to be cautious.

"Did you.. want us to give you a ride to your Hotel or?"

She glared at me which means I should stop talking before she slaps the living crap out of me

"Okay Okay.. bad idea, No giving you rides to the hotel got it, but how will you get home?"

"Don't worry your silly little self about it, I'm a big girl, I can take care of myself" She said bluntly

"Love, I'm sorry okay? I honestly didn't know that he'll be picking me up---"

"You didn't fucking know?! are you serious?! you should've told him earlier in the first place that you didn't want to be picked up!" She angrily whispered

"Honey, Sssshhh..calm down please.. people are staring.."

"I don't give a shit! I'll buy this fucking plane and kick them all out!"

"Jennie-ya, please.."

"Don't call me that!"

"Right, right.. Sorry.. please relax. How about this, after he drops me off, I go to your suite?" I said to her, I figured the best way for her to not be mad anymore is just to compromise

"Fine. Your ass better be there or else you're dead" She threatened

"Yes, I promise okay? now please don't be mad anymore, this is out of my control Jagi, please understand my situation"

"I do understand alright? I'm not retarded like that dumb ass Jung-kook" Jennie said crossing her arms, she's like a 10 year old throwing tantrums

I would find it cute but it's really not, she's really scary when she gets like this, and this is her being restrained.

"You understand but you're still mad..." I whispered to myself but she still heard me

"Do you have something to say?! if you do then say it to my face! I'm right here!"

"N-no, I didn't say anything Jagi, I promise"

"I heard you say something. you're a goner!" Jennie said, she was about to hit me but an announcement was made

**Ladies and Gentleman, Thank You for Flying Asiana Air,
Hope you all have a nice day, Stay safe.**

Yayy! Saved by the Flight Crew

"Jagi, they're letting us off now see!" I said happily but she took it the wrong way

She rolled her eyes at me

"Yeah, be excited, you're about to see your dog! good for you" she said clapping with a sarcastic tone

"No..that's not what I meant--"

"Shut Up" She said with a commanding tone so I just stayed quiet until we got off the plane

:

:

We got off the plane after 10 minutes

"Tangelo, Come with me to the bathroom will you?"

"Okay Jagi, I think the nearest one is over here--whooooaa! wait!

Jagi, you're going the wrong way! hold on" I said as Jennie drags me to the opposite side of the restroom

"We're going to the farthest one, away from the arrival area" She said then she winked at me

She somehow managed to find a restroom that's only able to accommodate a single person but we both went in and she locked the door.

"How about we have sex first before you go to your pet?"

"Jagi, wait I---"

"Shut the hell up and go down on me. Now!" Jennie commanded then wrapped her arms around my neck smashing her lips with mine

:

:

"Love.. Aaaahhh.. slow down, you're hurting me.." I said holding on to the sink for dear life while Jennie is thrusting her fingers deep, hard and fast inside me

Jennie is fucking me from behind, we've been locked here in the restroom for 45 minutes now, I'm not going to be surprised if security were to knock on us any time soon

"Hurting you? don't make me laugh, so you're telling me my fingers are longer and harder than your boyfriend's dick? how sad is your sex life with him?" Jennie said while she nibbles my ear

"Break up with him Jagiya..be with me instead..I'll make you happier in bed...I can make you happier in general and you know it.." She whispered then she thrust faster and harder.

"Aaaaahhhhh!! loveee..fuuckk..." I said doing my best not to scream out in pleasure, I covered my mouth with my hand to restrain my moans

"Cum, Lalisa" Jennie commanded, my obedient self followed and I came.. hard

I can literally feel the cum flowing down to my legs

She's pounding in and out of me slowly this time...

I looked up and saw our reflection in the mirror

Jennie pulled out her index and middle finger that was inside me and she put it in her mouth sucking and licking it dry

"Mmmmm... you taste so fucking sweet love.. I can't wait to do that again tonight" Jennie said

She bit her lower lip and then she slapped my ass hard

"Now go get decent and pull up your pants you nasty girl, Your pet is waiting for you, wouldn't want him to get suspicious now do you?" She said with a mocking tone but I know better not to respond to her so I just did what she told me to do.

:

After fixing myself up, Jennie pulled me close to her and engulfed me into a tight hug

"Come see me later tonight okay? I'll be waiting for you, Tangelo.."

"I will love, I promise. I miss you already" I said hugging her tighter

"I miss you already too.. don't forget about me"

I pulled away from our hug and kissed her

"8 years you were gone and you never left my mind, what makes you think I'll forget you now? you're so silly, Jagi.." I said smiling at her

She shrugged and smiled back

"Just reminding you.. I just want to make sure you won't leave me hanging" She said sounding a bit worried

"Don't worry, I'm not gonna pull a *Jennie* on you" I said jokingly

"Ouch, that's below the belt, that deserves a hard spanking"

"How about spanking and choking, Daddy?" I said to her leaning in for another kiss on the lips

"Mmmm.. Lalisa, don't make me fuck you again..don't tempt me.. Go now before I change my mind.."

"***sigh***Fine..I'll see you later then.." I said licking her lips then I exited the restroom

:

:

I checked my phone and saw that I have 20 missed calls from Jung-kook, I purposely put my phone on silent while Jennie was fucking my brains out because I didn't want us to be bothered.

I'm just gonna make up an excuse

As soon as I reached the Arrival area, I instantly saw Jung-kook sitting down, patiently waiting for me with a bouquet of flowers in his hand and his phone on the other, it looks like he's about to call someone

My guess was right when I felt my phone vibrate and his name appeared on the screen

"Hey" I greeted

"Where are you babe? you alright?" He asked worriedly

"Yeah, I'm fine, look on your right"

He looked to his right, and when he saw me, he had the biggest smile on his face

He ran to me then he hugged and kissed me on the lips, him doing all these things to me somehow felt foreign now, and I felt a bit uncomfortable, I guess being held by Jennie for 48 hours has that effect on me.

"What took you so long babe? Your flight landed an hour ago?"

"I know, sorry, the flight crew took a while to let us out then I had to use the restroom, mother nature called and I got my period early so I needed to freshen up, my bad, I apologize for making you wait" I said to him

"It's fine baby, flowers for you" my boyfriend said handing me the flowers

"Here, let me carry your stuff"

He took my luggage and my backpack then he held my hand, we went to the elevator to go to the parking lot to his car.

We reached my condo unit about an hour later, Jung-kook wanted to sleep over but I told him that I was tired and wanted to rest, he got the message and he left me alone

As soon as he left, I texted Jennie

01:00 AM

> I'm on my way, Love. let me just take a quick shower

01:01 AM Gungdung-i

> No, just come over, we can shower together

01:02 AM

> Ahh, better idea. Alright just let me grab some clothes for tonight and tomorrow for work.

01:03 AM Gungdung-i

> Ok, drive safe, can't wait to see you, Love.

01:03 AM

> Me too, Love. I miss you.

01:04 AM Gungdung-i

> I miss you more.

Guilt? Cheating? Jung-kook? Morals?

Forget about all that for now Lisa and go to her.

"Yes, Let's Go."

A/N: Thanks for Supporting Tangelo and Gungdung-i's Love Story.

I appreciate you guys.

43.) Maheunset

A/N: Errors ahead

Title: Sinning with You

Artist: Sam Hunt

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

JENNIE'S POV

03:48 AM

"Baby.. please.. slow down, you've been so forceful... aaaahhhh.. that hurts love ahhh fuck...." Lisa cried in pain but it sounded more like a moan to me

"Sssssshh love.. are you really hurting or are you enjoying it? be honest.." I whispered to her ear while I hit it from the back

Lalisa's face is down on the bed with her ass up so I have a full view of her glorious asshole and pussy.

"I'm..aaaahhh..I like it..but..ahhh..slow down.. I want this to last lo-longer.." she moaned louder

"Ahh.. there it is, I have no intention of hurting you at all.. just want make you feel good."

I curled my fingers inside her then I gave her one long slow pressured lick on her vagina going to her asshole.

"Ooooooh Shit! Fucckkk Jennie..ahhhh.."

"Your moans are so heavenly baby.. I know you can be louder than that though.. scream my name, love..don't be shy..nobody's

going to hear you except for me" I said then I pounded harder and faster

"JENNNIIEEEEEEEE..AAAHHHH..."

I smirked to myself.

She's so obedient, she could be a real life Ella Enchanted I swear, come to think of it, she kind of looks like Anne Hathaway.

Lisa's pussy tightened round my fingers and she squeezed it hard , I already know that she's close.

"Baby! ahhh! ahhhhh. I'm cumming.. fuck! fuck! Ahhhhh!!!"

Shit Lisa.. I'm cumming too.

Fuck!

I felt my lady cum came out of me when I felt hers all over my hands.

She fell completely on the bed right after.

She's trembling and her legs are shaking, my fingers are still inside her pumping in and out of her slowly

I laid down on top of her making sure I support my weight so I don't crush her, I kissed her right ear, her cheek down to the back of her neck and then her shoulders while I slowly pull out of her

Lisa is out of breath and she's struggling to catch it

"Relax baby..slow, deep breaths.. it's over.." I said with a soothing tone while I rub her arm gently

and with Lisa being her obedient self, did what she's told

I got off of her and then laid on my side of the bed

"F-fuck.. **hah** baby.. that was..amazing..shit.." Lisa said then she laid on her back

She wrapped her arms around me and she laid my head on her chest then she kissed my forehead

I traced my index finger on top of her chest just below her collarbone and smiled

"No, you're amazing.. you still got it after all these years.. you didn't even touch me and yet you made me cum" I admitted without any shame then I looked up to her to see her reaction

Lisa just let out a tired but proud smile

"Let me just..catch some Zzzz's love.. you really wore me...out" she said then she closed her eyes and snored lightly

"Good night, love.." I said then I kissed her on the lips

I traced my index finger on her lower lip..I'm just staring at her longingly

"I love you.. so much. If you ask me to give it all up for you, you can be sure that I will.. I did all of this for you love.. please, be mine again"

I meant what I said, I want Lisa to be mine again, I'm breaking it off with Jackson, I need to come clean to him first before anything.

I don't even really know if Lisa would choose me over her boyfriend but I'll do anything in my power to make my wife fall in love with me again.

:

:

8:00 AM

I just finished preparing Lisa's breakfast in bed, I made her banana pancakes with candied pecans, Steak and Eggs and chocolate milk, I'm sure she's famished from all the workout that we did last night

I fixed up the tray and delivered it to My Room, Lisa is already sitting up yawning and when she saw me with a tray full of food, she instantly smiled

"Hey. Good Morning" I said to her.

I put the tray in front of her and then kissed her lips

"Good Morning Baby, are these all for me? Thank you, Honey" She said with eyes wide open while she looks at the food in front of her happily

"Yes baby, hope you like 'em" I said proudly while She clapped in excitement and bounced up and down

"Yayy! You know I'll love 'em, I've always love the food you make me and I'm really starving, you really made me work last night" she said then she started digging in on the steak

"I know baby, I'm so sorry, hopefully the food will make up for it"

"It did, The steak is so good love! Wow.. can you cook me some more of it? Please?" She asked

"Sure, now or...?"

"No, No! not now, stay here with me baby, I meant next time you know?"

"So..there will be a next time?" I asked

"Yes, just keep making me good food" she replied-- all smiles

"Ahhh, a way to a woman's heart is through her stomach.. gotcha"

"And amazing sex" she added "here open your mouth, let me feed you, Love"

"That's ok Tangelo, I've had some fruit smoothie already, I'm okay, thank you though"

"You just want to make me fat don't you?" She asked jokingly

I playfully rolled my eyes at her and decided to play along

"Yep, so you won't be able to runaway from me, who knows I might be putting love potion on your food and you don't even know it"

"You don't need to do all that.." she tried whispering but I heard her anyway but I pretended that I didn't, knowing her, she'll be embarrassed if I point it out.

"Eat well Tangelo, I'm gonna go ahead and take a shower then you can go next"

"Aww, I was hoping we could take a shower together.." she said pouting

"Baby, we're gonna be late if we take a shower together and you know it..now eat" I said then I kissed her lips

She sighed and nodded sadly "Fine..Thank you again for the good food, love"

"You're welcome, love"

I stood up and took off my robe in front of her which caused her to cough out her food that was already in her mouth

"Love! Are you trying to kill me?!" She asked irritated while she blushes

"***chuckle*** What? Why are you looking embarrassed? It's not like you haven't seen all of this before" I said smirking

"Yeah but...***sigh*** you're so evil.." She said looking away

I just shook my head laughing and went straight to the bathroom.

:

:

9:30 AM

"I'm going ahead love, I'll see you later at the office okay?" Lisa said then she kissed me on the lips

"Ok, drive within the speed limit Tangelo"

"Yes boss" she said then pulled me into a hug

"Hmmm... I miss you so much already my little dumpling, don't take too long arraseo? I'll wait for you"

"Awww.. I miss you too.." I said hugging her tighter

She broke off the hug and looked at me while she brushes some of my hair off my face

We just stared at each other for while smiling, I'm head over heels for her and I know I'm being too obvious but I couldn't help but be all lovey dovey with this girl, she makes me forget about everything else..

I'm so in love..

I love you, Tangelo.

"Ok, go now. I'll see you later sweet heart" I said leaning in to give her a quick kiss on the lips

"Alright..See you.." Lisa said timidly

I walked her out the door but not before her stealing one last kiss from me then she ran off.

I closed my door then I leaned back smiling..day dreaming about my wife

I wonder if she'll stay with me again tonight? I don't want to get my hopes up though..

:

20 Minutes Later

As I was finishing up getting ready to go to Third Night Constructions when I heard my phone ring, I'm not really expecting

any calls right now since I already texted Jackson goodnight two hours ago.

I may have told him that I was in the office already while Lisa was sleeping so he won't text or call me anymore, he knows how workaholic I am so he wouldn't question why I'm in the office early.

I checked to see who was calling me via FaceTime
It's my best friend-Park, Jihyo
I answered the phone right away

JY: Ms. Jane Park, CEO of Gold Constructions! How the hell are ya?!

JN: Jih! I'm good! How are you?

I said excitedly, I haven't talked to her in a while since I'm so caught up with..Things (Lisa)

JY: Good Good, everything's great with the Company, we're getting more projects thanks to moi

JN: Aww I knew I could count on you, keep that up and I might just appoint you as the new CEO, I'll step down for you babe

JY: Nuh-uh! Nope! I'm doing all these cause you asked me to, I didn't actually mean what I said when I told you that I want to be CEO and besides, you need to come back here ASAP, your boyfriend is missing you like crazy

JN: Ahaha.. he does huh? But we talk to each other everyday though

JY: uhm..yeah he does? That was weird?

JN: What is?

JY: I just told you Jackson misses you, usually, you would gush but now you barely reacted

JN: I mean, what do you want me to say?

JY: that you miss him too maybe?

JN: I do, and I tell him that everyday, via phone calls and texts

JY: Uh-huh, sure, what about me? We've been talking for 2 minutes now and you haven't told me that you miss me

JN: Aww come on sis, Of course I miss you!

JY: HA! You're such a liar, you miss me yet you haven't texted or called me and you've been in Seoul for more than a week now

JN: I know, I know.. I'm sorry, I've just been busy and..things have been interesting lately..

I said then smiled without realizing

JY: Interesting? Like how?

Jihyo asked while raising an eyebrow

I shrugged

JN: I don't know? I mean being back here in Korea after 8 years, I guess I just miss a lot of things

JY: Miss a lot of things huh? Including your Ex?

JN: Jih, don't start with me alright?

JY: How is it working with Lalisa by the way?

JN: Oh it's good, very good.

I answered vaguely

JY: Ahhh, did you have sex with her yet?

Jihyo asked jokingly which caused me to freeze

JN: wh-what? That was random?

JY: Hey, sometimes things happen you know, sexual tension, you guys hate each other, how else are you gonna release all that? Through Sex of course!

Wow..that was pretty damn accurate..

JY: Jen, You there?

JN: Uh..yeah, Uhm

I didn't know what to say so I ended up clearing my throat and I became fidgety

JY: Oh shit.. Jennie..you didn't..

JN: what?

JY: You guys fucked each other didn't you?!

JN: Jihyo!

JY: Jennie!

JN: Jih, I don't want to talk about this okay? I gotta go to work

JY: No! We're talking about it now! What the hell?! How could you Jen?

JN: look I don't want to hear lectures about loyalty and morals okay? The deed is done, there's no going back now

JY: Jen, I'm not here to judge, I've done my fair share of being a whore, you know my story sis

JN: Fine. What do you want to know

JY: Why? And How?

JN: I don't know okay? It just happened, we got stranded in our hotel, we confronted each other about our past, next thing I know we're making out then she asked me for sex and I wanted to have sex too so we went for it

JY: Jen, do you still have feelings for your wife?

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath

JN: I do, I still love her

JY: love her as in..

JN: As in I'm still in love with her

JY: Jennie, what about Jackson?

JN: I'm breaking up with him Jih

JY: Wait a minute, are you sure about this? Did you even confess your feelings to your wife yet?

JN: No, she's in a 5 year relationship with her boyfriend

JY: Jennie! She's in a relationship too? Wow you girls are wild

JN: So what if she is? She's my wife Jihyo, so technically, She's

mine

JY: on paper, does she even still recognize you as her wife? I mean for goodness sakes she's in a 5 year relationship. I can tolerate the sex with your ex Jennie but how are you so sure that she feels the same way about you?

JN: honestly I don't even know if she'll leave her boyfriend for me

JY: You're playing a dangerous game Jennie, figure out what you really want first, you don't want to come out as a loser in this

JN: it's a risk I'm willing to take

JY: Jen, I advice that you really think about this first before you do anything drastic, Jackson will be there next week, assess your situation first, you never know, maybe Lisa is just bored and wants to have fun

JN: Oh wow, thanks for lifting my spirits up Jihyo

JY: Hey! Don't give me attitude alright? You're lucky you're my sister first before you're my best friend and I'm not ratting you out to your boyfriend.

JN: Right. my bad.. It's just-

JY: Little piece of advice boo, try to use your brain when it comes to Lisa, you're a smart girl but you dumb down a hundred fold when it comes to her, make sure she's willing to give up what you're willing to give up for her or else you'll end up in tears again.

JN: I know.. it's just, I really thought I'm over her but the moment I laid my eyes on her again, everything just came rushing back to me

JY: she still makes your panties wet? Is she really that good?

JN: Jihyo, you have no idea..

I said dreamily but of course she had to ruin it

JY: let me try her then

JN: Try and you'll never see the light of day again

JY: Ooooooh.. what is this behavior Jennie

Jihyo said, she has never actually seen this possessive and jealous side of me before since It never came out even when I've been dating Jackson for 3 years now

My Jealousy and Possessiveness are exclusive only to my wife.

JN: little piece of advice for you too Jihyo, don't joke about having an affair or wanting to have sex with her alright? I take that shit seriously, and you REALLY don't want to cross that line with me old buddy, old pal. my cousin did that one time and I almost re-arranged her face.

Jihyo held her hands up like she's surrendering to the cops

JY: Ok Ok.. no need to threaten me Ma'am, but Jennie, just be careful alright? Think about your next move, don't throw your 3 year relationship just cos you're having a good time with your wife, she might not want the same thing as you..

JN: I know what I want, and I want my wife back, Jihyo

JY: Fine, If You're really fixated with that then I can't do anything about it, don't worry, I'll support you and I'll keep this between us sis

JN: I know, I trust you.

JY: and I trust that you make the right decision babe

I just nodded and gave her a weak smile, Jihyo is looking at me worriedly. I'd like to think that I can read people very well, I know that she meant what she said when she told me she's not going to judge me, I see it in her eyes how much she loves and cares for me, her and I are sisters, she's not going to throw me under the bus.

JN: Anyways Jih, I gotta go, talk to you soon

JY: ok, don't have sex in the office Jen

JN: I'll try to keep my hands to myself-but I mean, Lisa can be aggressive and when she wants it she's gonna get it, I'll give it to her

I said to my friend to make her feel uncomfortable which worked since she made a disgusted face.

JY: Yuck. Bye! Love you!

JN: haha bye, love you too.

:

:

After the phone call with my friend, it got me thinking about some things, like maybe she's right, maybe I should just see or get a feel of what Lisa wants, or maybe I should just confront her when I get the chance.

I don't really know, it's all so confusing, but I know in my heart the minute Lisa tells me that I'm the one, I'm going to drop everything just so I could be with her again

I felt my phone vibrate once again

My wife is calling

I answered right away

LS: Baby, where are you? I thought you were on your way

Lisa said with a whispering tone, she sounds uneasy but excited

JN: Honey, sorry I'm on my way, Jihyo called me and was just asking how I'm doing

LS: Oh.. does the phone call *HAVE* to take that long?

She asked sounding irritated

JN: Baby, come on, don't be upset alright? and you don't need to get jealous, she's just a friend, remember Jihyo? my sister from New York? nothing more, she has a boyfriend, she likes dicks, calm down okay?

I heard her let out a sigh on the other line

LS: Ye-yeah, sorry, anyways come here now ok? I really miss you, love

JN: I'm waiting on the elevator now, I miss you too my precious duckie, I'll see you soon

LS: Ok, don't drive too fast though please? bye baby. kisses and hugs

JN: I won't. Bye love. mwaaahh.

I smiled to myself and sighed happily
My Wife is the cutest human being alive.

:

I drove for about 15-20 minutes to reach Third Night Constructions, I texted Lisa as soon as possible to let her know that I've finally arrived

She didn't reply right away though, she's most likely busy with the Project and other things Sana assigned to her.

I went straight to my office to get things started
Not even 10 minutes later, Lisa came in and closed my door

"Baby..." she said longingly then walked towards me, cupping my face.

She kissed my lips briefly, then she gave me a warm smile while she rubs my cheeks with her thumbs

"I miss you baby.. you made me wait so long" she said pouting

"I know and I apologize love, how's your day going so far though?" I asked while brushing her bangs

"Better now because you're here" she said then she went in for another kiss on the lips

I was gonna deepen our kiss when someone suddenly knocked on my door which caused us both to jump.

Lisa automatically went on the other side of my table and sat down on the chair pretending to look at some of the paperwork that she brought with her

"Come in!" I said as soon as I'm sure that we're not looking suspicious

The person came in and surprise surprise, of course it's her boyfriend

Good thing he didn't just barge in or we would've been caught

"Good Morning Miss Kim, I'm just here to let you know that we're

planning on starting the build-hey babe, what are you doing here?"
He asked turning his attention instantly on Lisa

He then approached her giving her a kiss on the lips

Okay? was that really necessary, I'm pretty sure they've seen and greeted each other already

Lisa gave him a smile which irritated me, I saw her glance my way quickly then she smirked, she knows I'll get jealous and she wanted to see how I'll react

Wow.. Tangelo, Really?

"Nothing Babe, I'm just showing Miss Kim here the layout for the Hotel" she said non-chalantly

"Ahhh, I'm sure it's great, love" he says to her causing my skin to crawl

Love huh?

Disgusting.

"Anyways! You were saying Mr. Jeon?" I asked the gross man in front of me to interrupt their moment, I'm doing my best to be as professional as I could

"Oh! yes, anyways we're planning to do the build hopefully by next month, we got most of the permits, we just need to do some more thorough check on the land to make sure it's stable enough"

"But Ms. Lisa and I went there already? The Site is good to go"

"About that, since there was a storm, Lisa and I would probably need to go back there tomorrow and maybe add an additional day or two" he said then he looked at Lisa smiling

I raised an eyebrow at this

"Do you really need to bring her with you?" I asked coldly

"Yes, since her and I are the main engineer and architect in this build" he answered with the same tone

We're looking at each other like predators going in for the same prey

Ready to Kill.

"Babe, I would love to go with you, when are we leaving?" Lisa asked happily

I was speechless at her excitement

"Tomorrow morning, I already got an okay from Sana, I took care of our flight and hotel already" he replied

"That's great babe! Good timing too since we haven't really celebrated our anniversary yet, maybe we could do it there. how did you even score a room? I heard all the hotels are fully booked?" Tangelo asked with a flirty tone, her boyfriend is blushing right now, he looks stupid.

They both look stupid and I can't deal with them.

"I got connections baby" he said winking at her

"You're amazing babe!" Lisa said like they're the only ones in the room

I cleared my throat loudly to shut them up

"Excuse me, Engineer and Architect, I don't want to be rude but if you're done discussing things with me, I have a lot of things to do and I really want to get started, I don't want to waste any time" I said giving them both a nasty look

"Oh I'm done, Thank you for your time Ms. Kim, see you tonight babe" Lisa said kissing him in front of me then she left my office

I'm really fuming, I don't know if she's doing this on purpose to make me jealous or she's just keeping up with her act so her boyfriend wouldn't be suspicious of us, and let me tell you, she's doing a really good job at it.

I want to rip her head off with all the flirting that she's done, it was unnecessary to do it in front of me!

Her boyfriend and I were left alone at the office, I wasn't really

trying to hide the fact that I'm pissed off, I don't care if he thinks I'm being weird I just really want this shit to be over with so I could go home, drink some hard liquor and sleep

Lisa is really acting like nothing happened between us at all, it's so easy for her to forget about me when her boyfriend is around

Maybe Jihyo is right, I shouldn't be gambling too much or else I'll lose it all, I should be cautious with my next move.

I was so caught up with what happened between her and I during the trip that I forgot that she's still in a relationship and she loves him.

Lisa has changed over the course of 8 years..

I need to be careful, she's sweet to me when we're together but I don't really know what's going on with that pretty little head of hers.

For all I know she's plotting something against me, and I just know that my lovestruck ass will fall for it.

I need to confront her about our set up, I know that her and I agreed to be friends with benefits but I want so much more from her

I only have two weeks left here in Seoul and I need to make sure that her and I are on the same page.

I need to make her completely mine again.

Lalisa, I Own You.

You Can't Escape From Me.

44.) Maheunnet

Title: Picture of You

Artist: North

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

JENNIE'S POV

As I continue my already ruined day, I couldn't help but think about Lisa and her Boyfriend's upcoming trip to Jeju Island

The things that they're gonna do there.. The things that he'll do to her and what she'll do for him..

They're going to be all sweet and make lots of good memories together.

I already know that Tangelo's going to forget about me, she won't text or even call for days..

Just the thought of them being together, alone on a romantic trip together hurts me so much

I texted my best friend about it just to ease my frustrations.

11:32 AM

> I got a problem

11:34 AM Park, Jihyo

> Wife Problem?

11:35 AM

> She's going on a trip with her boyfriend tomorrow and I'm soooo jealous!

11:36 AM Park, Jihyo

> What'd I tell ya babe? You sure you want to give up everything? Sorry to say this but you can't do anything about it and you have no right to be jealous Jen. Actually, You do.. but you know what I mean.

11:37 AM

> I know, I know.. but can I just vent for like 5 minutes? Please?

11:38 AM Park, Jihyo

> Go ahead, I'm all ears (metaphorically speaking)

11:41 AM

> Babe! Like she was seriously so eager to go like honest to God when her boyfriend told her that they were going on a trip she's all excited and happy and shit and she was acting like that in front of me too! I don't know if she's just pretending or not but it doesn't matter really 'cos I'm pissed off! I'm so mad Jih!

11:43 AM Park, Jihyo

> It could be that she's just trying to keep up with the act so her boyfriend wouldn't get suspicious BUT at the same time I feel like she's enjoying the fact that you're getting jealous, like she finds it exciting that's why she was doing it in front of you.

11:45 AM

> Well, in her defense she didn't know her boyfriend was going to be in my office and he just so happened to talk about the trip in front of me and they got all flirty, it's not totally her fault that I got

to see it all

11:47 AM Park, Jihyo

> Yeah but I mean, come on Jen, deep down you know she was doing it on purpose too, you're a girl, didn't you find it exciting at one point when she gets jealous?

11:49 AM

> Honestly? No. I didn't want to give her any reason to be jealous when we were together during high school because I know the feeling. but lately, she's kind of provoking me to do it but I don't feel good when she's jealous, I feel uneasy, I don't want her getting upset because she thinks she has some kind of competition.

11:52 AM Park, Jihyo

> Aww look at you being whipped. But hey, seriously, confront her babe, or not, It's not like you're staying in Korea for long, you only have two weeks there might as well have fun

11:55 AM

> Yeah you're right, I should just have fun and take whatever she gives me, I'm so stupid to think that her and I could be something more

11:57 AM Park, Jihyo

> You never know babe, a lot can happen in two weeks

11:58 AM

> You're saying two different things Jihyo, one minute you want me to just have fun and then the next minute you're giving me false hope

12:00 PM Park, Jihyo

> Lol I know right? I guess I'm just open with possibilities, cos it's true, a lot can happen, take you as an example, you've only been in Seoul for less than two weeks next thing I know you and your wife are fucking already, that was a quick transition there if you ask me, kinda hot too haha

12:05 PM

> Lol I don't know what to say anymore, I'll just let you know how everything goes

12:07 PM Park, Jihyo

> Hey listen, if you're really desperate to get her back, I don't know if your evil genius mind have already thought about this but like, if she still insist on staying together with her boyfriend you should let her know that you and her are still married and if she doesn't break up with the boy..legal actions will be taken, catch my drift Jen?

12:09 PM

> What? like threaten her with adultery of something? Lol! You and I really are soul sisters, I have thought about that already if I'm being honest

12:11 PM Park, Jihyo

> Lmao! I knew it. Great minds think alike sis, we wouldn't be this successful if we weren't so conniving. Jk!

12:15 PM

> We're nowhere near conniving sis, we became successful cos we're smart and resourceful, bonus points for being pretty and charismatic Am I right?

12:18 PM Park, Jihyo

> and the level of confidence is through the roof too but oh well

12:22 PM

> True. Anyways, I gotta go babe. Hope you can visit me here, I miss you, Goodnight

12:25 PM Park, Jihyo

> Me too, I miss our lesbian nights together baby, when you get here let's do it, I'm curious about you now

12:27 PM

> Lmao! Incest much? and we never had lesbian nights together you bi-curious hoe! You're a disgusting human being and you're not my type

12:30 PM Park, Jihyo

> Lol fucking hell I can't believe I just sent that to you too! haha sorry I have nothing against lesbos, I tried once and I'm not going back. I love dicks. I need a bath now. Have a good day babe, I miss you more, text me whenever, I'm just here Jen. I love you.

12:33 PM

> I know babe, Thank You for understanding me even though I'm being ridiculous. I love you too Jih. Ttyl.

The text thread finally ended between Me and Jihyo.

I really miss my sister, I wish she's here so she can actually knock

some sense into me, but I'm really glad she has an open mind about things.

I'm glad we found each other.

I was so happy about talking to my sister again I didn't realize somebody's at my door, watching me

The person cleared their throat rather loudly to get my attention, I looked up from my phone screen and..

It's Tangelo

"You look happy, who were you talking to? your little boyfriend?" She asked with a mocking tone, she has her arms crossed and with one eyebrow raised

Ha! the nerve of this woman to be upset when she was the one who's purposely making me jealous earlier.

I have no time for this, I have a lot of things to do.

I ignored her as I look at the blueprints that she sent me via e-mail

She went in my office slamming my door shut and locked it then She marched towards my way stomping her feet and she grabbed my arm aggressively

"I asked you a question Ms. Park, who the hell were you talking to?"

Tangelo's face is inches away from mine, She's giving me a death

glare but It's not doing anything for me.

I'm the mother fuckin' H.B.I.C. and this chick needs to be reminded of that

"Jackson. My Boyfriend. what's it to you? **Mrs. Kim**" I said with a dark tone while I give her my signature evil grin

Her body stiffened and she made a subtle flinch when she heard me call her *Mrs.*

"Speechless Tangelo? Did you think that I forget that You and I are *LEGALLY* Married?"

"Jennie...I-"

I stood up and went toe to toe with her, while I forced my arm free from her grip.

I'm wearing high heels so her and I are the same height

"Are you Jealous, Mrs. Kim?" I whispered to her lips

"Shut up Jennie! I don't like this! I don't want you talking to that bastard! You're here in Seoul with ME! I forbid it!" Lisa said standing her ground, she's not even trying to move away from me. I'm impressed but I'm not intimidated.

I just scoffed at her anger.

"You forbid me?! that's funny Tangelo, did you hear me say anything when you were so excited about going back to Jeju with your boyfriend?!"

"That's a different story! Stop talking to him! You're mine Jennie!" Lisa yelled like she's ready to make a scene

"How is it different huh?! and don't fucking raise your voice at me Tangelo! you're over here getting jealous and giving me attitude when you're the one going out of town and about have a good time with your boyfriend! I was fucking talking to Jihyo! Not that it's any of your business! and F.Y.I. I said good night to Jackson an hour before waking you up!" I angrily whispered while I glare at her

She moved away from me and paced back and forth then she turned to face me again still looking angry

"Why'd you have to lie to me?! You're really going out of your way to get back at me huh?! That's It Isn't It?! Answer me!"

I didn't want to Tangelo but you're getting on my damn nerves!

I crossed my arms while giving her an unbothered look

"Hah! You got me. Hurts doesn't it?"

"Giving me a dose of my own medicine?! Stop being immature Jennie!"

"Wow, you're unbelievable Lisa, you keep provoking me and when I play your game you get upset?! get out my face before I smack you right in your big ass forehead!"

"You don't scare me Ms. Park. I'm warning you if I ever catch you talking to him, I'll do something you'll regret. I've changed Jennie, don't fucking test me!"

"Do it and you're dead! You understand me Tangelo?! You've changed, Yes, I can see that-but trust me when I say I can *STILL* do it better, don't fuck with me if you know what's good for you, I'll let you have fun with your little boyfriend, and you let me have fun with mine"

"And what's that supposed to mean?!" Lisa asked while freaking out, she's really jealous and she's almost at the verge of crying

"You'll see Tangelo, You chose this path and now, you're gonna have to deal with the consequences"

"Jennie, I swear to God I'll-"

Our fight was interrupted with a sudden loud knock on my door, someone's trying to get in but unfortunately, it's locked

"Fix yourself then Go and Unlock the door" I told her then I went to sit down on my chair

Lisa took a deep breath and got herself together then she opened the door

The person on the other side was Sana, she looks confused and suspicious but I didn't let it bother me.

"Am I interrupting something?" Sana asked

Lisa stood on the side to make way for her

"No, you aren't, come in" I said with a neutral tone, I didn't want it to be obvious that Lisa and I were arguing

"I have a surprise for you Ms. Park" Sana said smiling genuinely

"Sana, if this is one of your silly little games I have no time for-- Chewy!!!" I said excitedly, I stood up right away and lunged myself at my favorite High school besty

"Oooof! Hello to you too.. Ms. Jane Park" Tzuyu said giggling while hugging me tight

I pulled away from our hug and stared at her holding on to her arms

"Chewy you look so pretty! Did you get taller? I miss you!"

"I miss you a lot too Jennie, and thank you, you look beautiful"

"Thanks babe, what are you doing here?"

"I'm here to visit my sweet heart and since you're here I figured It's perfect timing"

"Visit? You don't live here in Seoul anymore?" I asked confused then I looked at Sana, she's looking sad for some reason but she still smiled then I turned my attention back to Tzuyu

"I moved back to Taiwan about a year ago, for the mean time at least, I fly here to Seoul every other month to visit Sana and she does the same"

"Ahhh.. I see.." was all I said, I didn't want to make any more comments, I don't want to interrogate her about their relationship

"Can we have dinner tonight Jennie? You know just to catch up? I really miss you babe, Please?"

"Of course Chewy! let me know the time and place and I'll be there"

"Ok good, cos I already made reservations, I'll see you tonight okay? I gotta go spend some time now with my darling"

"Ok Chewy, see you tonight"

We hugged each other again and she gave me a kiss on the cheek then she went out the door dragging Sana with her but not without greeting Lisa

"Hey Lisa, I'll see you around okay?" She said giving her a hug too

Huh. Guess they're friends now too

"Yeah, see you Tzuyu" She said smiling

The love birds are out of my office but the wife stayed, she looked at me sporting the same angry aura from earlier

"What?" I asked with an irritated tone

"What did you mean earlier that you're going to have fun? Who are you going to have fun with Jennie?!"

"Oh my goodness Tangelo, you're still on that? It's None of your business okay?" I said dismissively then I walked back to my chair but she stopped me, grabbing my wrist a little too tight

"It is my fucking business, You and I are LEGALLY Married remember? now tell me who it is. Now!"

"Let go of me Tangelo or I swear I'll make a scene" I said warning her, it worked and she let go of me hesitantly

"Get out of my office before I kick your ass out the door" I told her

She still didn't leave, she ran a hand through her hair, she really looks frustrated and this time she actually cried

"Look Jennie, I'm sorry okay? I'm not gonna go with him

anymore, let's fix this, I just got you back..I messed up" she said sobbing then she sat down on my office couch, covering her face

I was a bit surprised when she cried so I closed my door and locked it then I approached her crouching down, I stroked her hair to get her attention

"Hey, stop crying Tangelo.."

I feel bad now, I thought she was gonna go all the way and fight me without breaking but I guess I was wrong, she's still a softy.

"But..you're..you're mad at me and I don't know what to do anymore, I'm sorry Jennie, please don't be upset with me " Lisa said then she hugged me

I hugged her back while I continue to stroke her hair

"Sssssh.. I'm not upset anymore okay? I'm sorry for picking a fight, relax.."

"Sorry for making you jealous on purpose, it was really immature me and I'm ashamed about it" Lisa said while she buries her face on my hair

"Stop, that's in the past now.."

I broke off our hug then I wiped her tears, she gave me a sad

smile then she pouted, my heart melted and I died for a second from how adorable my wife is

"So, we're okay now right?" She clarified

I nodded and gave her a quick peck on the lips

"We're okay, Tangelo"

"So Uhm.. could you tell me now? Who are you gonna have fun with?"

I inhaled sharply and shut my eyes for a second then I looked at her, cupping her cheek

"Tangelo, Jackson will come here next week to visit me, but before you get any wrong ideas, him coming here was already planned out"

I saw a look of anger in her eyes but she did her hardest to not blow up in my face

"How long is he going to be here?"

"A week"

"A whole fucking week?!"

"Tangelo, calm down"

"Calm down?! You want me to calm down?! This is unbelievable!"
She said abruptly standing up

"Love, come on.."

"No! You come on Jennie! Tell him not to come here anymore!
He doesn't need to be here damn it!"

"Love I told you, it's planned out already"

"Fuck that! Cancel him! I don't want him near you!"

"Tangelo will you please just listen to me for one second and stop
freaking out"

"How could I not freak out Jennie?! He's going to come visit you
and I won't be able to see you or touch you while he's here! You
only have two weeks left here in Seoul and he's going to take you
away for a whole week! Who knows he might even stay here until
you go back to New York!" Lisa yelled again, she's really not
holding back with the Jealous rage

"I'll book him a room from a different hotel, Lisa, so stop acting
like a child and for the last time, calm your ass down!"

"How do you know that he's going to agree with that huh?!"

"I'll tell him Rosé doesn't allow another person to stay in my suite,
that it's strictly for business, those kinds of situations happen I'm
sure he'll believe me"

"You better make sure Jennie, I don't want him touching you
either, you understand me?!"

Oh my God, she's not going to stop is she?

"Okay, I won't let him touch me. If it makes you feel any better I'll give you the only spare card key to my suite, will that re-assure you?"

"Yes. Give it to me" she said with a very demanding tone

I went and grabbed my purse by my office table, I looked for my wallet and when I found it, I took out the spare card key and handed it to her

"Here. Better?"

She smiled proudly

"Much better"

"Good, now stop being Jealous over nothing"

"I'll see you tonight okay?"

"I have dinner with Tzuyu remember?"

"So? Are you gonna have dinner for 8 hours?"

I shrugged

"Probably. I thought you're spending time with Jeon?"

"I'll cancel"

"Fine, do whatever you want Tangelo"

She didn't say anything anymore, she grabbed me by my waist and kissed my lips deeply

"Mmmm... you're mine baby.. all mine" Lisa said possessively

"I'm yours Tangelo, All of me belongs to you, I promise, so no need for you to go all crazy okay? Now go do your work, don't get behind with this project, we don't want to look unprofessional"

"Ok..I lo-I mean uhm-bye" she said kissing giving me another quick kiss on the lips then she let go of my waist then she exited my office

"Bye, Love" I whispered

I love you too

I know that's what she wanted to say, that she loves me, but she's not quite ready yet, so I'll let her be.

She's confused and trying to figure things out and so am I, I don't want to force her right now to pick between me and Jeon because that might affect her decision due to being pressured

At the back of my mind, I'm hoping that she'd choose me, but even if she doesn't, I've already got a Plan B anyway, she's gonna have to pick me or go to Jail and have a criminal record.

I haven't power tripped since I came to New York 8 years ago. Even when I became a CEO and earned a fortune, have connections and made a name for myself, I haven't really use any of that to win, but it need be, I'm going to use my own money and power just to make sure that she'll be with me again.

I don't mind getting my hands dirty, nobody's getting in the way of me winning my wife back, I'm aware that this is going to break

Jackson's heart but it needs to be done.

LISA'S POV

After the heated fight that I had with my wife, I finally got out of the office and settled things with her.

Kinda.

I almost slipped earlier, I almost said that I love her but thankfully, I was able to stop myself.

I'm not even really sure yet if I do love her again or the feeling never actually left, like it got jump started again but I do know one thing, I've become a jealous, control freak in a short amount of time

The Idea of Jennie being with her fucking boyfriend infuriates me, I hate that she's with another person besides me.

I wanted to tell her to break up with the bastard but I'm afraid that she'll tell me to do the same and I'm not sure if I can let go of Jung-kook just yet.

"I'm so messed up.. what's going on with me.." I whispered to myself

"Lisa-chan, let me see the blueprints again for the Hotel" Sana said coming into my office, she doesn't really knock so she kind of startled me

"Jisoos Sana-chan, could you knock next time? And I sent the blueprints on your email already"

"Why should I knock? This is *MY* building after all, and no you didn't send me anything, I checked already"

"Nobody's trying to own your building so you don't need to tell me again and you know you could've just called me to resend it to you, that's what office phones are for, genius"

"I wanted to see your pretty face Lisa-chan, that's reason enough for me to come and see you in person" She said winking at me

I shook my head and ended up laughing

"Sanake on the move again"

Sana came in closing my door then she locked it

"Lisa, what's up with you and Ms. Park?" My friend asked, she suddenly turned all serious

I kinked my eyebrow and gave her a weird look.

My first instinct is to deny everything.

"Nothing. Why?"

"Oh come on, don't even try lying to me, and by the way, I heard you guys arguing earlier"

I froze when she said that

"How much did you hear Sana-chan?"

"Enough for me to think that you and her are involved again"

"Did..Tzuyu hear anything?"

"No, I went ahead of her"

I felt a slight relief, the less people know, the better

"Sana..I-"

"Lisa, what the hell are you doing?"

"Listen, I don't want any lectures right now please, I'm already very confused"

"I knew it, I had a bad feeling of sending you with her alone in Jeju, I should've trusted my woman's intuition"

"Aren't you being a bit over dramatic?"

"Oh, I don't know Lisa, Am I?"

"Sana, her and I.. It's not like we have an official relationship, so don't freak out"

Except that she's my wife

"Did you have sex with her Lisa?"

I nodded a 'Yes', there's no point of lying to her

"Holy.. Lisa, I don't even know what to say to you right now"

"Sana, what's done is done okay? I can't go back now, it just.. happened"

"Huh. So like.. you just *happened* to trip and landed on her pussy?"

"Shit Sana-chan! why don't you go outside and announce it to everyone in the building"

"Why'd you do it? What about Kookie?"

"I really don't know why I did it or how we ended up doing it..but I do admit that I asked her to have sex with me"

Sana's eyes widen and her mouth slightly opened so she covered it with her hand, she didn't say anything though, she just looked disappointed, but I can't blame her

"Lisa-chan, you're my sister and I love you but, damn it! how could you do this? You said Jung-kook is the love of your life and now this?"

I ended up in tears and I hugged her, it feels like I've been crying all day today

"Sana..I don't know what to do.." I sobbed, Sana hugged me rubbing my back

"Sssshhh... I apologize, I didn't mean to sound like I'm judging you..but help me understand Lisa-chan"

"I wish I could but I don't know why I did it either" I said pulling away from our hug but Sana still held onto me

"Do you still love her?" She asked as she wipe my tears away

"I..I don't know, I think I..still do.. but I love Jung-kook too.. but Jennie.."

"You're in love with her"

"What do I do?? I don't want to lose Him"

"Lisa, you need to figure out who you really want to be with, you know you can't chase two rabbits at the same time, you'll end up losing both, and you don't even know if Jennie feels the same way about you, have you confronted her about it yet?"

"No..It's too soon Sana.."

She just let out a deep sigh and stayed quiet for a moment then she spoke up again

"You have anything else to say to me sweetie?" She asked worriedly

I figured it's about time to tell Sana the truth, about my marriage with Jennie, what happened to her in New York and what happened to us in Jeju.. she's practically my sister, maybe if I do it, she'll have a better understanding of my situation.

"I do Sana-chan..I need to tell you something..I need to tell you a lot of things.. but before I do, I just want to apologize in advance for not telling you right away.. just know that I love you.. I trust you completely and I just need you to understand me"

My Best friend nodded and gave me an understanding smile

"Okay Lisa-chan, I'm all ears"

45.) Maheundaseot

Title: Told You So

Artist: Little Mix

I dedicate this chapter to Jesy Nelson. #LM4Ever

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Errors ahead. I apologize in advance

Thanks for Reading, Commenting and Voting! I appreciate it.

JENNIE'S POV

7:20 PM

I finally arrived at the restaurant where Tzuyu and I are supposed to meet. I'm 20 minutes late because I had a lot of things to catch up on but I gave my friend a head's up so she wouldn't think that I ditched her

I stayed in the car for bit to text Lisa before entering the restaurant. My wife has been really demanding with me telling her about my whereabouts and who I'm with.

I really don't mind doing it though, some might consider this relationship behavior as controlling--Well, it kind of is, I should know because I was or I'm still a controlling, possessive person when it comes to Tangelo but I'm more subtle about it nowadays, I think?

The thing is, I feel like by doing this, it's also shows that you're showing your respect towards your partner, my opinion at least.

Even though her and I aren't really back together just yet, It will give us both comfort in a way, She won't get upset and I'll have peace of mind because she's not picking another fight with me

Everybody wins.

...And besides, I'm trying to avoid arguing with Tangelo. Lately,

she has been very vocal and has no problem showing her jealousy which is really new for me.

It's cute when she gets jealous but I really don't want to make her feel like she needs to compete with anyone.

There's no Competition.

She Already Won.

07:21 PM

> Baby, I'm here at the restaurant

07:21 PM Orange Duckie

> Ok Baby, is Tzuyu there already?

07:22 PM

> Yeah, she said she's here, Where are you now? Are you home?

07:22 PM Orange Duckie

> Yes love, just finished eating dinner, I want to have you for desert later though ☐

07:23 PM

> I don't know about that.. you were being a bad girl earlier so..☐

07:24 PM Orange Duckie

> Love come on! I already said I was sorry

07:24 PM

> We'll see how my night goes, anyways I'm going inside now, don't want to keep Chewy waiting. Ttyl

07:25 PM Orange Duckie

> Kk love, have fun with Tzuyu, text me whenever you can. I'll wait

07:25 PM

> I will baby, but if anything just go to sleep, I'll update you don't worry

07:26 PM Orange Duckie

> No! I'll wait for you, I want to make sure you're home safe

07:27 PM

> Awww how sweet. Alright then, I really gotta go. I miss you my baby duckie.

07:28 PM Orange Duckie

> Ok Sweetheart, kisses and hugs. I miss you too my little dumpling, come home as soon as you can ☐🌹

07:29

> I'll try to be home early. Text you later baby 🧡❤☐

After the last text that I sent to my wife, I put my phone back in

my purse and then exited the car to meet up with Tzuyu.

As soon as I entered, I spotted my tall friend right away, she's seated down on our reserved table looking at her phone, probably texting me to know my whereabouts

"Chewy, Hey!" I excitedly greeted her

She smiled as soon as she saw me

"Jennie-ya, you came, I was just about to text you."

"Of course, I wouldn't miss this for the world"

Me and my friend greeted each other with a hugs and kisses on the cheek

"I hope you don't mind, I invited the others too, they're on their way now, Oh! There's one!" Tzuyu said while she waves her hand

I turned around and saw Irene, she's still as gorgeous as I remember, she's looking like a Goddess.

I stood up and waved my hand at her and when she saw me, she ran and gave me a koala hug, both of us almost fell.

"Whoa haha. Hello to you too pretty lady" I said giggling, hugging her tight

Irene broke away from the hug and then she gave me an upset look, her eyes are glassy

"Jennie Kim, I've missed you so much! Where the hell have you been you stupid hoe!" She said, then tears fell streamed down her face

"I've missed you too hun, I'm sorry I haven't kept in contact all these years, don't be upset okay? I'm here" I said to her, I'm feeling a bit emotional too, I gave her another quick hug and kiss on the cheek, She wiped her tears and smiled at me

Our little reunion lasted for about a minute more then Irene greeted Chewy, after that, we three sat down on our chairs

"So, how have you been Jennie? You look beautiful as always" Irene said

"Very good, and thank you, you too babe, what have you been up to?"

"I run a very successful chain of Fast food restaurant now" Irene said proudly

"Wow really? Congratulations on your business venture babe!"

who would've thought you'd be in the food industry" I said.

I'm very happy for Irene

I never would've pictured her starting a fast food empire, I've always thought she'd be into beauty and wellness, not that there's anything wrong with her business, I'm proud of her either way.

"I know right? You'd think Jisoo would be the one who'd be doing all this" she said

"Speaking of.. how's Jisoo by the way?" I asked looking at the both of them

They look a bit uneasy for some reason, they can't even look me in the eyes

"What? What's going on?" I asked nervously

They still didn't say anything, Tzuyu looked away and Irene looked down on the menu

"Uhm Ladies? You guys are making me nervous.. did something happen to my cousin?" I asked them again

"You..really don't know what happened to Jisoo?" Tzuyu asked giving me a sad look

"No, what happened? Could you please just tell me! this is making me uncomfortable and you guys are scaring me" I demanded

There was a long, heavy paused before one of them finally spoke up

"Jennie-ya.. Jisoo...She Passed Away about 2 years ago, she was driving back from Daegu, it was raining hard and her car swerved, she ended up hitting another car while on the freeway.." Irene continued

"It was all over the local news Jen.." Tzuyu added

I felt myself turning pale, My body feels numb, I wanted to runaway but I couldn't move.

I couldn't believe what I just heard

"Ji..Jisoo..No.." I said as tears fell down from my eyes

I was about to have a mental breakdown when somebody covered

my eyes from behind then I heard Tzuyu and Irene laughing, the person covering my eyes did the same.

The laugh sounded all too familiar

"Jendeuki... I'm back from the dead to haunt your ass..woooooooo..." the person whispered in my ear

I felt my skin crawl as soon as I heard her voice

It's her, My cousin-Kim, Jisoo

Oh Hell No! They did not just..

"What the fuck?! Jisoo! Get your hands off of my eyes!" I growled, I don't care if I attract attention from other customers

My cousin did what she's told as she continues to laugh her ass off together with Irene and Tzuyu

"Oh Jendeuki, You're so gullible I swear" My cousin said

Damn it! I should've known! I got so emotional that I didn't even notice that my cousin was already behind me

"What the hell was that about?!" I asked Tzuyu and Irene, I'm very upset right now

"Sorry Jennie-ya, Jisoo planned the whole thing, she told us to tell you that she's dead, You know how morbid she is, I was forced to play along by the way so don't get mad at me" Tzuyu said

"Nice. Thanks for throwing us under the bus, you spineless punk" Irene said rolling her eyes at Tzuyu, Chewy gave her the middle finger as a response while she gave her a fake smile

"We actually made a bet, and we lost so now we owe her \$200 No Thanks to you Jen" Irene said giggling

"Ladies just send it to me via Zelle or Venmo, thank you Jendeuk, you made me \$200 richer" my cousin said then she gave me a hug but I pushed her away

"Ughh! Get away from me! You know how scared I was?! I almost had a panic attack!" I said glaring at Jisoo

I'm really upset, I didn't like the prank that they pulled.

"You guys took it way too far! I'm leaving! Fuck y'all!" I said standing up ready to leave but the three of them grabbed my hand

"Oh come on Jennie-ya, we're just joking, sit down" Irene said but she's still laughing

"Jennie I swear I'm not a part of this, they blackmailed me, please don't be upset, I'm sorry, now come and sit down with us and let's have dinner" Tzuyu pouted

"Yeah Jendeuki, who's gonna pay our dinner if you leave? these broke, cheap bitches will make me pay" my cousin said jokingly but I didn't find any of this funny at all, if anything I felt humiliated

I gave them all a very angry look.

In my head, I'm really thinking of different ways on how I'll be torturing the three of them and make them beg on their knees for forgiveness--but that's the old me, Although I'm really tempted to bring back *Devil Jennie from High School* just to remind them who they're messing with but I decided against it in the end.

Jennie, you're an adult now, let it go.

I repeated that to myself at least 10 times. After about 10 minutes of them guilt tripping me, I finally caved and sat down like nothing happened, I figured it's better this way to avoid unnecessary drama but not without me calling out my cousin first.

I swear if they weren't my best friends and I if haven't seen them in a long time I wouldn't even consider seeing them again.

"You guys make me sick, especially you Chu! I hate you the most right now" I said glaring at my cousin then I wiped my tears

"That's alright Jendeuk, as long as you're paying" Jisoo said

grinning at me, she doesn't even feel bad.

"Stupid Jerk" I whispered

"Stop teasing her Jisoo, it's alright Jen, I got this" Tzuyu smiled, I can tell she feels really bad about the prank

"Nah, I got it, don't worry, order whatever you want ladies, Especially the drinks! It's Happy Hour right now!" Irene said excitedly

My cousin scoffed at the both of them

"Pssshh, You guys are so fake right now, but when it's only the three of us you guys always force me to pay"

"That's because you're practically a billionaire, you're an heiress to Kim Empire" Irene said which caused an awkward silence to our group

"Oh..I uhm- I'm sorry Jen..that was insensitive.." Irene said

"No, it's alright, why be sorry? It's true, my cousin is an heiress, what of it?" I said.

"Nothing, forget I said anything, anyways like I said order whatever you ladies want, it's on me" She said smiling awkwardly

I just chuckled and shook my head

I find it a little amusing that she thought it's going to offend me.

I run my own empire now and I couldn't care less about My Family's Legacy.

I'm busy building my own, and soon, It will be stronger than ever because my wife is going to be by my side and watch it all happen

Her and I are going to rule the Construction and Real Estate World.

With Lisa as my inspiration, nothing and no one is going to stop me from being the Queen of it all

I promised myself that I'm going to be so rich and powerful that nobody will ever dare mess with me especially with my wife.

I'm not quite there yet but I'm sure I'll achieve it.

Call it over-confidence or me being power hungry but I'm just stating facts.

Love and Power is the only thing that matters to me right now

I just need my Tangelo to submit herself completely to me again.

She's All I Need.
Nobody Else.
Just Her.
My Wife, Mrs.Kim, Lalisa.

Kim, Lalisa...

Huh. I should tell her to change her last name again, it should be "Park" now and she needs to get her citizenship changed too from Korean to American.

There is no way we're staying here in South Korea, that pest Jungkook might get in the way and mess with my wife's head.

"Ahem!, Earth to Jendeuki!" I heard my cousin say while she snaps her fingers in front of me, startling me a little bit

I was so busy day-dreaming and flooding my thoughts about my lovely wife that I didn't notice that they're staring at me

"Huh? what?" I asked blinking fast then I smiled at them

"You were giving me heart eyes you weirdo, I don't like you like that and we're cousins!"

I rolled my eyes at Jisoo's ridiculousness

"The heart eyes weren't meant for you, idiot.. anyone..Awww I miss this! I wish Rosé was here though" I said slightly pouting.

"She'll be here babe, she's just running late, as usual" Tzuyu said

"What?! Why didn't she tell me?" I asked feeling offended, her and I work together, she could've shoot me a text or emailed to let me know at least but she didn't.

"This was suppose to be a surprise or whatever but yeah, speaking of, there she is! Chaeyoung-ah! Over here chipmunk!" My cousin said waving her hand to get Rosé's attention

I turned around and what do you know? She is here

We all stood up to greet her then she sat down beside me

"Why didn't you tell me you're coming?" I whispered to her with an annoyed tone

"It was supposed to be a surprise reunion but oh well" Rosé answered

I rolled my eyes at her "You have the same answer as my cousin"

She just laughed then shrugged her shoulders

"Then why'd you ask again? Did they go through with that 'Jisoo

is dead' prank?"

I nodded feeling myself getting angry again

"Yeah they did, what a bunch of assholes"

"Yeah, see? That's the reason I'm late, I didn't want to be a part of it, don't be upset with them though okay? You know how they are, they just miss you, we all missed you Jen" she said giving me a side hug and a kiss on the cheek

"Yeah well, They sure have a weird way of showing it"

"Haha I know, they never really changed, cheer up babe" Rosé said scratching my chin then she proceeded to order her food

We got a bunch of appetizers and I ordered the most expensive food and drinks since I'm not paying, I'm sure it's not gonna hurt my friend's wallet and it's some kind of payback in way.

If only it's allowed to rent the place to ourselves at the very last minute, I probably would've done it and put it all on Irene's tab then I'll manipulate them into thinking Jisoo was behind it all but sadly, it's a little too late.

:

As we ate and drink, we talked about what we've been up to, both business and personal

Irene ended up marrying a year ago to a famous actor, her husband is the main face of her business, she said it's the reason why her restaurant is a big hit.

My cousin runs the Telecommunications Business part of the 'Kim Group of Companies' and she's also engaged to her college sweetheart

Rosé as you know, runs her Family's Hotel business and she's also engaged and about to get married next year. it was fixed marriage but she said that they're both in love with each other, apparently it was love at first sight and luckily they have the same goals and interests so it wasn't really a problem for her

Chewy and Sana are going strong but for now, Tzuyu is staying in

Taiwan to help out her parents, she's planning on expanding their business here in Korea so she could be closer to Sana, she voiced out that she wants to marry Her and is planning to propose to her soon.

When it was my turn to share, everybody became a bit uncomfortable except for my cousin, she didn't hesitate and she addressed the elephant in the room

"So, why'd you disappear on us Jendeuki?" She asked

"Jisoo-ya.." Rosé tried to intervene but I squeezed her hand, silently telling her that It's going to be okay

I told them everything, about how my parents drugged me and how I was practically incarcerated, taking my passport away from me and I was limited to socializing.

I told them how I escaped, told them about Jihyo and Jackson, and how I changed my name to somehow conceal my identity and get away from my family's shadows..

"And Lisa? What happened to the both of you?" Irene asked

Tzuyu gave me a certain look, I have a feeling that she knows what Lisa went through since her lover is my wife's best friend.

I looked at Rosé, this time, it's her turn to squeeze my hand

"Whatever you're comfortable with Jen, don't force yourself if you're not ready.." She whispered then gave me a comforting smile

I took a deep breath, preparing myself for what I'm about to tell them, it's probably not a big deal but it's just something I haven't really talked about with my friends, except for Rosé of course since she knows about it but even then, she never dared brought it up.

"Lisa and I, we got married in Australia before graduating high school"

I looked at them and they were all shocked

"Excuse me, what?! You two got married?!" My cousin clarified

"Yeah.. We were gonna runaway after graduation but the shit my parents pulled prevented us from doing that.."

"So you guys are legally bound together still?" Tzuyu asked

"Yep" I shortly answered

"Does your boyfriend know that you're married, Jen?" Tzuyu said asking another question

I shook my head 'No'

"But I plan on telling him when he gets here, I actually want to

break up with him so I can be with Lisa again.."

"If that's the case then why wait 'til he gets here Jen? Why not just break it off instead of you wasting his time?" Irene said

"Yeah, I thought about that too.. what do you guys think? Should I just call him?" I asked my friends

"I honestly think you should just do it as soon as you can" Irene said

"Me too" My cousin added

Tzuyu agreed and said "Yeah, me three"

"Rosé? How about you?" I asked

"In my opinion, tell him before he comes here, but Whatever you feel is right Jen, I'll support you..we'll support you" she answered

"But don't you think it's disrespectful if I break up with him over the phone?" I asked them

"It's going to be more disrespectful if you let him come here just for you to break up with him don't you think? that's a slap in the face" Jisoo answered

I pursed my lips and sighed deeply

"Yeah, you're right..it just doesn't feel right anymore..I just want to be with my wife again" I blurted out

"Jennie, does Lisa feel the same way?" Tzuyu asked with a skeptical tone

"I don't know, we haven't really talked about it.."

"Wait a minute, hold on, did something happen between you guys? 'cos you wouldn't make such rash decision if you got none from her, or is it just me?" Jisoo said

I looked away and stayed quiet, clearing my throat

Irene chuckled and said "I guess you got your answer Chu"

Tzuyu raised an eyebrow "When and where?"

"When we went on our trip to Jeju Island" I said

My cousin cackled

"You girls never waste time do you? Tsk tsk Some things never change, you're still as horny for her as you were back High school Jendeuki"

"No I'm not! For your information she was the one who asked for sex"

She smirked at me and said "Yeah and I bet you gave in in less than a second didn't you? what a slut bag"

I was about to tell her off when Rosé intervened.

"Aaanyways.. enough about that, so Jen, you're really going to

go through with it even if you're not sure about Lisa's feelings yet?"
Rosé questioned

"Yes, it wouldn't be fair to Jackson if I continue our relationship with me knowing that I'm still completely in love with Lisa, and besides.. I've been lying to him about me being married for years now, technically, he's the one I'm having an affair with"

Rosé nodded and agreed with me "Yeah, you got a point there"

"What about Lisa? I'm assuming she's in a relationship too right? and if she is, does her boyfriend and or girlfriend know that she's married to you, Jennie?" Irene asked

"She's in a 5 year relationship, but I don't think her boyfriend knows.. I mean.. Tzuyu? do you think he has an idea?" I asked the youngest of our group

"If Sana doesn't know then most likely, Jung-kook doesn't know either, Sana never told me anything about you and Lisa being married since this is the first time I'm hearing about it, and Sana tells me everything" She answered

"So she's having an affair too, wow, you girls are wild" Jisoo said
I mentally laughed at what she said, that's exactly what Jihyo told me

"Tell me something I don't know" I said grinning

"Don't look too proud now" Irene said

"I'm not, I just find it a little funny, you know how sometimes when things get a little out of hand and it's just all a big mess you can't help but just laugh about it?"

Tzuyu nodded and said "Uh-huh. Yeah, then cry the next day? I totally get it"

"Thanks babe, I knew you'd understand" I said to her

We stayed at the restaurant for an hour and a half more then we called it a night since I need to be up early tomorrow for work.

Irene, Jisoo and I exchanged numbers and emails then we all said our good byes to each other promising to see each other again in two weeks before I leave to go back to New York

:

:

"Jendeuki, where did you park?" my cousin asked

"Oh, just across the street, right there, The white Porsche Cayenne" I said pointing at my rental car

"I see, I'll walk you there" My cousin offered, I was about to say that she didn't have to but she dragged me going towards my car

And as soon as we reached my vehicle, Jisoo hugged me tight and she cried

"I really missed you Jendeuki, I'm glad I got to see you alive and well after all these years"

I felt my cousin's pain and yearning, I really missed her too so I hugged her back just as tight and cried along with her

"I missed you too Chu..so much" I said sobbing

"I'm so sorry about what uncle and auntie did to you Jendeuki, if I had known about it sooner and if only I had the means to stop them you know I would..you didn't deserve all that hardship.. it wasn't your fault that you fell in love with Lisa" she said to me which made me cry even more

Jisoo broke off our hug and she gave me a sad smile

"Jendeuk, I just want you to know that they've missed you too, every time I see your parents, I see a look of despair and regret in their eyes"

I scoffed and let out a sarcastic chuckle

"Stop Chu, I don't want to hear it, it's a little too late for them to have feelings of regret, with all the shit that they put me through? they deserve to feel despair, I'm happy they're miserable" I said without any any remorse.

"You don't mean that Jen" My cousin said looking at me disappointed with the way I responded to her

"Oh but I do, if it wasn't for them interfering with me and Lisa, then she wouldn't have the need to find another, we would've been happily married with our little family in the suburbs or somewhere abroad, living our best lives, but now, it's the complete opposite, everything is just hell for me until now no thanks to them"

Jisoo didn't say anything, I just wiped my tears and composed myself.

"They know that I'm here, don't they?" I asked her and she nodded slowly

"Ha! figures. anyways, it doesn't matter. they better not interfere with me and Lisa or else there's going to be trouble, if they try fucking with me again, I'm taking them down and I'm going to give them a run for their money, I'm going to do everything in my power and use my connections to cripple or even better, destroy the Kims, no offense, Chu"

"None taken, but we'll give you a good fight Jendeuk" She said giving me a sly smile

"Fine. May the best *KIM* win" I said grinning at her

"See you soon?" She asked

"Sure Chu, visit me at Third Night when you have time" I said to her

"I will, anyways go now. I love you, Jennie"

"I love you too, Jisoo." I said giving her another hug and kiss on the cheek then I entered my car.

I rolled down my window and waved her goodbye then I drove away.

:

:

I reached the hotel about 20 minutes later, as soon as I entered the Lobby I texted Tangelo, she has been texting me but I didn't get to reply to any of her messages because I was having fun with my old best friends but I let her know that she never left my mind and I apologized that I didn't get to text her the whole dinner and just told her that I'm going to explain everything tomorrow.

Hopefully she's not too upset with me.

I got in the elevator and punched in the 21st floor

I'm so tired, I need to get some sleep.

I got off the elevator as soon as I can, I couldn't wait to have a warm bath and lay down on my comfy bed

As I was walking down the hallway leading to my room, I saw a familiar looking man sitting down in front of my hotel door suite with a suitcase and a duffle bag

No way.. it can't be.. it's...

"Jackson?"

46.) Maheunyeosot

Title: I Wanted You

Artist: Ina

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

LISA'S POV

"Why isn't she texting me back?" I whispered to myself staring at my phone for the last 40 minutes

Jennie hasn't been updating me like she said she would and I'm getting really mad

Is she really that occupied?

Maybe I should leave her alone for now, she hasn't seen her friends for 8 years, maybe they're busy catching up

But still, is it that hard to reply to any of my texts?

I exhaled sharply and massaged the bridge of my nose. I'm getting very anxious and frustrated with myself for being too attached to her again in such a short amount of time and it's driving me crazy.

I know I'm being ridiculous. I was never like this with Jung-kook and we were together longer than Jennie and I have

I'm such a Simp.

It seems like the tables have turned. Back when we were younger, She was the one who would always text and call me, asking me where I'm at, what I'm doing or who I'm with but now, I had to remind her to keep in contact with me as much as she can because I get paranoid.

I've become like my wife but I don't know to what extent is my possessiveness over her is going to take me, who knows? I might even be worse than her and the thought of it scares me because this

feeling is foreign to me and I don't exactly know how I'll handle it when it gets out of control.

She's probably doing some kind of reverse psychology on me--The less I get from her, the more I'll want and crave for more, and she knows it.

That's it! that's gotta be it! otherwise I wouldn't act like a crazed lover. The way I'm acting right now is way out of my character.

But even though I try my hardest to convince myself that she's doing some type of VooDoo shit on me, deep down I already know the reason why I'm like this--- I've finally come into terms with myself and accepted the fact that I'm *still* in love with Jennie.

I almost lost it this morning, I got so upset when she told me that Jackson will be coming here to Korea to visit her.

My jealousy got the best of me and I almost picked another fight with her, good thing Jennie isn't the same as she was before, she's more patient and she was compliant with my demands.

I could tell she's trying to avoid drama at all cost and I really appreciate her for that.

Jackson needs to get the fuck out of the picture.

I don't want him near my wife!

Jennie has been away from me for so long, I don't want to be separated from her anymore.

I really want to ask Jennie to break up with her boyfriend because I don't know how long I'll be able to put up with the fact that she's in a committed relationship.

I want to completely own Jennie and her boyfriend is a big hindrance that needs to be taken care of as soon as possible.

Earlier, I finally told Sana about Jennie and I being married, I also made her aware of Jennie's struggles and all the other shit that went down when we were in Jeju Island.

My best friend said that she already kind of had a feeling that Jennie and I's relationship went up to another level before graduating high school, she thought it was utter and complete

bullshit that I suddenly decided to use my Mother's last name which is supposedly *Kim*, but apparently, she knew my mother's real last name.

How she got a hold of that information? I don't even want to know.

She said that she was waiting for me to say something because she didn't want to be pushy but she made sure to let me know that she actually felt insulted that I thought I'd be able to trick her about me being a *Kim*.

*******Flashback*******

"You really think I'm that dumb Lisa? I happen to know your mother's real last name and it ain't Kim, It's Han"

"But..how'd you know?"

"Don't worry about it, I know you told me to not have any hard feelings but for you to actually insult my intelligence even though it's unintentional is beyond me"

"Sana, I'm sorry okay? I really am. not to be insensitive but can we just get past that part please? my point is Jennie and I are married for 8 years now and technically, I'm cheating on her with Jung-kook"

"The both of you are cheating, to each other and to your boyfriends. Seriously, you have got to talk to her and figure out if you want to be together again, you're obviously still in love with your wife and I don't want to give you false hope but I think she feels the same way, but you gotta clarify, Jennie is known when it comes to being deceitful since High school and I bet she honed it well over the years since she made it big in New York, she wouldn't be this successful if she wasn't being devious"

"Hey! I don't like what's coming out of your mouth right now Sana-chan. Don't judge my Jennie alright? You don't know her like I know her, my wife happens to be very smart and she makes wise decisions when it comes to her company and investments, that's why she became

the Boss of her own company" I said feeling proud

Sana chuckled, rolling her eyes at me while putting a hand on her chest, I already know she's about to sass me

"Oh me oh my, Look at the Orenji defending her little wifey, Pfft! Look Lisa, It wasn't supposed to be an insult, I actually admire her for it, you know what they say right? If you can make it in New York, you can make it anywhere, and to think that she actually built Gold Constructions from the ground up, I bet her net worth is the same as her Father's, maybe even her whole clan, she's always been an overachiever"

I crossed my arms and gave her a smug look "..Ha! That's right, That's my Girl"

For some reason, I felt pleased when I heard Sana say all of those things about my dumpling, she's not telling any lies.

I'm proud of my wife and all of the achievements that she's accomplished for the past 8 years.

My baby is untouchable. She has reached rock bottom and she was able to pick herself up and came back stronger than ever and I know she won't stop until she becomes the best among the rest, and that most likely includes defeating her father in every aspect.

"Enough about glorifying Jennie, I'm getting tired of it, anyways what are you gonna do about Jung-kook?"

"Like you said I need to talk to Jennie first before anything"

"I mean like what are you gonna do if she said that she still loves you?"

"Then..I'll break if off with Jung-kook"

"You sure about that?"

"No, but I'm sure about my feelings for Jennie, I'm still very much in love with my wife and I'm willing to take that risk for her"

"Ok Lalisa, whatever your decision will be, I'm with you 100%"

"You won't be mad at me even if I hurt Jung-kook, Sana-chan?"

"No. My Loyalty belongs to you and not to him"

"But you are aware that me breaking up with him might affect the Jeju project right?.."

My best friend just shrugged and said

"Of course, but let me worry about finding a replacement for him just in case he backs out. I happen to know people who can take his job and I have my Father to help me if anything"

What did I do to deserve someone like Sana?

"Thank You Sana, I love you"

"I love you too, Lisa"

*******End of Flashback*******

I texted Jennie again asking her what she's been up to but she still didn't reply to me

*Alright, that's it, I'm going to her place and wait for her there, we need to have sex--I mean.. uhm..we need to have **the talk** anyway*

I got off my couch and decided to get ready and take a shower.

Good thing Jennie gave me her Spare Card Key so I can come to her suite whenever I want.

:

:

I drove to her Hotel as soon as I'm done getting ready but I stopped by a grocery store first to buy a bouquet of red roses then went straight to Park-Hyatt to see my lovely wife

I entered the Hotel lobby and received a text from Jennie

Huh. Looks like she just got here too, we missed each other, oh well, I'll be seeing her in a bit.

I smiled to myself because I'll be seeing my wife soon and I'm super excited.

I can't wait to see her

I punched in 21st floor on the elevator, it feels like forever getting to her floor

"Come on, hurry up.." I whispered

After a few elevator stops, I finally reached my destination.

I was walking in the hallway towards her suite, I turned to the corner of where her room is located when I spotted her in front of her door with some guy sitting down on the floor, I also noticed a luggage and a duffle bag

Luckily, Jennie's back is turned against me so she didn't see me coming. I hid at the corner with my back against the wall as fast and as quietly as I could so they won't notice my presence.

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath to try and relax myself.. and when I dared peek to take another look at them, to my horror, I witnessed her and the guy hugging and kissing each other

She wasn't even trying to pull away from the guy and she was holding on to his arms too.

It's probably HIM.

Jackson.

I looked away quick and blinked a couple of times to stop myself from crying. I feel myself shaking from anger, jealousy, hurt and other negative feelings that I can't even put into words.

All the hate that I felt towards her from 8 years ago is starting to come back again

I felt my blood boil and all I'm seeing right now is Red. I wanted to go over to where they are so I could beat up the guy and slap Jennie in the face

But I decided to just walk away and leave everything behind and

I threw away the bouquet of flowers that were supposed to be for her at the nearest trash bin

I feel so stupid and pathetic, to think that I almost gave up Jungkook for that...that..

Whore!

I should've known better..

Jennie is never going to change, the story that she told me about her struggles back in America were probably lies too.

I fucking hate her!

JENNIE'S POV

"Jackson?" I said calmly but deep down I am shocked as hell

Why is he here?!!

Damn it!

Why Now?!

"Baby! You're here! I've missed you!" He said standing up pulling me close to him, giving me a tight hug then he kissed me on the lips which surprised me

I couldn't move, I was holding on to his arms trying to steady myself.

I wanted to slap him but I ended up pushing him away instead of hurting him physically. I didn't like the feel of his lips on mine, it felt so different from Lisa.

The Kiss felt like it lasted forever and I know I needed to stop it before he gets too intense.

"Mmmpp..! Jackson! Stop! what are you doing?!" I growled, wiping my lips using the back of my left hand

He gave me an offended look but I didn't know how to take back how I reacted towards him

"Sorry baby, I was just happy to see you..I haven't seen you in two weeks.." Jackson said with a sad tone

Shit! Now I feel bad

"No, uhm, I'm sorry I didn't mean to react that way, you just kind of surprised me is all" I said still keeping my distance from him, for some reason, I felt like I was being watched by someone

He just nodded and gave me a tight lip smile, there was an awkward silence between us, normally, him and I would be all over each other but now it's just weird.. for me at least.

"Anyways, what are you doing here? I thought your flight isn't until Monday?" I asked

"I wanted to surprise you babe"

Yeah, you for sure did

"Oh, that's..great.." I said while I let out an uncomfortable laugh

"You don't look too happy" he said with an obvious hurt in his voice

"I am Bao, but like I said I was just surprised, I didn't get to book you a hotel room"

"Huh? Why do you need to book me one? I can stay in your suite right?"

"I don't know about that, I think Rosé doesn't really allow another person to stay in my suite, it's supposed to be only for me" I said trying to convince him

"I'm sure she wouldn't mind, but just in case, let me call her to let her know, I have her number" Jackson said then he proceeded to call my friend

"Jackson No You don't need to--"

I was gonna tell him that I'll call Rosé but she already answered her phone

"Hey Ms. Park, Good evening, sorry to call you at this late hour, it's Jackson Wang, Yeah, from Wang Corp and Gold Constructions, I'm here in Korea right now, Park-Hyatt Seoul? Yes, I need to ask you a huge favor Ma'am, the thing is I came here on a whim to surprise my girl, I didn't get to book a hotel room, could I stay at Jennie's suite?"

No! No! No!

Please Say No Rosé!

I texted Rosé as fast as I could to tell her not to let Jackson stay with me, when I tried sending the text, to my luck, it failed to deliver-and Rosé already gave her permission to let Jackson stay in my suite.

"Really? That's great, thanks Ms. Park, I owe you one" he said hanging up the phone, then he turned his attention back to me

"She said it's okay Bao, so you're not in trouble" Jackson said grinning happily then he gave me a bear hug and a kiss on my temple.

I forced myself to smile but I'm already a nervous wreck on the inside

"Oh.. that's awesome Bao"

"I know. let's go in babe, I want to lay on our bed and do something fun with you" he said to me, I just gave him a nervous smile

He's definitely looking for some bed action tonight but he's not gonna get it.

"Uhm, let me just open the door then" I said getting out of his hold

I then took out my card key from my wallet to open my door

Fuck! what am I going to do?!

If Tangelo finds out about this she's gonna go crazy and get mad at me..

Or worse, she might cut off ties with me for good

Shit! I can't let that happen!

I gotta do something before this gets out of hand.

:

We entered my suite and told Jackson that I'm going to take a shower, he said okay as he settles himself on the couch

I brought my pajamas and underwear so I can change in the bathroom, making sure my body is covered, I don't want to expose any skin in front of Jackson, I then locked myself in the bathroom and texted Lisa right away to let her know what happened, it's better if she finds out from me before she finds out from someone else.

10:15 PM

>Baby, I gotta tell you something but please try not to get mad at

me, Jackson is here, I didn't know he was coming

5 minutes later, no reply from her

10:20 PM

> Please baby if you're awake text me back, I just want to let you know that he's staying in my suite, I couldn't get out of it because he called Rosé to ask for permission and she said yes, I didn't get to give her a heads up because he surprised me, I'll make up an excuse so he won't sleep with me in my room

After sending the last text, I took a shower first while I wait for her reply.

I showered quick just in case she text back, but sadly, she didn't

10:30 PM

> Love please.. don't be upset okay? I'll think of something so he'll leave me alone. I just want to be honest with you, I'm sorry baby..

I sighed deeply, she most likely wouldn't reply after finding out about Jackson being here, she's probably fuming right now

I dialed her number to give her a call instead, but it went straight through her voicemail.

"Shit" I whispered to myself

I then called Rosé to let her know about my plan to not let Jackson stay in my suite after tonight.

I'm hoping she'll go along with it

RS: Yeoboseyo?

JN: Chaeyoung-a, I need a huge favor from you

I said whispering

RS: Ok sure Jennie-ya, is everything alright?

JN: No, actually I'm in a bit of a pickle here, and I'm probably going to ask for too much but uhm, could you let Jackson know that he can't stay in my suite please?

RS: Sure, but give me an idea on what you want me to say to him
Wow, that was easy.

JN: Please tell him that the suite you assigned to me is only for me, that it's a protocol, no mixing business with pleasure or something like that

RS: Ok babe, I got you, you're still gonna power through the break-up, right?

JN: Yes babe, just gotta talk to Lisa first, thank you I owe you one

RS: You're welcome hun.

JN: And, Chaeyoung-a.. I'm sorry

RS: Hmm? for what?

JN: I just.. I know that we're friends and I don't want to seem like I'm taking advantage of you because technically I still work for you but I want to apologize in advance because this break-up might affect the Jeju Project

RS: Yeah, it probably will, I know the risks but they signed a contract and if the Wangs violate it then they're going to pay us big money, more than what we're paying them and their reputation will be ruined, not to toot my own horn but Park-Hyatt Group is a big deal, and besides, if I do lose them, I still have my trusty Gold Constructions right?

My friend said with a comforting and re-assuring tone, I can literally picture her smiling right now

JN: Yes, Thank you again Chaeyoung-ah, I appreciate everything you've done for me.

RS: Not a problem babe. I got you always.

JN: I love you

RS: I love you too

Our moment was interrupted when I heard Jackson knock on the bathroom door lightly, asking me if I'm almost done and I responded with a 'Yes'

JN: I gotta go babe, talk to you soon, thank you again and bye.

RS: Sure thing love, bye.

I put on my pajamas on making sure I'm well covered and I opened the door while I dry my hair with my towel

"Hey. Wow" Jackson said looking at me with awe

"Hey" I responded with a tight lip smile

"You look so beautiful Bao" Jackson said and was about to go in for a kiss on the lips but I avoided it

"No Bao, I haven't brushed my teeth yet" I said fake giggling while I push him away playfully

"So? That wasn't an issue before" He said smiling but I sensed a bit of hurt from him.

I feel bad but I don't want anybody kissing me anymore except for Tangelo so I just gave him a smile and hugged him

"Let me dry my hair okay?"

"Okay" he said turning away from me back to the couch

:

11:25 PM

"You ready for bed babe?" Jackson asked

"Yeah..hey babe? I don't mean to be rude or anything but is it okay if I sleep alone tonight?"

"You don't want to sleep with me?"

No.

"It's not that, don't take it the wrong way, I'm just really sore and I got my period early and I kind of want the whole bed to myself.. please? Just for tonight" I said giving him my signature pout, he usually putty when I do this.

He gave me an understanding smile but I could tell he's feeling rejected, he's not really used to me acting like this.

Before Tangelo came back into my life, I let him have his way with me but now? I would probably punch him in the face if he dare tries to do something.

:

After Jackson settles down on the couch, I went into my room making sure I lock the door, I laid in my bed and texted my Tangelo goodnight

11:43 PM

>Good night my love, I hope we can get a chance to talk tomorrow.. I have something important to tell you, sleep-tight my sweet duckie, I miss you so..

I waited for as long as I could for her to reply but there's none.

I cried myself to sleep, I know that my wife is mad at me but I'm praying that she wouldn't have a change of heart and understand my situation.

:

I left my suite at around 6 in the morning before Jackson wakes up, I left a note that says I headed out and he can order room service for food, Rosé texted me last night that he'll let Jackson know that he can't stay in my suite anymore and I'm thankful for that.

I really didn't want to face him right now, he unintentionally pissed me off and I might say some hurtful things to him and I don't want that to happen

It wasn't his fault, it's all me, I should've come clean to him as soon as I realized that I'm still in love with Tangelo but I'm already in this situation and I just gotta deal with it.

:

When I arrived at Third Night, I started reviewing the materials, designs and the budget for the Hotel while I wait for my wife to arrive.

4 hours later and she still isn't here, I tried calling her multiple times but she didn't answer, I've been texting her and she just kept leaving me on 'Read'

Where the hell is she?!

I'm feeling aggravated, I really need to see her and talk to her to settle things, she needs to know that I still love her and she's what I Want and Need

I'm ready to give it all up for her.

I'm feeling very impatient so I went and see Minatozaki, she'll for sure know where my wife is.

:

I knocked on Sana's door, I didn't wait for her to tell me to come in, I already know she's there because she's smashing the keys on her keyboard harshly

"Minatozaki! I need to ask you something!" I said barging in to her door, I closed it and so are her blinds

"What the hell?! Jennie you scared me! What do you want now? I'm very busy!" she said giving me an annoyed look

I just scoffed at her

"Yeah, no shit, anyways have you seen Lisa? It's past 10 am and she's still not here"

She just gave me a weird look like I should already know where she is

"Well, are you gonna answer me or not?" I demanded, I'm about to snap if I don't get my answer soon.

"She went to Jeju Island with Jung-kook" Sana flat-out answered then she continued typing

"What the hell did you just say?!!!" I asked angrily slamming my hands on her table causing her to startle

"My God, Kim! Can you chill?! she went on an early flight with him to Jeju Island to celebrate their anniversary"

My heart is racing and body is trembling from so much anger.

I'm furious and I'm about to murder the both of them

I walked out of Sana's office slamming her door
:

I went on the elevator to go on the rooftop to let out my frustrations

As soon as I reached the top, I dialed her number, I already know she's not going to answer but I'm going to make sure to get my fucking point across!

"Kim, Lalisa! You're fucking dead! You hear me?! Dead! Im going to hunt your ass down over there at Jeju Island! No matter where you hide, I'm going to find you! How fucking dare you go on a trip with that fuck-tard Jungkook when you said you wouldn't?! I fucking warned your ass not to fuck with me Tangelo! You better believe this is not going to end well for you! especially to your slut of a boyfriend! You got that?! You're Mine! All Mine!" I growled through my phone then I hung up

"FUCK!!!" I yelled at the top of my lungs

I paced back and forth, running my hand through my hair while crying my jealousy and anger out of my system.

I really want to hurt somebody, specifically Jeon, Jung-kook.

I have all the money and power in the world to get rid of him and ruin everyone around him.

Permanently.

If I need to go that far to knock some sense into my wife's stubborn ass, then I will.

I will go above and beyond to show her who she belongs to!

Lalisa, I've been trying my hardest to be patient with your childish antics but this time you took it too far and I swear you're going to pay for betraying me!

You really want to see me be aggressive and controlling again huh, Lisa?

You want The Psycho Devil to come out?!

Fine.

You got it!

You belong to me and if I need to remind you the hard way to get it through your thick skull then shall be it!

My heart and my mind is full of Raging Anger and Jealousy but at the same time, it's filled with Passion, Love and Obsession for my beloved wife.

I'm not gonna let her get away from me.

There's No Escape

I smirked to myself which turned into a maniacal grin.

Lalisa.. You should've learned your lesson by now, My Sweet Darling..

I own every little inch of you!

"You're Mine, Mrs. Kim"

47.) Maheunilgop

Title: ILYSB

Artist: LANY

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

**"..And You need to know that nobody could take your place,
And You need to know that I'm Hella obsessed with your face."**

WARNING: Everything on this chapter will be in favor Jennie



-Errors Here and There, Watch out and Take Care.

JENNIE'S POV

*****Ring Ring Ring*****

JS: Jendeuki! what's up?!

JN: Chu, I need you to do me a favor

I said to my cousin as I drive going to the airport to follow Lisa in Jeju Island.

JS: What happened? is everything okay?

JN: No, My wife ran away with her man-whore. I know you got people in Jeju, I need someone to keep a close eye on Tangelo, I want to make sure she's not going to get intimate or do something stupid with the guy before I get to her.

JS: What? like some kind of sabotage

JN: ****grinning**** Yeah..Like have your guys beat up her retarded boyfriend or maybe even kidnap Tangelo, something like that.

JS: You're kidding, right?

I chuckled, it's like she forgot who she's talking to, but then again it's been 8 years since she last saw me so..

JN: does it sound like I'm kidding dear cousin? I've had it with Tangelo's stubbornness, she's been pushing me and I've reached my limit, I'm not playing her game anymore, I'm in control now.

JS: Jendeuki, I'll have my people watch her but I'm not going to ask them to do something so drastic.

JN: Drastic? Please, what I asked of you is child's play, BUT! I'm the one who's asking you for a favor so I'll take whatever I can get.

JS: Jennie, be careful. don't do anything you'll regret in the end

JN: The only one who's going to regret anything is my wife. To be fair, I gave her a warning and she chose to ignore it and now, she's going to pay for being defiant.

JS: Jen-

JN: Please just do what I ask Chu, and don't worry I'm not going to taint your Family's precious reputation.

JS: Will you stop? It's not that okay? I'm just worried that you might get yourself in trouble or get hurt, I don't want that to happen, I just got you back

There was a long pause between us, I admit I'm being overbearing right now and my cousin is taking the heat, I'm being unfair to her

JN: Chu, I apologize, it's just that.. Lisa, she's driving me insane,

she kept going against me, she sends me mixed signals and she's confusing the hell out of me, I just want to settle the score once and for all

JS: And if she rejects you?

JN: Then she's just going to prove how stupid she really is because I'm not having any more of her Bullshit, When it comes to my property, **I Always Win**, That little duck is mine for as long as we live and even in the after life. If she doesn't comply and doesn't realize it soon then I'll make her pathetic boyfriend's life a living hell.

My cousin didn't say anything anymore, but I can feel her uneasiness on the other line

JN: *****deep sigh***** I Really Really Love Lalisa.. I'm In Love with her..I Can't Do Life Without Her, Chu.

JS: I know Jennie, I wish you good luck, I'm just here if you need me. I love you, Mandu

JN: I love you too, Turtle Rabbit. Bye.

I hung up the phone and focused on my driving. I need to get to the airport as fast as I could, I need to get to my wife and take her back.

I let Rosé know about what's going on out of respect and just to give her a heads up that I'm leaving my post because I have to take care of my marriage situation.

Jackson has been texting and calling me but I didn't bother answering, I don't have any time for him, he's most likely pissed off already but I don't give a damn, he can be mad and stay mad and hopefully break up with me so I don't need to worry about breaking his heart.

I really don't give a damn about anything anymore except getting my wife back, she's the only one that matters to me and I'm done having to share her.

I hate sharing!

What's Mine is Mine!

:

:

2 HOURS LATER

I finally arrived in Jeju Island.

My cousin arranged transportation for me, she got me a service with a chauffeur who minds his own business and knows their way around the place at the same time, She also provided 3 private security guys for my protection just in case things get out of hand.

They're going to follow me with a different car because there's no way those three muscle-obsessed men are going to share my space.

The chauffeur waited for me at the arrival area of the airport, as soon as he saw me, he greeted me and introduced himself. He's a middle-aged man with poker face expression.

After the formalities, he led me to the parking lot towards a blacked out Mercedes-Benz S-class. When we reached the vehicle, He opened the door at the back seat of the car then he politely motioned for me to get inside.

When the chauffeur was sure that I'm well settled and comfortable, he started the car then we exited the airport parking lot.

Jisoo notified me about Lisa's whereabouts, apparently they're at a seaside tea room having some kind of romantic afternoon date.

I scoffed at their corny ass, lame ass relationship.

Tch. How Fucking Dull.

Lalisa, if it was me you're with right now, I'll buy you a whole tea farm.

A friend of my cousin Jisoo owns the Tea House so I asked her to book the whole Restaurant for me, it took a lot of convincing since it was last minute and I also paid a chump change of \$50,000 USD to get the place for my self and my wife, Money is no object for me

if it means I get to spend some time alone with the love of my life.

I cut my musings and turned my attention on the person driving the vehicle.

"You know where to go, right?" I asked the chauffeur

"Yes Ma'am, The British Bell Tea Room" he said confirming it for me

"How far away is it?"

"About 20-25 minutes Ma'am"

"I'm gonna need you step on it." I said with a demanding tone

"Of course Ma'am. As you wish" he responded

I sighed annoyed, I'm feeling grumpy but I realized that I need to get it together so I sat back and relaxed myself while looking out the window with my arms and legs crossed. A few more minutes and I'll get to see my precious but rebellious little duckie.

You're gonna learn today my love-- you can't runaway from me for long.

I also found out through my cousin's people that Lisa and the monkey are staying at one of the Three Hotels the Kims own on the Island, the person told me my that our older cousin Nam-joon A.K.A. "R.M." runs the Family's Hotel Business.

Jisoo gave me his number so I could contact him. Luckily, Nam-joon and I have a close relationship when we were growing up, hopefully we still share that same chemistry after 8 years of not seeing or talking to each other

*****Ring Ring Ring*****

RM: Yeoboseyo?

JN: Cousin. it's me, Jennie.

RM: Well I'll be damned, Jennie Mandu Kim! Where the hell have you been and how the hell are ya?! I miss you!

JN: ****giggles**** Oh you know, just cruising here and there, and I'm good cousin, you? I miss you too

RM: I'm doing great! anyways I know what this call is about so Im gonna skip with the catching up, that way, I don't waste your time or mine. Jisoo already gave me a heads up. You're on a hunt right?

I shook my head then smiled while I put my left palm on my forehead.

There's no beating around the bush with this guy.

JN: Yep. A rebellious little duckie is trying to escape from me and I need you to do me a favor

RM: Duckie huh? Alright, Let me hear it.

JN: I'm gonna need you to cancel a reservation for one of your guests, I don't exactly know which hotel but if you could track 'em down, that'll be great. It's under the name of Jeon, Jung-kook, and if that doesn't work, try Kim, Lalisa.

RM: I got you. So, I'm curious, which one is your duck?

JN: The Woman. Kim, Lalisa. She's my wife, Nam-joon

There's a sudden pause with our conversation, I heard him take a deep breath and then he let out a small chuckle.

RM: I see. Promise me that you'll introduce me to her okay? I want to get to know the person who's got our little Jennie running around chasing after them

JN: ***laughing*** Sure thing RM, wish me luck, and oh! One more thing, I need a Suite, Ocean View, could you provide one for me cousin or Am I asking for too much already?

NJ: No, not at all, Consider it done, I'll send you the details after this call. Good luck! and by the way, Jennie-ya? You are going to pay for the rest of the days that your targets booked right? cos you know I'm gonna need to refund them now, and you know I don't like losing money.

I mentally laughed at what he said about the annoying couple being my Targets

Targets huh? That's right, that's what they are..

Only difference is that..

One is going to be held captive, the other one is a goner.

JN: Of course, I'll pay you a month's worth RM and not only that, if you do me this favor, I promise a partnership with you on your future endeavors.

RM: I was kidding, but I'll take that offer, Gold Constructions is an Ace Builder Company.. and I want you to know that I'm really proud of you and your achievements, you made a name for yourself and I couldn't be happier for you, Ms. Jane Park.

JN: ***smiling*** Thanks cousin, that means a lot coming from you, and I'm proud of you too, I'm glad we're all in a good place.

RM: I know. I'm really happy you called, come see me when you're free okay? so we can catch up

JN: Thank You RM, I knew I could count on you, and yes let's get together, I would love that

RM: Bye deuki, take care of yourself, call or text me if you need anything else.

JN: I will. Thanks Nam-joon, Bye.

I Hung up the phone and I smirked to myself.

I know I'm playing dirty and it's underhanded but this isn't about me being conniving, this is about Tangelo being defiant and I'm about to show her what I'm really capable of.

I didn't earn all this money and power for nothing, I told her before that I did all this for her and I'm about to use it to make her mine again.

She's probably thinking I'm gonna go easy on her just because she's my wife?

HA! Wrong!

I didn't want to be this devious but she pushed me to the edge and now she's about to realize what Jane Park can really do.

I looked at my phone once again and went to 'Photos' so I could stare at one of my wife's pictures, the one selfie that she sent me some time ago before everything went back to shit again

"How Gorgeous.." I whispered to myself while biting my lower lip, My body is feeling so hot just by looking at her picture.

My Love..

My heart melted and it's beating like crazy, I feel butterflies in my stomach and I couldn't help but smile at the sight of her, she's too adorable for her own good.

Her face.. I'll never get tired of it, I could stare at my wife's beautiful, flawless face forever.. and I'll do anything to keep her around, by hook or by crook.

You duck-faced moron..

You never learn do you?

You're Mine..

Only Mine.

LISA'S POV

"Wow babe, I can't get over this place, it's so beautiful.." I said to my boyfriend as I stare at the deep blue ocean in front of me.

I'm currently standing in front of the Veranda of the restaurant with Jung-kook hugging me from behind, his arms around my waist, resting his chin on my left shoulder while we wait for our order.

The restaurant wasn't very crowded since it's the middle of the day, in fact, it's like we have the whole place to ourselves, which is good I guess because we got the best view.

"It is but, you're more beautiful babe" he said whispering to my ear then he kissed my cheek lightly while tightening his hold

"Ha. Nice, plus 10 points for you baby" I said looking back then I gave him a quick kiss on the lips but then he had other plans, he deepened our kiss, I want to get out of it but I didn't want to hurt his feelings

His lips.. his kisses, they feel so different from Jennie's.

Jennie...

Last Night, I saw her kissing her boyfriend

I was in so much pain..I wanted to hurt the both of them but I ended up going home..crying myself to sleep because I felt so hurt, I was so jealous... I didn't know what to do with myself.

That same night, she texted me explaining her situation, she even tried calling me multiple times but I never responded.

It was a little too late for her, My mind is already clouded with dark thoughts and all I could think about is how to hurt her back.

Trust me when I say that I understand her situation but I was so angry that I couldn't think rationally, next thing I know I was packing my stuff going to Jeju Island with Jung-kook.

Honestly speaking though, I kind of regret coming here with him because I didn't even give Jennie the chance to really explain herself, I chose to runaway from her and right now I'm feeling really uneasy about it..

Earlier this morning I received a very angry voicemail from her, I felt her rage through the message that she left me that I'm actually feeling scared for mine and Jung-kook's life, I feel like our existence is about to end soon.

I know Jennie..when she gets mad, She gets REALLY mad.

She was already over-the-top horrifying when we were younger, who knows what she's capable of doing now that she has all the money and influence.

I did research about her and her company after her and I reconciled and let me just say that She's no joke.

There's very limited information about her and she's very private but one title caught my attention.

She's known as the Rising Tiger in Construction and Real Estate World.

I bet if she really wants to, she can have mine and Jung-kook's license be revoked or maybe have us kidnap..or killed!

"Babe? Hey babe" Jung-kook said tapping my left shoulder lightly. I didn't even realized he was already standing beside me

"Huh? What?" I asked him, snapping out of my trance

"Baby, you were shaking, are you alright? Are you cold? Do you want to wear my jacket?" He asked worriedly

I shook my head 'No' and gave him a forced smile

No, I'm not cold..I'm terrified

"No it's alright, I'm fine. I'm sorry for making You worry" I said to him while I cup his cheek

He gave me his warmest smile and kissed the palm of my hand

"Food is here.. let's get to snacking shall we?" He said leading me to our table, he pulled up my chair for me and motioned me to sit down then he kissed my cheek before he sits down in his chair.

As I was about to take my first bite, I saw an all too familiar face entering the restaurant with three big goons with her.

My heart stopped not because of sheer happiness but because of fear, She gave me an evil smirk with a cold look in her eyes.. She's smirking but..it wasn't a playful one, it's a victorious smirk, like she has finally found her helpless prey..

I'm done for..She's about to ruin me..

No..

She's about to Kill Me!

I gulped and I feel myself shaking, tears are ready to fall down from my eyes due to panic as my eyes continue to follow her every move

"Babe? What's wrong now?" My boyfriend asked holding my hand

"Jung-kook..Mi-Ms. Jane Park..She's..-He--" I started but I couldn't continue anymore since she's already standing by our table.

"Hello" Jennie said with an icy tone while she's looking at me with eyes full of anger.

Her and I made eye contact, her angry stare is very intense that I'm having a hard time looking away, it's like I'm being sucked in and I couldn't get out of it. I was speechless and I couldn't move a muscle, my throat feels dry and I feel like my soul just left my body.

I snapped out of my frozen state when Jung-kook Spoke up while squeezing my hand to give me comfort.

"Ms. Park, what are you doing here?" Jung-kook asked her, he seems clueless about the fuming aura Jennie is giving off at the moment

Jennie didn't answer him, instead she looked at mine and Jung-kook's tangled hands, although she's hiding it really well, I already know that my wife is fuming 10 times over on the inside. I instinctively removed my hand from my boyfriend's hold to avoid as much trouble as I could.

I'm aware that Jung-kook is already looking at me weird but I'm too occupied and concerned about what Jennie's going to do

"Ms. Park.. you're-" I said but she interrupted me

"Nice day we're having" Jennie said as she continues to shoot daggers my way then she turned her attention to Jung-kook

"Mr. Jeon, I thought you said we you were going to do some business here in Jeju, you know? Check out the site and all, that's why you took this stupid woman with you, I see that you're doing none of that"

Jung-kook stood up all of a sudden, throwing his napkin on the table. He looks really pissed, he went toe to toe with Jennie but she didn't look intimidated at all.

"What did you just say about Lisa?"

She scoffed and answered him

"Did I stutter? I called her a Stupid woman" she said flatly, as she glares at him

"Take it back or I swear I'll--"

"You'll what? Jeon?"

Jung-kook didn't say anything, I saw him clench his right fist, Jennie was doing the same like she's ready to swing at him, both of them are having a very intense stare down, I know I have to intervene before someone gets hurt so I spoke up

"You guys, please.. not here-"

"Stay out of this Tangelo!" Jennie growled at me which caused me to shut my mouth

"Don't yell at her!" My boyfriend said defending me

"I just did you dumb fuck! what are you gonna do about it?!"

"Jennie I swear to God if you weren't a woman I would beat the shit out of you!"

"So do it! come on! I dare you!" Jennie snarled but Jung-kook just continued to give her a death stare

"Ha! You fucker, you're all talk no action, I bet I could whoop your ass without breaking a sweat"

She then looked at my direction, she grinned and gave me a wink. she clearly mouthed an *'I love you'* to me then she gave me an air kiss. I was so shocked by her blatant actions that it made me croak. Jung-kook saw the whole thing and he's now looking furious, clenching his jaw

"You're talking big because you have three big guys with you huh, Jennie?"

She rolled her eyes at my boyfriend, mocking him deliberately

"Oh Please, don't think highly of yourself Jeon, I can beat you up myself anytime and any place"

Jung-kook moved closer to her, provoking Jennie, If looks could kill, the two would probably be dead by now given by how heated their glares are at each other.

"Get out my face" Jennie said with a warning tone

"No" He responded bravely

"Alright! That's it!" Jennie roared.

She was about to strike him when I stood up abruptly towering over her, I caught her hand before it lands on Jung-kook's face.

"Jennie! Stop this non-sense!" I said to her raising my voice.

She scowled at me, contemplating if she should listen to me or not, but thank goodness she did.

"Let go of my hand Lisa!" She demanded, taking her hand back harshly, gritting her teeth, she then gave her attention back to Jung-kook

"Walk away Jeon! Walk the fuck away if you don't want to have any problems!"

"Who the fuck do you think you are Jennie?! coming in here like you own the fucking place!"

"I rented the fucking place! so fuck off and leave me and **MY WIFE** alone!" Jennie said bluntly

Jung-kook's eyes widen in shock and he was taken aback with what he just heard. Him and I are on the same boat, I was so shocked when she yelled that information out of nowhere, but it was nothing compared to Jung-kook's reaction, I saw a look of betrayal, hurt, jealousy and anger written all over his face.

Jennie on the other hand is grinning like the devil himself, no remorse, like she's actually proud that she just ruined a long-term relationship

What the hell just happened?!

I can't believe how much our situation escalated so quickly!

"She's your..Lisa's your.." he said then he looked at me like he's begging me to tell him that what he just heard was all a lie

Tears flowed down my eyes, it hurts seeing him like this..

"Jung-kook..I---"

"I know she didn't tell you and that's why I'm here to give it to you straight. Lalisa is my wife, Jeon. We got married in Australia 8 years ago.. actually, it's already the month of May right? so..it's been 9 years already since we tied the knot, we got married April 1st by the way" Jennie said crossing her arms while giving him an arrogant smile.

"Lalisa.. tell me she's lying" Jung-kook said looking at me with eyes full of hurt

"Babe..Jennie and I, we--"

I was going to explain myself to him even though I don't exactly know what to say but Jennie answered for me

"We were young and crazy in love, so we decided to get married before High School Graduation"

"Jennie be quiet!"

"No! You shut your mouth and don't tell me what to do! I'm done with your rowdy and childish behavior Lalisa! I warned you not to test me! it's time for him to know the damn truth so I could take back what is rightfully mine! be fair to him!" She spat back then she looked at Jung-kook

"I'm sure you questioned why she was using *KIM* as her last name instead of *MANOBAN* right? whatever alibi she gave you was probably convincing enough for you to not suspect that she's being sketchy in the first place, that, or you're just blindly in love, I can't blame you though if it's the latter, I mean, look at her, she's a piece of art.. and a fire ball in bed"

Jung-kook and I are just standing still, waiting for her to drop another bomb.

I want to stop her so bad but the situation is just too overwhelming for me.

"I made her change her last name, Jeon, that way, she knows who she belongs to, so she'll always be reminded that her and I are one" She continued.

Jung-kook shook his head vigorously and angrily yelled at Jennie "You're lying!"

"Oh but I'm not, I can pull up the legal documents of our marriage if you'd like, frame it on your wall or something to remind yourself not to be fooled by a pretty face ever again..."

She then let out a laugh that gives off a vibe that Jung-kook was played

"Lalisa is mine, Jeon. Even after 8 years of not being together, She knows who owns her, She's ALWAYS been mine. Heart, Body and Soul."

He ignored her and he turned his attention to me and said "Lisa, tell me the truth, I won't believe that you're married to this conniving woman unless you tell me otherwise"

Jennie scoffed at him and now, she's looking at me too

"Go ahead, Lalisa Kim.. tell him, tell him how you've been making a fool out of him all these years, and maybe let him know about what happened between us when we were stuck here during the storm"

And now it's my turn to be put on the hot seat, I looked at Jung-kook as I continue to let out tears of guilt. I'm really hurt for him, I made him look like a fool when all he ever did was love and care

for me.

I couldn't speak, I wanted the ground to swallow me whole or maybe drop dead.

I didn't deserve him..

I never deserved him!

"Lisa.." He said helplessly

"Jung-kook.. ****sob**** I'm so sorry.. ****sob****"

I was going to approach him but he held out his hand, stopping me

"Don't! Please don't come near me Lisa, before I lose all my love and respect for you" He said fighting back his tears

"Please.. Forgive me.. I didn't want all these to happen, It was never my intention to hurt you.. I'm so sorry Jung-kook" I said in despair

I saw it in his eyes that he wanted to run and comfort me but he was torn because he knew he needed to save himself from the pain and I understand that so I didn't push it anymore.

"Fuck!!!" He yelled at the top of his lungs then he flipped our table and walked out of the restaurant

"Jung-kook! wait!"

I was about to run after him when Jennie grabbed my right wrist aggressively, pulling me hard towards her

"Where the hell do you think you're going?!!"

"Jennie let go!"

"Like hell I would! do you really think you can runaway just like that without any consequences?!"

"Unngghh!! Jennie you're hurting me! please! let go!"

"I'm not letting you go! NEVER! You're Mine!!! You've driven me to insanity Lalisa! you made me like this! you're not going anywhere!"

"You're a Vile Human Being! I'm never going to forgive you Jennie!"

"I don't give a flying fuck! You were made for me Lisa! The Universe know that you were meant to be mine and you can't do anything about it so stop fighting and give in!"

"No! uuughhh!!! Jennie! Why are you doing this? what did I ever do to you?!"

"What did you EVER do to me?!" She angrily said then she grabbed my face kissing me roughly on the lips.

I wanted to pull away but my body won't let me, She forcefully slid her tongue inside my mouth to show her dominance. The kiss lasted for more than a minute, she bit my lower lip hard which caused me to groan in pain, then she broke off our kiss but she's still holding on to my face

"You made me fall head over heels for you.. You've made me fall madly In love with you..That's what you've done to me, that's the biggest sin you ever committed in your waking life.. And now, You're going to pay with your Freedom.." She paused as she looked deeply into my eyes, like she's staring directly into my soul

"I love you, so so much...There's no escaping me, Lalisa." She whispered in my mouth then she pushed me hard, away from her.

She snapped her fingers and said "Grab her!" to her goons, then she walked away exiting the Restaurant.

And before I know it, two guys are forcefully grabbing both my

arms dragging me with them following The Spawn of the Devil
Herself.

A/N: Security be like:

48.) Maheunyeodol

Title: All I Ask (Adele Cover)

Artist: Bruno Mars

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: Sudden Change of Pace.. Errors here and there, I wanted to finish before I go back to work tomorrow.

JENNIE'S POV

"Go and tie her down on that chair over there" I said to one of the guys that's carrying Lisa.

Earlier she was just being dragged but she proved to be combative so I asked them to handcuff her with her hands behind her back and put a blind fold on her and since she wouldn't shut up, I told them to cover her pretty mouth with duct tape and carry her instead.

They tied her down on the chair, wrapping a rope around her torso, her feet were also tied together securely so she won't be able to run.

As soon as my thugs were sure that she's not going anywhere (she still continues to fight by the way) I grinned feeling triumphant

"Leave us" I said to the three guys and they followed my command right away and exited the room casually like nothing happened.

Huh, maybe I should steal those guys from my cousin Jisoo and make them my personal body guards instead.

We're at the Pent House Suite that my cousin Nam-joon provided for me, It's the most Luxurious Suite a 5 star Hotel could offer in all of Korea, maybe even better than what Park-Hyatt can deliver (No offense to Rosé of course)

No one, not even the most powerful person in the World would be able to access or even allowed to have this space, It's exclusive only if you're a member of the Kim Family.

This suite has a private entrance and elevator so I don't really need to worry if someone sees us practically kidnapping Tangelo, and even if someone did see us, I'll make sure to keep 'em quiet, either with money or threaten their lives, either way I don't mind.

"It's just me and you now my precious duckie" I said lovingly then I give her a quick kiss on her duct-taped lips

"Uuummpp!! Ummpp!!" Tangelo muffled angrily while tears flow down her cheeks

I giggled at her struggle.

I'm such a sadist I swear

"Huh? What was that? Sorry I don't understand" I said making fun of her then I booped her nose "You're super adorable sweetie, I could just eat you up!" I added almost squealing.

"Uuuumpppp!!!" She muffled even louder

I rolled my eyes at her and scoffed then I took off the duct tape on her mouth harshly

"Oowww!! Shit!! Jennie you crazy psycho! you're not gonna get away with this you hear me?!!"

I scratched my left ear while I scrunch my nose. I'm feeling a bit annoyed by how loud she's yelling

"Yes I hear you, Tangelo. How could I not when you're just straight up yelling"

"Jennie as soon as I get out of here you're done! I'm taking you down!" She threatened

"Awww.. how cute, the little duckie really thinks she can escape without my permission and that she can actually do some damage. Adorable" I said mocking her then I laughed

"I hate you Jennie! I fucking hate you!"

"Pffft! Sure you do honey. You only hate me now Tangelo because you're mad but I know you don't mean that, you love me just as much as I love you"

"Jennie! Let me go! seriously You're way over the line! this is kidnapping for fuck's sake!"

"Calm down will you?" I said wiping her tears away then I took off her blind fold.

She glared at me as soon as she's able to see again and then she yelled some more

"Calm down?? How do you expect me to calm down when you're holding me captive!"

I sighed and puffed out my cheeks, then I pulled the closest chair near me and sat on it, crossing my legs to face my loud and stubborn wife

"You know love, this wouldn't have happened if you would've just kept your promise"

"Promise??" She asked kinking her eyebrows like she doesn't know what I'm talking about

"Don't play dumb Tangelo, you know damn well what I'm talking about. You told me that you weren't gonna come here to Jeju Island with your boyfriend..Or should I say.. EX-Boyfriend?" I said grinning at her

"How could you Jennie?! you just single handedly ruined everything between Jung-kook and I!"

"I ruined it? Just me? Are you sure? Tangelo Please, You know you have your fair share of wrong-doing so don't even try to put it all on me and besides, you and him are never going to last anyway"

"Jennie! You just came at him like a fucking piranha! you didn't even give him a chance to breathe, you just dropped all the bombs all at once! Do you think that's fair?!"

"He's a big boy Tangelo, he can handle himself, or not, he's the biggest pushover I swear.. but anyways, I really don't give a shit if I was being fair or not, I'm glad you and him are over, and I thought I was gonna have to send you both to Jail for committing adultery"

"Jail?! What are you talking about?!"

"Yes. Jail, You and I are married and you're in a romantic relationship with with him"

"Sue yourself because you've committed the same thing!"

"Ha! I didn't know my baby's a comedian now, 'sUe yOuRseLf' my

ass, why don't you just be quiet love? you're making yourself sound more stupid than usual"

"Shut the hell up Jennie!"

"Funny you should say that when you're the one who kept talking and yelling" I said with a smirk

"Untie me! Now!"

I put my left index finger on my chin and I looked up on the ceiling, pretending that I'm actually considering her demand

"Hmm.. let me think.. uhmhhh...hmmm..Yeah...No!" I said giving her an innocent smile

"You're insane Jennie!"

"Damn right I am" I said proudly then I stood up from my chair approaching her.

I grabbed her face aggressively with my right hand then I squeezed her cheeks

"And I'm not ashamed to admit it...actually, I should be blaming you why I became like this.. ever since you came into my life, everything just spiraled out of control for me.." I said whispering near her lips

"Unngghhh! Why me huh? Why?! There's 7 billion people in the world! Why can't you just leave me the hell alone!" She said as she tries her best to free herself

"I don't really know how to answer you, My Love.. but maybe if you're able to answer my questions then I'll consider letting you go.. which is most likely NOT going to happen by the way.." I responded then I gave her a lingering kiss on the lips, after that, I let go of her face and then I leveled with her since she's sitting down.

"Mmmm... Lalisa..let's get to those questions shall we? answer fast okay?" I said leaning forward, kissing on her right ear then I whispered "Why did you have to be so beautiful? Why did you have to give me the best kisses? Why did you have to be sooo great in bed? Why..did you have to be so perfect, My love?" I asked as I pull

away from her.

I held onto her left shoulder with my left hand making sure I support my weight then I caressed her cheek with my right hand while I look at her intently

"Lalisa, Everything about you drove me to madness..did you really think I wanted to be like this?" I said to her but she didn't answer

"I thought I was over you Tangelo, 8 years is a long time..I honestly thought I would end up with Jackson. The love that Him and I shared was calm, stable..but when I saw you again.. it's like He never existed..My Love for you re-ignited and it fired up my whole being..and when we made love again, I already knew that there's no turning back, I made up my mind of dropping everything just so I could have you..be with you"

The room is filled with complete silence. Lisa and I are still gazing into each other's eyes while she listens and pays attention to every word that I say.

"You know how I keep telling you that you can't escape from me? In reality, I'm the one who can't escape from you.. and I don't want to.. I'm in love with you and I know that these feelings will never go away.."

"Jennie, Please.."

"I love you, Lalisa.. I love you so very much.. I *HAVE* gone mental, and that's why I need you by my side because you're the only one who can bring me back to my sanity"

"Let me go.. I beg you" My wife said as she starts to cry in agony once more

"**NO**..You're not going anywhere, I'm not letting you go, Ever." I said with a menacing tone then I walked away from her

"Jennie!! No! don't walk away from me!! Jennieeeee!! Pleaseee!!!" She said begging but I blocked her out and went to the spacious bathroom and locked myself in.

I know she's hurting right now because of what happened

between Her and Jeon which is making me angrier because of Jealousy.

I understand where she's coming from though, Jeon was there when I wasn't. He supported, loved and cared for my wife. Jeon will always have a special place in her heart the same goes to Jackson with mine.

The only difference between Lisa and I is that, I know that she's the one I want the most, but she's still indecisive. I know that she loves him but I also know that she loves me, she's just really conflicted and I'm here to help her realize that I'm the one that she really needs and not him.

I could've done what Jeon did for her and more if it wasn't for the fact that I was forcefully taken against my will..

Who am I kidding though? I could've come to her a bit sooner, but I didn't.

I was so focused on gaining money and power that I lost sight of my goal, but all I ever wanted was to make sure that when I do come back for her, nobody's going to come between us ever again.

I got too confident of her feelings and the fact that we're married that I forgot that she's also a human being who's very fragile and vulnerable and that she needed love and protection with physical presence which Jeon gave to her.

The fact that she's crying for him is making my heart ache, I needed to get out of there before I change my mind and actually untie her myself.

I cried my heart out, I didn't want it to go this far, but what's done is done and I'm not really planning on backing out..yet.

I know that what I'm doing to her right now-with the kidnapping and her being tied down is not normal.

it's never normal and not acceptable to deny someone their freedom but here I am doing it to her anyway.

At the back of my mind, I'm hoping that I'll be able to keep Tangelo long enough for her to actually develop Stockholm

Syndrome, I'm aware that it's nowhere near love but at least she's formed some kind of attachment to me and maybe she'll give me a pass and forgive me for doing these awful things to her

Impossible.. She loves me but there's also a thin line between love and hate and she most likely crossed that line already..I pushed her to that point..there's nobody else to blame but me..

I checked my phone and there are a lot of missed calls and text messages from Jackson, Jihyo and Sana, asking me where I'm at.

I read the latest text messages from them

04:52 PM Minatozaki, Sana

>Hey Princess! where the hell are you??!! why'd you take off just like that?! you better not have followed Lisa and Jung-kook! we've got work to do damn it! answer your phone!

05:15 Park, Jihyo

>Jennie! Jackson has been texting and calling me asking where you at, I don't know what to tell him! where are you sis? we're worried about you, please text or call us back.

05:23 PM Bao

>Baby where are you?? please text me back or call me, I've been trying to reach you and I'm worried sick, is everything okay?

I replied to their messages and gave them all the same answer.. that I'm going to be out for a few days to think things over.

they all replied right away and almost at the same, they even tried calling but I ignored it, I decided to just block all three of them because I don't want to have to explain myself right now, everything is just so damn chaotic.

Lisa continues to scream but I didn't go to her, I just stayed in the bathroom, still crying, still hurting..

I don't know what to do..

I'm so lost..

How did it all come to this..

LISA'S POV

"Jennie!! No! don't walk away from me!! Jennieeeee!! Pleaseee!!!" I screamed, begging for her to come back and not leave me, she went to what I assume is the bathroom, slamming the door and possibly locking herself in.

I continued to scream and cry for her to let me go but she didn't come to my aid, she just stayed in there, ignoring me.

:

Things got so out of control it's just too much from me to handle, the look on Jung-kook's eyes when he found out everything was just pure agony for me.

I lied to him and now, he hates me.. and I can't blame him, I hate myself for hurting him, he did so much for me and in return, I ended up hurting him because of..

Because of Jennie..

It's true what she said, I am to be blamed as well, it takes two to tango. I let it happen, I was well aware that what I do with Jennie would hurt Jung-kook and would put our relationship in Jeopardy but I still continued anyway because I was being blinded by lust and lingering feelings..

"I deserve to be alone, I had it good with him but I chose to dance with the devil instead" I whispered to myself as I continue to cry

:

:

1 Hour Later

"Love, wake up"

I heard someone say while they poke my cheek

"Baby, you need to eat now, wake up.."

The person said again

I opened my eyes slowly and saw Jennie looking at me worriedly,

she brushes my hair away from my face then she caressed my face gently with her thumb

"J-Jennie?" I said

She gave me a warm smile and she responded to my call

"Yes baby..I'm here, let me feed you okay?" She said

So it wasn't a dream.. it really happened, Jennie coming here to Jeju following us, Jung-kook walking away from me and our relationship..and me being kidnapped..

I felt tears flowing down to my cheeks once more, my eyes are so sore from all the crying but I couldn't stop

"Love, please stop crying.. I'm going to loosen up the rope so your circulation won't be impaired and-"

"Jennie.. why? why did you have to go through all this trouble?" I asked her feeling defeated

I heard her let out a rather tired exhaled breath

"I love you" was her answer which set me off

"That's your answer? that has nothing to do with the situation I'm in right now!" I said raising my voice

"It has everything to do with it.. me being in love with you is the main reason why we're in this situation in the first place.."

"This isn't love Jennie! this is just pure craziness! You've gone completely insane! This is absurd!"

"You don't need to tell me that and you most certainly don't need to remind me over and over that I'm crazy, I've already embraced that side of me Tangelo, so it's pointless for you to keep repeating it"

"You love making me suffer don't you Jennie?"

"No, not at all, I just love you. that's it"

"Quit saying that!"

"Quit saying what?"

"That you love me! Stop! I'm tired of hearing your lies!"

"But I'm not-"

"Yeah you are! You don't do this to the person you claim to love Jennie! If this is your idea of loving me then I don't fucking want it!"

"You have no say in this Tangelo, My mind works differently than yours"

"That's cos your mind isn't in the right place! Jennie, let me go, please! I beg you"

She sighed and shook her head 'No'

"Eat, Love.. I don't want you to starve"

She said as she puts a spoon in front of me with steak and potatoes

"Open your mouth baby" she says gently but I didn't follow her, I

looked down closing my eyes trying to get some shut eye again

Maybe if I fall asleep and wake up I'll be in a different place, maybe this is just a dream within a dream.. or in this case, a nightmare..

"Fine.. Starve" she said darkly then I heard her walk away from me again, she opened a door and then slammed it shut.

When I opened my eyes, she's nowhere in sight..

Jung-kook, please, forgive me..forgive me for every bad things that I've done to you..

:

:

THE NEXT DAY

I felt someone doing something from behind my back, I opened my eyes immediately then I turned my head around and saw Jennie

"What are you doing now?!" I asked feeling panicked

"Cool it okay? I'm just loosening the ropes and trying to check your blood circulation and your skin, as expected you sustained some minor injuries and-"

"Shut up will you?! I wouldn't have those injuries if you would just let me go!"

"You're still on that, Tangelo? How many times do I have to tell you, you don't have that luxury anymore" she said then she went in the front to face me

"You can't just tie me up like this forever!"

"I know that, that's why in two days we'll be flying to New York City and you'll live with me in my unit, but don't worry, I have houses there too, In Upstate New York-Ithaca to be exact and I have one too in Lake George, It's really pretty there and I can't wait to show you around--"

"What do you mean flying to New York?! there's no way I'm going there with you at that hell hole of a place!"

She arched an eyebrow and crossed her arms

"You say that like you actually have a choice. Listen, New York

isn't that bad but we can move to California if you prefer"

"I don't give a shit about America! I'm not going!"

"You don't? Oh well, you'll eventually change your mind when you see it and adapt the culture, people there are more tolerable with our kind of relationship"

"Quit being ridiculous and acting like what you're doing is totally normal! How are you gonna get away with this huh?! I'm pretty sure Sana is looking for me already!"

"How am I gonna get away with this? Easy. Money, Connections and Influence" She answered confidently then she continued

"And yes you're right, Sana is looking for you, but it's not like she can find your exact location and even if she does, do you really think she can do anything to stop me?"

"Yes! Sana can go against you Jennie!"

"Please don't flatter her, she's not even close, not even at the tip of the iceberg"

"You cocky little bitch I swear to God I'll-"

"You can't do anything Tangelo, trust me on this, even my own family can't go against me anymore, I'll crush anyone who'll go and defy me. I told you before Honey, I did this all for you..all in the name of love"

"Crazy, Arrogant Bitch!!"

"That's my name, don't wear it out" she said smirking then sent a wink my way

"You say you love me when the truth is you just love having power over me don't you? what's really important to you is your fucking riches! don't use me to disguise the fact that you're a greedy person!"

"I'm not going to get in on that with you Tangelo, it doesn't matter what you say, I know what I feel and no one, not even you can tell me otherwise. Anyways, enough of the chit chat, let's eat"

"I'm not fucking eating!"

"Uh?yes you are, even If I have to force feed you"

"I'd rather die of starvation! You probably have poison on the food that you're giving me anyway!"

"That some hard accusations there baby.. I would never poison you"

"Never poison? sure you won't! the lies you tell! And you can't force feed me! I would aspirate you dumb ass!"

"Tch. don't you ever get tired of yelling, you're gonna have a sore throat.. and you're such a hypocrite, you said you'd rather die of starvation and yet you're worried about choking?"

I didn't say anything anymore, there's no point arguing with her, she's just going to keep pushing until I run out of energy

In the end I ended up eating and drinking very little amount, just enough for me to get by because I need to gain some strength if I want to get out of this shit hole.

I need to formulate a plan..

I need escape before she goes through her plan of taking me to New York.

:

:

LATER THAT NIGHT

Jennie eventually felt bad for tying me up for more than 24 hours given by how my skin started developing some redness and have open areas so she ended up untying me completely but she made sure her thugs are there just in case I plan on running away from them.

"I need to use the restroom" I said to her

I haven't really been drinking or eating anything since I got taken away so I didn't need to go yesterday, but now, I have to urge to do

a number one and number 2

Jennie is giving me a skeptical look, I know she believes me but I also know that she's scared that I'll do something to escape

"If you want you can come with me Jennie and watch me as I poop and pee" I said sarcastically

"Ok" She replied right away

I was a bit surprised but then again, I should've expected that answer from her, not to be conceited but, she's so paranoid about me running away from her that if given a chance she'll probably have me glued to her if she could.

"I was kidding" I deadpanned and I swear I saw a look of disappointment on her face

"Could you give me a change of clothes too? I need to shower, and don't worry, I'm not going anywhere, I won't escape, it's not like I can anyway" I said flatly

Again, she was looking skeptical but complied.

:

When I was done doing my business, I entered the shower and as soon as I did, The realization of not being able to get away from Jennie is sinking in once again which lead to me in tears

It's true, I can't escape.. and I won't be able to escape if I do it physically so I'll weasel my way out of this by going for her emotions.

It's a fat chance that she'll let me go by making her feel bad but it won't hurt to try

I'll be real with her with everything, She needs to know what's in my heart, she needs to know what I feel

I don't know what to do anymore and at this point, I'm willing to try anything and everything.

I'm not sure where my plan would lead me but it's worth a shot..

JENNIE'S POV

11:45 PM

Lisa and I are laying down on the on the bed, She's still in handcuffs but this time, She's handcuffed to me. I really want to get some sleep but she kept moving which is keeping me awake.

It's probably hard for her to sleep right now, I noticed that it was easier for her to fall asleep on the chair all tied down than being on this comfortable bed laying next to me, her captor, which really hurt my feelings but I can't put the blame on her.

Her and I are laying close together but we're back to back, facing opposite of each other

"Jennie.." She called softly

"Lisa" I answered with the same tone

"I need to talk to Jung-kook, I need to set things right with him.." She said

I didn't answer right away because I wanted to give her a chance to speak her mind, I didn't want to be more selfish to her than I already am..

There was a long and heavy tension in the air between us and she took that as her 'Go' Signal to continue

"I know it's hard for you to hear this but.. I love him, Jennie.. besides Sana, he's someone who was there for me when I was at my lowest, I know it wasn't your fault that you were gone for 8 years but.. he didn't deserve what I did to him..I need to at least try Jennie, I won't be able to live with myself knowing that I was the one who hurt him when I could've done something about it"

I admit, that hurt like a bitch, it's like she put a dagger straight to my heart..

Silent tears fell down my face, I know that she's crying too and she still has a lot to say so I let her continue

"Jennie, I can't do this anymore.. The talk that we had when we were stuck here in Jeju Island about confronting our past, it should've just ended there, we probably should've never crossed that line in the first place, we were doing fine working as professionals, and that talk just opened up a can of worms.. I never should've tolerated the rush of feelings that I felt during that time..look at where it lead us.. I don't want to play the blame game..I'm an adult, I should've been able to know what's right from wrong.."

She paused for a bit possibly waiting for me to say something but

I didn't, how could I with the things she just said..

I continue to shed tears..It's getting a bit harder to breathe now

"I apologize for leading you on.. I apologize for hurting you.. I'm going to point out the obvious here..what we did was wrong, on so many levels, we hurt ourselves and we hurt our significant others and I know that now.."

****Pause****

"I just can't..I don't want this anymore.. I can't continue hurting the people I love Jennie.." Lisa said then she let out a sob

I ended up breaking down completely as well..

What have I done? I'm just hurting her..

There's no hope, She's not going to come back to me anymore.. no matter how hard I try.

Even if I force her to be with me it's not going to be the same, she's just going to be miserable with me..her and I will drift farther apart.. and she's going to hate me completely

She's right.. we're just hurting the people that loves us and we're not being fair to them.

I really want to keep fighting but I should've realized this sooner

That I lost the battle even before it started

It's done

It's over.

"Tangelo..stop crying.. okay? tomorrow morning, I'll let you go.."

I said to her even though It took a lot of will power for me to utter those words.

My Mind and My Heart are in conflict but both know that I should do the right thing

"Wh-what did you say?" She asked baffled

"I'll..let you go Lalisa so you can go and set things right with him.." I said to her sincerely this time

"Jennie, I don't know what to say-"

"You don't need to say anything, You said it yourself.. you love him.. I realize now that, all this time I was just fooling myself thinking that I could make you love me again like you did before but I see now that you and I are..we're never going to be..anymore.." I said with my voice cracking

I can feel my heart breaking but I needed to fight it, I need to be strong for myself.

"Tomorrow, I'll leave for New York and you can go back to Seoul and fix things with Him.. It's not too late Tangelo, I saw how much he loves you and I know he's still willing to forgive you, just give him some time and don't force him if he's not ready.."I said as I continue to cry

I turned around to finally face her and and she did the same thing

"Lisa, I don't want you to have any regrets, I don't want you to end up like me.. well, I know you won't end up like me, because you're brave enough to face him even though you know you hurt him, that's very admirable, I wish I had the same mentality as you.. I was so focused on getting more so I can confidently take you back but in the end, I took you for granted and I ended up losing you.."

"I'm so sorry Jennie.. I really didn't want to hurt anybody.." She said weeping

The room has very minimal light but I was still able to make out her pretty face

I'm falling apart and I want to die but I need to face the truth.

She's not mine anymore.

I cupped her cheek with my free hand and looked at her intently.

I'm memorizing her face, taking in her beauty...

I want to take one last look at her before I completely set her free..

"I know Tangelo, You're forgiven. I'm sorry too.. for ruining everything for you, I just.. I'm really sorry.."

"Stop Jen, let's not go there anymore.." She said while giving me a sad smile

"Tangelo? promise me one thing, if you do get him back, don't let him go okay?"

She nodded slowly and said "I won't..I promise"

"Can we..still be friends?" I asked her hesitantly

Pathetic of me and I'm just digging my own grave and I most

likely won't pull through with what I said. I can't be friends with her, but at least this way, I have some kind of assurance and it's less painful in a way.

"Yes, of course Jennie" She answered warmly

"And if your relationship doesn't work out, come find me okay? I'll be waiting" I said jokingly but in reality, I meant it..

I know that I'll never be able to love another person the way that I love her..

She just laughed at what I said and I laughed along with her

I stared at her one last time

Her face, her smile, the sound of her laughter, everything about her..

I'll miss it..

I'll miss it all...

But It's time to let go.

"I'm sorry to do this again to you.." I whispered to her.

I then turned my back against her, sat up and I pressed the panic button that is located underneath the side table.

The guards came in right away

Lisa's face was in full panic and obvious fear was written in her face

"Sedate Her" I said with a cold voice and they followed right away

"Jennie what are you mmpphhh!!!----"

She couldn't finish her sentence because one of the guards covered her nose and mouth with a handkerchief, She's trying to fight them off but they were just too strong for her, then they injected her with a pretty high dosage of Ativan via Intramuscular route to calm her down and eventually put her to sleep

We were going to use the drug on her so we can fly to New York with ease but..

Change of plans.

While she continues to struggle, I set myself free from the handcuffs.

And before she blacks out I said my final farewell to her

I know I could've just said good bye to her like a normal person should but I just can't, If I see her walk away from me, there's a very high chance that I'll change my mind and proceed through my plans of keeping her captive and we're just gonna go back to square one.

"Good bye. I love you Tangelo, I'll Always Love You, Please Be Happy" I said to her sadly before she completely blacks out.

I wiped my tears away and composed myself

"Use the private Jet and fly her back to Seoul, make sure she gets there safe, thank you for your service, rest assured that you guys will be well compensated" I said instructing the trusty guards Jisoo provided for me

I know that they already know what to do, this isn't their first rodeo, so I didn't wait for them to respond, I just took my purse and stormed out of the room, not looking back.

I'm Never Going to Look Back Anymore.

49.) Maheunahop

Title: Happier

Artist: Marshmello ft. Bastille

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

AUTHOR'S NOTE: TIME SKIPS!!!!

6:17 AM

Morning After

Location: Jeju Island International Airport

JENNIE'S POV

JN: Yeoboseyo?

JS: Jendeuki I swear to fucking Moses! I've been trying to call you for almost 48 hours now! What shady thing did you do this time huh?! My Men aren't answering me when I call them!

****Sigh****

JN: Relax Chu, it's over now

JS: Over? what are you talking about?!

JN: Tangelo and I.. we're.. we're done Chu.

I ended up bawling my eyes out again after saying that, I'm so hurt that I feel like I'm really about to lose my life at any given moment..

JS: Jendeuki...

JN: She doesn't love me anymore, Jisoo. I thought I still had a chance with her but she..she loves him.. and I can't.. I don't want to be selfish with her anymore, she has been through so much already and most of it was because of me, I can't do that anymore.. I might just kill her with Sadness if I continue forcing what isn't meant to be

JS: I'm very sorry Jennie..

My cousin said sympathizing with me

That's the last thing I wanted, to be felt sorry for.

I don't want to look pathetic in the eyes of people but I guess being vulnerable and the feeling of loneliness is inevitable in my situation.

I'm most likely going to stay like this for a while..

or maybe for as long as I live.

I admit, letting Tangelo go is probably the biggest mistake that I'll regret for the rest of my life but I know that it's for the best, for her and for myself as well.

JN: Don't be.. it's not your fault, it was all me

JS: So what's your plan now? are you still in Jeju?

JN: Yeah, I'm flying back to Seoul in an hour and then I'm going to head back to New York..

JS: Why don't you come home first Jennie?

JN: I have no place here in Korea anymore Chu

JS: So you're just gonna leave and disappear on us again?

JN: I can't stay here and I don't want to stay here any longer...There's just too many precious memories and I need to let it go now, it's not healthy for me if I keep holding on to Lisa, I've been holding on to her for almost a decade now, it's time to focus on myself.

I can't force her to be with me, I can't be selfish with her anymore..

I really wanted to though..

But I love her so much that I'm willing to sacrifice my own happiness just so she could be happy with him..

I already made her life complicated as it is and She deserves to be happy now, She doesn't need a pain in the ass like myself.

JS: Can't we at least see each other? cancel your flight to New York.

I thought about it for a moment and I figured that it wouldn't hurt hanging out with my cousin, I might not come back to Korea anymore after this trip so might as well.

JN: Ok Chu, but there's something I gotta do first, I'll let you

know when I'm ready to see you

JS: Alright, don' leave me hanging Jendeuk. See you in a bit. bye.

JN: I won't. see you later. bye.

I ended the phone call.

I decided to show myself first to Jackson, him and I need to have a little talk about us, this isn't going to be easy but I don't want to be unfair to him, he doesn't deserve a liar like me.

:

:

10:43 AM

I received a message from one of Jisoo's Men that Tangelo have arrived in Seoul an hour early, I had texted Sana about it, of course she's upset and cursed me out but it doesn't matter, just as long as I know that My love is in safe hands.

I'm in front of my suite right now.

When I opened the door, I saw Jackson just sitting down on the couch, When He heard the door being opened and saw me, he stood up quickly and ran towards my direction.

He gave me a really tight hug but he didn't say anything, I reciprocated the gesture and I wrapped my arms around his waist.

We stayed like this for a while. I wanted to cry but I needed to hold it in because If I cry now, I might not be able to tell him what he needs to know

Yesterday, I Let Tangelo Go

And now..

I'm Letting You Go

"Bao, what happened to you? talk to me" He asked worriedly as he broke off our hug

"Jackson, there's no easy way to say this but.. I'm breaking up with you" I said looking straight into his eyes

To say that he was shocked is an understatement

He moved away from me hesitantly, I continued to look at him waiting for a response

"But...Why?"

I inhaled sharply to get a little grip, it's going to be hard for me to say the things that I'm about to tell him but its' just going to be harder for him and unfair if I keep him in the dark of my past,

especially my history with Tangelo

"Jackson, I've been keeping a huge secret from you for the longest time now, but I feel like this is something you should know"

"Does this have something to do with you disappearing on me?"

I nodded in response and decided to just power through with my confession(s)

"Yes. Jackson, I'm married, for about 9 years now"

"What..did you just say?"

"I'm married, to my High School Sweet Heart, We've crossed paths again after 8 years, She's the main architect for Third Night Constructions"

"The Main Architect? You mean.. Kim, Lalisa?" He calrified sounding surprised.

Jackson knows about the people involved in the Jeju project since he's part of Gold Constructions and His Father's Company is the Land Developer for Park-Hyatt so it's not shocking that he knows the Main Architect's name.

"Yes. Kim, Lalisa. Jackson, the reason why my parents forcefully brought me to New York against my will was because they didn't approve of my relationship with her.."

"You're breaking up with me because you got back together with her is that it?"

"No. Her and I aren't together Jackson, I let her go"

"If you let her go then why do you want to break up?"

"I cheated on you Jackson"

His eyes widen in shock but I continued to speak.

"I cheated on you with Lalisa, when we were stuck in Jeju Island during the storm, we got to talking about what happened the past 8

years that we're apart and then one thing lead to another, next thing I know we were kissing and we ended up making love"

There was an awkward air of silence between us, I can see Jackson clenching his fists, he looked away, trying his best not to blow up in my face.

After a few moments, he finally looked at me again and spoke up "Was it just that one time in Jeju?" He asked with a bitter tone I shook my head slowly while giving him an apologetic look "No..we came to an agreement to have an affair but we both decided to end it yesterday"

"Jennie, if you tell me right now that you're not going to do it again and you're willing to forget about her then I'll pretend that all the things that you just said never happened and we'll start over" He said which is not what I was expecting

I was anticipating that he'll walk out on me and book the earliest flight back to New York but he didn't..

Jackson is too good to be true, he's too good for me

"No.. I can't do it Jackson.. You don't deserve someone like me"

He approached me and grabbed both of my arms but not to a point where he's actually hurting me but that doesn't change the fact that I was a bit frightened by his action.

"Don't tell me what I do and don't deserve! I love you Jennie! I can't give you up! I'm willing to forgive you! just please.. don't do this"

I broke away from his hold harshly and gave him an angry look

"Ugh! what don't you understand Jackson?! I lied to you! I cheated on you! and I don't want to be with you anymore! Just leave!!" I said as tears started streaming down my face

"Don't you love me anymore?!"

"I do, okay?! I do! but it's not the same love that you feel for me! you want me to be honest with you?! I love her! I'm still crazy in love with my wife! but I had to let her go because I can't be selfish

with her anymore! and I don't want to be selfish with you either Jackson! You're so special to me, you saved my life and it hurts me so much that I had to be the one to betray you in the worst way possible! I didn't even think twice about starting an affair with her.. so please, just.. hate me! it'll be easier that way!" I said sobbing, covering my face with my hands because I can't look at him anymore.

"FUCK THIS!" Jackson yelled causing me to startle and look at him

He took his belongings and walked out of my suite, stomping his feet and then he slammed my door shut.

I went and sat down on my couch as I cry in agony, pain, sorrow and guilt.

"Jackson, Forgive me" I whispered as I continue to weep

I do love Jackson, He's my best guy friend but I wasn't really good to him.

He was honest to me, he only wanted what's best for me and I had the audacity to deceive him.

I should've just been honest with him from the very beginning.

I was trying so hard to runaway from my past and now, it caught up to me, biting me in the ass

It's for the best, for both Tangelo and Jackson--they deserve to be happy and I'm not the one who can give it to them

I'm just going to cry about it for a while and then let it all go.

I'll give myself time so I can mend my broken heart. I'm not going to let myself be swallowed in a dark hole again

I won't let this ruin me.

I'm stronger than I was before

This will pass..

The hurt..

The heart break..

The hate..

It will all pass.

I don't know how long, but it will.

I'm keeping my faith and just going to focus on myself and the people who love me.

*****Sigh*****

I guess I'm just going to stay single forever and just be the best and coolest auntie.

LISA'S POV

It's been 2 weeks since that incident happened in Jeju Island. Sana made me take a break for a whole week just because she saw how mentally and emotionally exhausted I was.

I told her everything that's happened, Of course she wasn't very pleased but Sana being Sana, did her best to understand the situation.

She said she already anticipated the mess the minute she realized Jennie left.

Jung-kook hasn't been going to work and from the looks of it, I don't think he'll come back.

Ever.

I tried reaching out to him a lot of times but he wouldn't answer to my calls, I even went to his apartment to see him in person but he refused to see me, I can't really blame him though, I would do the same thing if I was put in his situation.

The things that I did to him are unforgivable. I'm not really expecting him to take me back, I just really wanted to apologize for everything that I did to him.

I owe him a lot, all he was asking for was my love and loyalty but I couldn't even give it to him.

I heard from Sana that Jennie went back to New York the same day that Her and I decided to end it altogether.

Word is going around that Wang Corp. wants to pull out of the project because they were having issues with Gold Constructions but I highly doubt that they're going to cancel because the contract was already signed and Rosé's company is not to be messed with.

So For now, it's back to reality for me, Third Night is still continuing with the project together with Gold Constructions and Wang Corp. but it's all just professional relationship.

Sana is the only one communicating with both companies while I work behind the scenes, She was able to find a replacement for Jung-kook in a short amount of time and guess who it is?

It's her cousin that visited us from years ago, Mina Myoi.

Sana did the right choice by recruiting Mina, she is very confident with her cousin's abilities because she has a lot of hands on experience.

Mina is also the owner of a successful engineering firm in Japan together with her husband Jun, Matsumoto.

I gotta give it to my best-friend, she might seem in over her head most of the time but she pulls through, She knows what she's doing, It's no wonder she became a CEO.

:

:

7 MONTHS LATER

We're halfway done with the Jeju project. For the past 7 months I just kept myself busy with work, I drink occasionally with Sana and our other friends but most of the time, I stay at home, binge watching whatever's interesting on Netflix with a glass of wine and cheeseboard all set up.

I let my hair grow long and dyed it black. Usually, girls would cut their hair if they want a change but since it's winter time, I just decided to color it instead of cutting it short.

I also got me a cat 5 months ago, His name is Louis, My Fat

Child.

He keeps me company and cheers me up, even though he can be really foolish sometimes, I love him.

He's the love of my life right now, he's my emotional support animal and He's very low maintenance. All I need to do is feed him, pet him once in a while and he's good.

No Arguments, No Drama..

No Kisses, No Sex.

A voice inside my head whispered out of nowhere.

I groaned in frustration

"Ugghhh!! I'm so pathetic."

Leave it alone Lisa, you're doing good, 7 months of dry spell isn't that bad.

****Sigh****

I focused my attention back on the television.

Louis is sitting on my lap, he's sleeping while I pet him.

I switched from My Netflix account to My Disney Plus account and decided to start the second season of *'The Mandalorian'*

The first episode was about to play when my phone suddenly rang, it startled me a little bit which caused Louis to jump off of my lap.

He's a very dramatic Kitten/Cat.

Whatever.

He's big.

My heart stopped beating for a second when I checked to see who was calling me.

It's Jung-kook

Him and I haven't spoken ever since that day in Jeju Island.

The first 3 months after the incident, I was practically begging for him to talk to me but then I remembered what Jennie had told me:

"Don't force him and just let him be, he needs time to heal "

And the least I could do for him is to be patient and understand him.

I eventually answered the phone even though I don't really know how our conversation is gonna go.

LS: Yeoboseyo?

I said calmly

He didn't speak right away, but I heard him breathing nervously

JK: Lalisa, it's me, Jung-kook

LS: Hey, I know. How have you been?

JK: I'm..doing better Lisa. Yourself?

LS: I'm alright..just living my life day by day

I answered. It wasn't a complete lie, but it's not the complete truth either

JK: That's good, Listen Lisa, I don't want to beat around the bush, I called to see if you want to get together? I'll meet up with you any time and any place.

LS: Jung-kook.. I--

JK: This past 7 months have been tough for me, I know it has been for you as well, I'm ready now Lisa, but I understand if you don't want to--

LS: No! No.. I'm ready, Yeah, let's meet up.

JK: I'm glad. Ok. Text me the details, I hope to see you soon

LS: I will, take care and yeah.. see you soon. bye.

I said then I hung up the phone.

My heart is beating uncontrollably, hearing his voice again made me happy and sad at the same time, I'm not expecting for us to be in a relationship again, I don't even know myself if I want to be with the person whom I hurt and disrespected.

All I really want right now is his forgiveness and I guess we'll just go from there.

I texted Jung-kook the time and place where we can meet up, it's my day off tomorrow and then work the next day which is a perfect set up, this way, if I end up crying again at least I'll get distracted and completely focus on work.

:

:

THE NEXT DAY

I'm on my way to see Jung-kook, I decided to meet up with him at this quaint little café, it's walking distance from my condo unit, he knows this place since him and I used to go here all the time,

which, come to think of it-- was probably a bad idea.

I hope it doesn't spark up any bitter memories on his part.

He texted me about 2 minutes ago that he's already there, waiting.

I reached the café and went inside and saw him at the corner having a coffee and a croissant.

I approached him slowly and then I greeted him

"Hi" I said

He looked at me and gave me that familiar warm, comforting smile.

He stood up and gave me a bear hug which I reciprocated gladly.

"Hello" He whispered then he pulled away

He went to the other side of the table to pull up my chair for me then he motioned for me to sit down then he went on his side to do the same.

"I ordered you a hot chocolate with mini marshmallows, I know how much you love those" He said breaking the ice

"Oh, that's so sweet of you, you still remember, thank you"

"How could I not remember? besides water, chocolate milk is the only other thing you drink"

"Ahh. I've changed now, I've added red wine on my list" I said proudly which made him laugh

"Adulthood is hard isn't it?" he said and I nodded

The waitress came and served me my drink, I said thank you and then she left.

I turned my attention back to Jung-kook

"So, How are things going with you?" I asked taking a sip of my drink

"Things are okay, all I did was travel here and there"

"That's nice, where did you go?"

"Parts of Southeast Asia. Malaysia, Philippines, Vietnam,

Indonesia, my final stop was..Thailand"

I kind of sensed that he didn't feel comfortable when he said the last place that he visited, and it's obvious why that is.

"Oh.. that's..cool" was all I could say in response then I looked away

"What about you? Anything New with you?"

I shrugged and then I answered him

"Besides wine, I also adopted a kitten about 5 months ago, other than that, work is what mostly takes up all my time"

"Ahhh.. so, you're not in a relationship?" He asked bluntly

"No. I'm not" I answered right away

There was an awkward silence and I can feel tension is building up but I soldiered through, I can't be a coward and run away from this, he needs to know how sorry I am for hurting him.

"What about you? anyone special?" I asked, I'm ready for whatever answer he'll give me

"No, no one new, it's still you, Lalisa"

OK, nevermind.

I definitely wasn't ready for that one.

"Jung-kook.. I--"

"Lisa, I've been thinking about us, I tried forgetting about you, I dated around, slept with other women but they're nothing compared to you"

I shook my Head 'No' because what he said came out of nowhere and it's not making any sense to me.

"This isn't how it's supposed to be, you should hate me for what I've done to you

I am very confused.

What is going on?

He chuckled and shook his head.

"Trust me, I did, I hated you to my very core but my love for you outweighed everything that's happened, I feel really pathetic you know that? and I feel sorry for myself"

"Jungkook.. I'm sor--"

"I even tried getting into a relationship about 2 months ago but it

didn't work out, my heart still belongs to you" he said sincerely then he took my hands and held it

"I love you, Lalisa"

I don't know what to say to him, I don't deserve him, he's too good for me, I'm not worthy of his love.

"You don't have to say anything right now, I know it's too much but please try to reconsider"

"Jung-kook, No, I'm a selfish cheating liar. You deserve someone better"

"I already looked passed that--"

"Not me! No. I can't, I don't deserve your love"

"Don't say that. Yes you've made a mistake but you're only a human. Nobody's perfect Lalisa, you gave in to temptation and it blurred out your better judgement but I know in my heart that you never wanted to hurt anyone, Am I right?"

Tears started streaming down my face, I'm pathetically sobbing in front of him. Good thing there's very few people here and we're all seated far apart from each other or else they might take that he's emotionally torturing me.

"I'm so sorry Jung-kook, I'm sorry for everything that I did to you, you didn't deserve all of the hurt and my betrayal. I was weak, I caved in and succumb to lust, there's no one else to blame but me"

Just Me.

Him and Jennie were my victims.

I played them both.

He didn't say anything, he just wiped my tears away and smiled. I could tell that he's near to his breaking point but he's doing his best to get it together.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry..I'm so sorry"

Those are the only words that I can come up with while I look down still crying

"Lisa, please look at me" He pleaded

I did what he asked and all I could see was warmth and love in his eyes

"I forgive you, let's start over, okay?"

I smiled at him and nodded

"Okay, I would love that"

JENNIE'S POV

Manhattan, New York

"Jih! how are the designs for the hotel interior coming along with the Jeju project?" I asked my friend over the phone while I send emails back and forth to our other clients for our other upcoming projects

Gold constructions is fully booked for the next 3 years, I've been busy growing my company and I haven't stopped since I came back from South Korea 7 months ago.

I was waiting for my friend to answer me but she didn't, instead, she came barging into my office like she owns the place.

"Very Good Ms. Park, My cousin really love the designs!"

"Your cousin? who are you talking about?" I asked furrowing my eyebrows

"Rosé Park of course" She answered proudly

"Idiot, just because you guys have the same last name doesn't make you her cousin, that's not how it works"

"I know you dumb ass, I was kidding, anyways another client is requesting for us, they want a Hotel Casino and Resort to be built Near Napa Valley in California"

"Napa huh? Fancy. Must be some rich white folks. How much are

they offering us?"

"About \$10 million first pay and \$15 million more when the project is completed, they're requesting if we could start by the end of this year and complete it within a year and a half, they want our answer before the days ends"

"Demanding. Must be billionaires. What do you think? can we handle another one? I mean we're fully booked already"

"We can, I'm hiring more people as we speak and I'm trying to recruit more from other countries as well for a contractual job, with the money that we're offering? I'm sure a lot of competent young professionals won't be able to resist, they can do more for way less pay because they need experience but with proper guidance from our experienced workers? we can't lose"

"Damn, you sounded like a money-hungry boss there, we're not that evil are we?"

"Did I? but whatever, business is business, it's a win-win for them too, we offer them good benefits, housing and \$110,000 annual salary, that's \$10,000 more than others"

"You're a good boss Jih"

"Thanks, I try"

I was expecting her to leave my office after the conversation of the new possible project but she didn't, she just stood awkwardly in front of me, I tried to ignore her and focused on my work instead but I couldn't, She's bugging the crap out of me

"What do you want? why did you really come in my office you weirdo?" I asked still looking at my computer screen

"Jen. Your Parents, They're here in New York. They want to see you"

I glared at her

"No" I said void of emotion

"Jen, maybe it's time for you to talk to them, you've already let go of your past anyway so why not this one too?"

"No Jihyo, I told you before I hate them. I'm never going to forgive them for ruining my life"

"Jennie--"

"Leave. Get out of my office, Jihyo"

She exhaled sharply and shook her head looking disappointed

"Ok, but if you change your mind here's their contact number"
She said as she put a sticky note on my office phone

I looked away from her again and this time, I'm determined to just focus on what I'm doing

"I love you, Jennie. I know you'll do the right thing. Let's have dinner later, my treat"

"Fine.Iloveyoutoo" I mumbled, puffing out my cheeks

And with that, she finally left me alone.

Hajoon and Ji-Eun Kim A.K.A My so called Parents have been trying to meet up with me ever since they found out about me setting foot back in South Korea.

They have been emailing and calling me, but I dodged them every time.

They weren't able to come close to me because I filed a restraining order against them, and if they try to violate it, they're going to be in big trouble.

I was gonna make sure to make it a big deal and ruin them.

But as expected, they didn't do shit, they stepped back and let me have my Peace.

I looked at the number that Jihyo stuck on my phone
A tear fell from my left eye but I quickly wiped it away.
I can't let my emotions get to me, I've moved on.

After the Jeju Project, I'm never going to get involved with any business in South Korea anymore.

I'm done.

Jackson left Gold Constructions and joined his Family's company instead.

Wang Corp. and I came to a mutual agreement that after the Jeju Project, we won't be affiliated with each other anymore.

His Parents were upset, they thought I was ungrateful and shameless.

They're not lying though, I betrayed their son and lied to him about me being married.

It hurts that we're practically strangers again since I saw them as my family but it is what it is.

Him and I haven't really seen or talked to each other since our confrontation back in Seoul. I heard from Jihyo that he's seeing another girl now which is good, I'm genuinely happy for him.

I'm hoping this one would be the last woman in his life. I'll support him even though he doesn't want me in his life anymore.

My mind went back to Tangelo once again.

I miss her so much..

I miss her everyday.

I have these dark thoughts at the back of my mind telling me that I should've just pushed through the kidnapping, but the rational part of me wins every time.

I couldn't stand the thought of Tangelo hating me if I deny her her freedom.

I've accepted the fact that if she can't be happy with me then I'll let her be happy with someone else.

That's how much I love my baby.

My heart aches every time I think about the last time I saw her pretty face.

She's all I've ever wanted in my life and Nobody will ever come close to her and that's a proven fact

*My Love, I hope you're doing alright.
I'm going to cheer you on with your future endeavors*

I love you so much, Tangelo.

1 YEAR LATER

LISA'S POV

The Hotel Project finally came to an end about a month ago and Rosé was really happy with the outcome.

Sana and Jung-kook are in Jeju Island for the Grand Opening while I decided to stay here in Seoul to watch my shows on Netflix, Amazon Prime, Hulu and Disney Plus etc.

Yep, I'm officially a grandma and this is my life now.. Binge watching shows until I fall asleep with Louis on my lap.

Jung-kook and I didn't exactly get back together after our talk about a year ago.

He did propose to me and he said he wanted to marry me but I refused.

First of all, I'm not exactly divorced yet..

That's it really, I don't want to marry him because I'm not legally separated from my wife yet and I'm still using her last name.

Jennie and I need to be divorced first in order for us to move on completely

I haven't really gotten the time to think about it until now, but since the Hotel Project is over, maybe I could start the process and go through with it-with or without Jennie.

I need to find a way to not actually interact with her anymore though or else it might just lead to something unexpected again..

Geez, one headache after another, when is it gonna end?

I took a deep breath to relax myself

Thinking about Jennie makes my heart beat really fast but not out of fear, anxiety or any other negative feelings--More on Yearning

So basically, everyday I have tachycardia because of her, I wouldn't be surprised if I get a heart attack soon.

I miss Jennie so much..My Heart wants her and It's calling for her but we both already decided that it's for the best that her and I shouldn't be involved with each other anymore.

:

:

2 WEEKS LATER.

Sana helped me find a Divorce Lawyer, His name is Atty. Jao, Shin.

He explained what needs to be done and he said that it's possible for me to not actually be face to face with Jennie when signing the papers, all he has to do is send it her via snail mail or email and have her sign it.

Fortunately, Sana has direct contact with Jennie.

Atty. Jao asked me if I wanted him to talk to my soon to be ex wife instead but I told him that I needed to handle that part on my own.

:

I sat down in my office and decided to email Jennie and let her know about my plans of divorcing her.

I was gonna start typing her email address but my fingers are shaking and my body is some-what trembling.

It's like something is actually stopping me from doing this.

It's probably just nerves

I need to do this

This is for our own good.

I typed in her email address, It's 1:30 in the afternoon here in Seoul which means it's 11:30 at night over in New York

It's a bit late for me to email her but I need to do it now before I change my mind

To: JanePark41@goldconstructions.org

From: KimLalisa27@3nightbuilders.net

Good Evening Ms. Jane Park,

It's Lalisa, I hope everything is good with you. I apologize for being straight forward but I wanted to let you know about my intentions of being legally separated from you.

I'm sending over a PDF file which contains the documents needed to be signed.

I already marked an 'X' on each of the documents because I know how busy you are.

Thank you and have a good night.

Sending her that email was really hard, I was thinking twice about it.

I was even questioning myself If I really do want to nullify our marriage but my index finger automatically pressed 'Enter' out of reflex, I kind of felt a bit of regret but I just need to stand by my decision now.

I wasn't really expecting a reply from her right away but when I refreshed my screen two minutes later, I saw an unread message.

It's from Jennie

Wow that was quick. She must be really eager to divorce me

That thought hurt me and it irritated me to no end for some reason.

Get a grip Lisa, You're an adult, this isn't the time to be childish.

I opened the email that she sent me.

From: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

Dear Lalisa,

NO. I REFUSE TO SIGN IT.

Enjoy your Day.

XO-JP

SHE WHAT??! REFUSE?! WHAT'S THE MEANING OF THIS??!

To: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

From: KimLalisa27@3nightbuilders.net

Miss Park, I don't understand, What Do You Mean by You Refuse?

What the Hell is she trying to pull here?!

From: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

Miss Lalisa, The message was Loud and Clear but let me make it

a little more simple for you since it slipped my mind that you have a tiny brain.

I refuse meaning I don't want to get a Divorce.

It's not Happening.

Please don't email me about this anymore, You said it yourself, I'm a very busy woman and I do not have time with your nonsense.

I couldn't believe what I'm reading right now! Is she being serious?!

To: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

From: KimLalisa27@3nightbuilders.net

Miss Jane Park, If you don't want me to take this thing to court and actually SUE YOUR ASS then you better SIGN THE GODDAMN PAPERS!

Damn it Jennie! I'm not playing with you!

She's making me really mad right now, She's taking this as a joke!

From: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

Miss Lalisa, who's playing with you? and don't ever threaten me about taking this to court, YOU of all people should know better.

I can easily get out of it but what happens if I counter sue you?

Will You Be Able To Save Yourself? No one, Not Even Sana or The Rest of The Minatozaki Clan Can Save You.

Keep that in mind or Tattoo it on your big-ass forehead so you won't forget.

Idiot.

And Once Again,

WE. ARE. NOT. GETTING. A. DIVORCE.

P.S. nice email address by the way, too bad I'm not a Kim anymore.

Oh well.

XO- JP

I stared at my computer screen and re-read the her latest message. I read it over and over, hoping that I understood it wrong, I even scrolled all the way down to see if she put "Just Kidding" at the end of her email but I found nothing!

Her last reply did it for me.

I ended up crying out of frustration.

I don't understand why she's being like this!

I decided to email her again, If I need to beg her just so our divorce could happen then I will

To: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

From: KimLalisa27@3nightbuilders.net
Jennie, Please. We need a fresh start, this has been going on for so long.
Sign the papers, You know it's the right thing to do.
Please Jennie.
I Beg You.

I sent the message and not even a minute later, she replied

From: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org
Spend 2 weeks with me here in New York and I might just change my mind and sign the Divorce Papers.
Email me back as soon as you make a decision and I'll arrange everything for you
I'll sleep now, I hope to see you soon.
Good Night, Mrs. Kim
XO-JP

What Am I going to do?

I banged my "big ass" forehead down on my office table gently over and over

"Fuck.Fuck.Fuck! I can't win with her" I whispered to myself

Then, I heard someone knock on my door

"Come in" I said almost grumbling with my forehead still on the table.

"Hey Lisa-chan want to grab some dinner with-uhh.. what are you doing you freak?" Sana asked then she laughed

I looked at her and decided to tell her about Jennie and I's email conversation.

"Sana-chan, I emailed Jennie"

"Yeah? And?" She asked crossing her arms while arching an eyebrow

"Look at her replies!" I said still irritated about the whole thing

"Ok! Quit being over dramatic and move!" She said, I moved

away from my desk to give her some space

She read the emails and when she's done, She chuckled and shook her head, like she's actually amused.

"Typical Kim" She blurted out

"Right?! I can't with her! What does she want from me?!" I said running a hand through my hair while I pace back and forth my office

"***smirk* **I know what she wants"

"What? Torture me for last time?" I said facing her

"Haha! Quite the opposite actually, I think she wants to Hit it one last time Lisa-chan" Sana said giggling

"Don't be ridiculous, Jennie is just a sadistic moron! she wants to make me suffer just for the hell of it. She's the devil I tell you"

"Trust me on this Lisa-chan, she wants Sex, Her and I may not get along with other things but I know how her brain works, Her and I aren't that different" She said confidently

"So what Am I going to do?"

She shrugged then she approached me putting her hands on my shoulders

"You know what to do, You know how she is too, she might have matured in most aspects of her life but when it comes to you, she WANTS and she WILL act like a little baby, you know how to handle her better than anyone, maybe just grant her this request, it might be the closure you guys desperately need"

I closed my eyes, took a deep breath and I nodded. Sana's right about Jennie being a big baby, she gets immature and unreasonable when she deals with me to get her way because she knows I won't be able to resist her.

"Alright, I'll email her, is it okay if I go for Two Weeks?" I asked Sana, she's still my boss after all.

"Yes, of course. Be careful and I Hope You Guys will be able to work out your differences" Sana said smiling while cupping my cheek

"Thank You Sana."

"Let's go get some dinner Lisa, Tzuyu and I are starving, you know how that giant is when she's hungry"

I laughed softly and said "Ok, you go ahead, let me just shoot Jennie another email"

Sana nodded then she walked out of my office, closing my door.

To: JanePark41@goldconstuctions.org

From: KimLalisa27@3nightbuilders.net

Ok Jennie, You Win. I'll Start Packing My Things tonight and I'll fly tomorrow evening Korean Time.

I sent her the email then I shut down my computer.

I'm not sure where this is going to lead us but I'll just leave it all up to Fate.

JENNIE'S POV

La Guardia International Airport Queens, New York

Tangelo will be arriving today from Korea, her flight landed about 15 minutes ago, I'm waiting for her at the baggage claim, she texted me that she's on her way and I can't wait.

I'm excited to see her again, I don't know what came over me when I asked her to come see me here in New York and to be honest, I really didn't think that she'd say yes.

My Heart is pounding and I'm a bit anxious but just the thought of seeing her again makes me feel really happy.

My phone started ringing and saw Tangelo's number flash on my screen. I answered right away

JN: Hello? Are You Here?

LS: Yeah, Where Are You?

JN: Baggage claim, wave your hand for me

I told her as I crane my neck looking around the area.

I noticed a tall woman with long black hair waving her hand, she looks and feels familiar even though her back is turned against me, she has the same height and stance as Tangelo

That couldn't be her I thought so I ignored the strange girl.

JN: Tangelo, are you waving your hand?

LS: Yes I am, can you not see me?

JN: No. what are you wearing anyway?

LS: Black Hoodie, Black Leggings and Black Boots

JN: Ugh! Why are you all dressed up in black you idiot! Why can't you wear your favorite color instead? You know it's hard to find people here at the airport!

LS: Hey! It's not my fault you're short and there's no dress code at the airport ok? Wait. hold on, I think I see you, are you wearing a white coat with a black beanie?

JN: Yes I am, Where are-

I turned around and I saw the strange girl approaching me, I squinted my eyes and realized that it's Tangelo

I was staring so hard I didn't realize she was already in front of me

"Yo, you ok there?" She said snapping her fingers in front of me

I blinked for a few seconds then I snapped back to reality. I looked at her and she's giving me a worried look

"Ta-Tangelo?"

"Yes..?"

I reached out my hand to cup her left cheek slowly, I could tell that she was going to avoid my touch but in the end, she let me do it

"You..you dyed your hair" I said admiring her

"Uhm..Yes I did..how does it look?" She asked shyly

"Beautiful, it suits you" I answered. I already know I have heart eyes right now.

We stared at each other longingly, I thought it was going to be

awkward at first but right now, I feel comfortable, too comfortable.

"And You're Gorgeous.." Tangelo said almost whispering which made my face heat up

Tangelo's eyes widen like she wasn't supposed to say it out loud so she started babbling, she does this when she gets nervous

"I uhh!! Uhm.. Le-let me just get my luggage Jen.. I'll be ra-right back, I..I think my carousel is over there" She then said sounding panicked

I smirked internally.

Glad to know I can still affect her.

Good Job, Jennie.

I giggled and nodded then I let go of her cheek

She went to her carousel like she was almost trying to runaway which caused her to almost trip.

I shook my head and laughed

Different Hair Style and Color But She's Still The Same Idiot.

I Love Her.

:

:

"Are we going to my hotel now?" she asked which made me chuckle

Tangelo and I are now driving to my condo unit, I *WAS* going to book a hotel suite for her but I decided that she's just going to stay with me instead.

2 weeks is a short time and I don't want to waste even a split second of it of being away from her.

"What? What's so funny?" She asked

I looked at her grinning

"Did you really think I'll let you stay in a Hotel? Get over yourself" I said cockily then I focused back on my driving

"Oh..Where am I staying then? Airbnb?"

Sigh..

My Little Duckie, She's too pure and innocent.

Fine. I'll play along.

"Yeah, Airbnb, let's go with that" I answered

The drive was tensed and silent, on her part at least. She's squirming on her seat right now, she's still nervous so I made a bold move and I reached out for her left hand and laced it my right hand.

"He-hey!" Tangelo said, she was about to unlace her hand but I tightened my hold

"Oowwww..." she whined but I didn't let go

We've come to a halt because the stop light is on red

"Just let it happen Tangelo, quit being a prude, it's not like we're about to have sex on your first day here, not unless.. you want to?" I said then I looked at her again while biting my lower lip.

I'm just smiling to myself getting lost with the happy feeling while I rub my thumb with hers.

"Jennie you horny pervert! The light already turned green you moron! Just focus on your driving!" She said yelling

I just laughed at her, she's so cute I swear.

:

20 minutes later, we've finally reached my condo unit

"Wow.. this is a nice Airbnb, thank you Jennie" she said admiring my home

"Thanks Tangelo, I really put a lot of work into my condo, glad you like it" I said proudly

"Wait. So this is your place?!"

"Uh-huh. Welcome, Tangelo"

"Jennie! What the hell were you thinking?! I can't stay here!"

"And why is that?"

"Be-because! You're my Ex and I-"

"Ex? Not quite baby, I haven't signed the divorce papers yet so technically, we're still married, I'm still your wife and you're still Mrs. Kim"

"You tricked me!"

I arched an eyebrow with my smirk permanently plastered on my face

"Whoops, Did I? My bad"

"I'm Leaving!" She says taking her stuff and about to walk out the door

"Leave and You'll never get what you came here for in the first place" I said smugly crossing my arms

Her shoulders slumped down then she looked at me and glared

"Fine, you win again, you evil chubby cheek jerk"

"And don't you forget it! Now, let's get your stuff into your room"

"Whew! What a relief! I thought for sure you were gonna have me room in with you" She said nervously laughing

"Ha! Such a conceited duckling. Don't flatter yourself. Tiny body, huge ego" I sassed then I lead her to her room

:

:

The Next Day

I woke up earlier today than usual, I decided to make some breakfast for Tangelo before I leave for work, she's probably still sleeping due to Jet-Lag and by the time she's up, I'm already at work and she might starve.

I went to my bathroom to wash my face and brush my teeth, when I got out of my room, I saw her in the living room watching some show on television

She has her hair up and she's wearing a loose yellow shirt with jersey shorts

I smiled at the sight of her

Adorable.

She was too immersed on watching whatever it is on TV that she didn't even notice my presence so I greeted her

"Hey, Good Morning, did you even sleep?" I asked worriedly

"Oh! Uh.. Hi, good morning.. uhm I slept for about 4 hours I think? but I woke up around 4 A.M. and I couldn't go back to sleep, I hope you don't mind if I use your Streaming accounts" She said

"Knock yourself out, I have everything even the Korean ones" I said smiling at her

"Thank You, Jennie"

"You're welcome, are you hungry Tangelo? Do you want bacon and eggs?"

"Yes please! And can you make me some of your pancakes too?" She asked lacing her hands together then she pouts

"D'awww, of course, I can do that, wait here okay?" I said then I approached her scratching underneath her chin

I wanted to give her a kiss but decided against it, I don't want her to be awkward when she's just starting to warm up to me again.

:

While eating breakfast, I let Lisa know about my schedule just so she'll have an idea, I don't want her to think that I only made her come here just for her to be stuck in my condo.

"Tangelo, are you gonna be okay here by yourself? I'm gonna take a leave at work in two days, I just gotta close a couple of contracts then I'm all yours"

"Yeah, It's cool, don't worry about me, as long as you don't cut off your subscriptions to your streaming accounts then I'm good, by the way, can I have your Wi-Fi username and password?"

"Sure thing, My username is JGold and My Password is tangelo327, no caps, just small letters" I said nonchalantly

She chuckled at what I said

"Pffft, That's a weak password, no caps lock or any symbols whatsoever"

"I know, just like the person who I got it from"

She glared at me then she rolled her eyes

"Whatever, anyways I'll facetime Louis later, I miss him" She said out of the blue which made me pause from eating

She has a new boyfriend?!

Who is this Louis Person?!

I'm gonna end him!

"Who..who's Louis, Tangelo?" I asked with a shaky voice while clenching my fists

"Oh! Forgot to tell you, Louis is My-"

"Your boyfriend?! I set you free to be with Jung-kook and then I find out that you have a new boyfriend?! Are you fucking kidding me right now?!" I said standing up from my chair while I slam my hands on the table

I'm so angry!

How could she do this to me?!

She said she loves Jung-kook that's why I let her go and now there's a new guy in the picture?!!

Ok, Now I'm Definitely Not Signing those Divorce Papers!

"Jennie calm down. It's not what you think, relax" She said calmly, she was about to touch my hand but I dodged it

"Then who is he huh?! Who?!"

She just laughed lightly while shaking her head

I want to slap her so bad!

She's making a fool out of me!

"Jennie, Louis is My Cat. I adopted him more than a year ago, see? He's staying with Sana while I'm away" She said showing me a

picture of the cat on her phone

I feel myself blushing hard, I'm so embarrassed and I don't know how to get out of it

"Pffft, you should've seen how you acted, next time don't jump to conclusions okay? Now sit down and let's eat"

I crossed my arms and puffed out my cheeks then I sat down on my chair looking away from her

"Then why didn't you just say you need to call your pet cat instead of saying its name? You have a very fat cat by the way" I grumbled

She giggled and nodded in agreement "Yeah he's pretty big and You're right Jennie, I'm sorry okay? There's no need for you to freak out"

"Whatever.. anyways, I'm just gonna have food delivered for you, Not unless you want to go out? There's a lot of restaurants and food trucks downstairs"

"Food delivery please, I don't feel like going out right now, I'm a bit tired and I just want to lay on the couch"

"Ok. Sure, any preference?"

"Anything Korean, Japanese or Thai, or American or all of the above" She answered happily

"Geez, what a fat-ass. Fine, I'll get all of that for you"

"Thank You Jennie-ya, I want to feel like a princess today"

I scoffed at her

"You're far from being a princess, You're a toad, Tangelo"

"Hey! And you're a jerk!"

:

:

2 DAYS LATER

8 AM

"So, Tangelo. Where do you want to go? My 12 days off starts today" I said sitting down next to her on the couch

"Uhm.. don't be mad but, I kind of want to see your workplace"

"What? Are you serious?"

"Well, Yeah.. I've been curious of what your building looks like so.."

I pursed my lips and nodded

"Ok, Fine. Let's go get ready. Where do you want to go after?"

"Time Square and Brooklyn Bridge! And oooh can we eat at Katz Deli? I see it all the time on instagram and I want to know what the fuss is about"

"Sure. Katz is not that good though, it's a tourist trap but I'll let you experience it for yourself, now get your lazy ass up and let's go"

I stood up and she held out her hand, signaling me to pull her up while she pouted.

I rolled my eyes at her and did what she wanted

I pulled her up a little too hard that she ended up being too close, our faces are now inches away from each other

She stared at me, but not just an ordinary stare, it's a seductive stare, then her eyes flickered down to my lips, she ended up biting her bottom lip.

I gave her the same look while I lick my lower lip slowly and stuck out my tongue a little bit

She started to lean in closer but I closed the gap.

We moaned as soon as our lips made contact, she held onto my waist then her hands travelled south to my butt cheeks, she's rubbing and squeezing on it at the same time while I wrap my arms around her neck pulling her closer to me

She swiped her tongue on my lower lip, I got the message and I opened my mouth for her, she stuck her tongue inside and swirled it around licking and battling my own tongue for dominance.

I'm running out of breath, I can tell that she's the same but she's not pulling away, I pushed her gently away from me so I can get

some air but Lisa just moved her lips to my neck and started sucking on it

My eyes rolled back in pleasure, I'm getting so aroused that I can feel myself dripping

"Aaahhh..Lalisa.."

I moaned while I grind my body against her, I wanted to tell her to fuck me already when all of a sudden, there's a really loud knock on my door which made us both jump away from each other.

I cleared my throat while she looks around--scratching her nape, whistling.

"I Uh- I'm gonna answer the door, you go ahead and take a shower okay?" I said and she nodded her head fast running towards her room

"Shit" I whispered to myself while I put my index and middle finger on my lip

The person on the side of the door knocked again

"Coming!"

I opened my door and it was just the food that I ordered for our breakfast. I thanked the delivery guy and gave him a tip.

I put down the food on the table and then I went to my bathroom to shower

I need a really cold shower.

Title: After All

Artist: Cher & Peter Cetera

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

LISA'S POV

Gold Constructions Building

Manhattan, New York.

"Wow, Your building is huge Jen! how many floors?" I asked admiring the place, it looks so modern and sleek and everything looks so High-tech.

"23 floors" She answered

"Damn..12 floors higher than Third Night"

"Yes but Sana's building is just as nice, anyways, let me show you my office" She said smiling then she walked ahead of me

We went to the elevator and she pressed the 23rd floor button.

As soon as we reached the top floor and got out of the Elevator, She was greeted by her employees with huge smile on their faces

Jennie must be good boss to her employees because they all look happy and their mood seemed to brighten up when they saw her coming in.

"Good morning boss!"

"Morning boss lady!"

"Hey boss, looking good!"

Jennie responded to each and everyone of them politely then she lead me to her office

"Sorry about that, I'll introduce you to them later okay? Anyways this is my office"

"It's alright Jennie, your office is really big, I love the view and the high ceilings and wow, a modern chandelier? A little extra don't you think?" I said grinning at her and she laughed

I was busy admiring her private space when all of a sudden, someone busted through her door

"Jennie! I thought you said you weren't coming in-oh hello" the lady said giving me a friendly smile

"Hello to you too, good morning" I said then I bowed my head

"Jihyo! I told you to knock when coming into my office!" Jennie said with an irritated tone

"When did you say that? And don't be rude Jennie, we have a visitor, mind introducing me to her?" The Lady said

"Dummy" I heard Jennie whisper then she formally introduced us to one another

"Jihyo, this is Lalisa, Lalisa, this is Jihyo Park, my sister"

"Aaaahhhh... haha I see, so you're the famous Tangelo I hear so much about, It's nice to finally meet you in person" She said giving me a small hug then she pulled away quick

I didn't know what to say so I just let out an awkward laugh
Jihyo did a one over on me and she grinned.

She gave Jennie a sly look for a second then she turned her attention back to me

"You're so gorgeous! Has anyone ever told you that you look like an Asian Barbie doll? You can be a model girl!"

"Ahh..Haha.. no, not really uhm-"

"Stop it Jihyo! you're making her uncomfortable, she's not used to that kind of approach" Jennie said

"No, she's okay, it's alright Jen" I said smiling

"Yeah, it's alright Jen. Anyways, Now I see why my sister is crazy over you. You're really hot" Jihyo said bluntly

"Jih you stupid idiot! Get out of my office!" Jennie yelled

"Alright okay, Jisoos. See you guys later, and have fun" she said walking away while waving her hand goodbye then she winked at Jennie.

"Ignore that fool, She can be really aggressive, I apologize on her behalf" Jennie said massaging her temple

"**giggle**So she's your best friend here huh? You guys are complete opposite of each other"

"Yeah, Totally. But that funny girl saved me from a lot of emotional trauma so I kept her around"

"I see. I like her Jen ***smile*** "

She smiled back and said "She likes you too, Tangelo"

:

Jennie toured me around her building for about an hour and a half then she introduced me to her employees.

The environment at Jennie's workplace is very light, everyone was very friendly and polite. Jennie most likely treats them well because according to one of her employees, most of them have been working for her ever since she started the company 4 years ago

After the company tour, she took me to different tourist and foodie spots in the city, we didn't get home until it was almost midnight

:

:

As soon as we reached her condo, I threw myself on her couch face down, laying on my stomach

"Aahhhh.. Finally, Thank God for this couch, It's so comfortable"

I heard her giggle

"Don't fall asleep on the couch Tangelo, It can get really cold here, go to your room and wash up"

"No.. I'm too tired, I'm sleeping here" I said closing my eyes

"Ok Tangelo, suit yourself, I'll just turn on the heater then..Goodnight"

"Good..night" I said then I'm out like a light.

:

:

DAYS LATER..

"Where are you taking me today Jennie?" I asked excitedly

We woke up around 6 in the morning today, she gave me a hint that we're gonna chase waterfalls but she's not being specific.

We've been on the road for about 2 hours now but she's still mum about our destination.

For the past week all we ever did was go out and eat at different fancy and hip restaurants, I was having a lot of fun but Jennie got bored so she decided that we'd go nature tripping.

"Ok, I guess I can tell you now, we're going to Ithaca Falls" she said looking at me briefly

"Oh yay! That's like your home town here right?"

She laughed softly and nodded

"Yeah, I guess you could say that"

"Are we going to see Jihyo's Parents too?"

"No, not today, Mama and Papa are actually out of State, they're in Hawaii celebrating their 30th wedding anniversary"

"Awww.. that's too bad..but how nice, they lasted for 30 years" I said, Jennie didn't respond and just continued driving

I absentmindedly thought about Her and I's upcoming divorce but I quickly shook it out of my head

I've been here for more than a week now and I'm afraid to admit that I'm becoming used to this kind of set-up

No, I'm here so she could sign the divorce papers. I need to focus on that.

After this, it's over for sure

Those are my thoughts but my heart aches whenever I think about being separated from her again

I looked at her and admired her side profile, I don't know what came over me but I reached out for her right hand and took it, lacing it with my left hand

She flinched with my touch because was surprised by my action but she didn't pull away, she just tightened her hold and squeeze my hand lightly.

:
:
"Wow! Oh My God it's so Pretty!!" I said jumping up and down while I clap my hands seeing the waterfall

(A/N: Screenshot from the video that I took from months ago)

"It is. Jihyo and I used to come here all the time, just talking or eating lunch"

She took my hand and held it, I looked at her and smiled then we both went back on admiring the falls.

We bought A bag of lemon pepper and garlic parmesan chicken wings, a box of Veggie Pizza and 2 liters of Soda with us and we had a little picnic on the side of the falls while we talked and laughed about anything and everything under the sun.

After that she took me to two other falls nearby which is Taughannock and Shequaga, they're just as pretty as the first one we went to.

:

11:00 PM

"Are we going back to the City, Jennie-ya? It's a little late for us to be driving back don't you think?"

"Yeah I know, that's why we're going to stay at my House, we're pretty close, 10 more minutes and we're there"

"Ahh That's right you did mention you have a house upstate, but what about change of clothes?"

"Don't worry, I have fresh clothes and underwear that you could use, I come up here twice a month just to unwind so I'm fully stocked"

"You're Amazing Jennie" I said without any hesitation while I hold her hand

"***smile*** You too Tangelo"

:

"Here we are! Welcome to my second Home Tangelo!"

And as expected, everything looks so brand new and modern, Her interior is mostly black and white with a touch of gray, It also features a high ceiling with Big Glass Doors and windows

"Your house is very nice Jennie, but aren't you scared people might break in? I mean you have a lot of glass going on here"

"Don't worry, this is a pretty safe place, and didn't you see how gated my house is? Not to brag but this house also features top of the line security"

I scoffed

"What? Like Laser beams or something?"

"Yep! Let's go, I'll show you to your room" She said walking ahead of me but I grabbed on her wrist to stop her

"Hmmm? What's wrong Tangelo?"

"Jennie, Actually I.. can we..sleep on the same bed tonight?" I asked boldly

She didn't say anything.

It felt a little awkward for me so I let go of her hand and looked away

"Sorry.. never mind, forget I said anything" I mumbled

She pulled me gently towards her wrapping her arms around my neck then she gave me a chaste kiss on the lips

"Yes, you can sleep with me, You're my Wife after all, right?" She said with a seductive tone, I was speechless so I just nodded

"Let's go.." she whispered near my lips, giving me another quick kiss and then she pulled me upstairs leading me to her bedroom

:

:

1:30 AM

"Ahh...ahhh..shit! Lalisa! Don't stop..Keep going..Ooooh..Fuck.."

Jennie moaned while I eat her out, licking her sloppily while I grabbed on to her boobs massaging them

Funny how she was begging me to stop earlier because she's getting sore and now she's telling me to keep going

I have lost count on how many times she cummed in my mouth, but that's the least of my concern right now, she tastes so sweet and so good that I don't ever want to stop.

How did we get here again? Well, as soon as we entered her room, we went and showered together then you know the rest

And as soon as we got out of the shower, I threw her on her bed and continued fucking her there.

We've been at it for more than an hour now and I still couldn't get enough of her, I just want to keep making love and fuck her brains out until she can't walk anymore.

I entered Jennie with two fingers, curling it and started to pump in and out while I suck on her clit and that did it for her, She squirted pretty hard she ended up wetting the bed.

She was pushing my head away and begging me to stop with what I'm doing but I didn't, I continued eating and fingering her.

I know damn well Jennie can have multiple orgasms, I'm sure she can handle more of it.

"Ta-Tangelo please..stop.. I can't-aaahhhh!!"

****Squirt****

"No.. No more.. Plea-ahhh!!"

****Squirt****

"Ba-baby.. I'm about to pass out.. Ahh fuck! So good!!"

****Squirt****

Ok Fine, I'll Stop Now.

I came up and kissed her lips letting her taste herself, she pushed me away gently from her because she's having a hard time catching her breath

I giggled and instructed her to breathe in and out slowly.

When she got it together, I laughed while pointing a finger at her, she didn't appreciate it so she grabbed a pillow and hit me with it on the face

"You find this funny?! I told you to stop!" She said yelling

"Aawww.. I'm sorry baby, you taste so good, I can't help myself, come here.." I said pulling her close to me, I wrapped my arms around her and she laid her head oh my chest.

"It's not funny Tangelo, the bed is totally wet now" she said sleepily then she yawned

"I know, we should probably change the sheets tomorrow"

She didn't respond, I checked to see if she fell asleep on me, she did, I hear her light snoring then she mumbled words

I smiled to myself and kissed the top of her head

"Goodnight, Love."

:

:

4 DAYS LATER

Jennie and I decided to stay in Upstate New York for the rest of my two week vacation, we did a lot of Hiking and took lots of pictures and videos together, we also went to other nearby states to try out different restaurants that we saw on Man Vs. Food, some of it were good while most of them were just hype.

We're staying at one of her house again, this time, It's a Lake House, which makes sense because we're in the town of Lake George

This is my last night here in New York

My last night with Jennie

And then we go back to the city tomorrow morning, my flight is at 9 PM and I still need to pack my things

We're on her balcony right now, we made a little fort with fairy light and everything with the view of the lake in front of us, we're sipping on some red wine while we eat some chicken wings and sushi.

"So, did I make your 2 week vacation fun, Tangelo?"

"Yes, it's beyond what I expected"

"Haha, what were you expecting? Me torturing you emotionally?"

"No offense but yes" I said laughing

"You're so bad for thinking that, I can't blame you though, but glad I proved you wrong"

"Yes, you did, this is the most fun I had in years"

She nodded agreeing with me

"Yeah me too, I haven't felt this happy in so long"

"When was the last time you were this happy?" I asked curiously

"When we got married in Australia" She said smiling at me

I didn't know what to say, to be honest I feel the same way, but I'm not as brave as her when it comes to being honest

"I'm sorry, Tangelo. I didn't mean to make it awkward, I was just speaking my mind, don't think anything of it okay? I'll sign the divorce papers so don't worry" She said sadly but managed to still smile

I can see pain and hurt in her eyes but I also see that she's ready to completely let go and move on.

I wanted to cry but I held it in

This is what I wanted and she's giving it to me, no strings attached, I should be happy right? But why do I feel like everything is falling apart?

"Take care of yourself, Tangelo and live your life to its fullest" She said

"You too Jennie.. thank you, for everything"

"You're welcome, thank you for meeting up with me, I'm the happiest right now because of you"

"Jennie---"

"You know Tangelo? my parents, they've been trying to keep in contact with me but I kept avoiding them, Jihyo said I should just forgive them for my own peace of mind but I just can't bring myself to do so" she said as tears fall down her face

I pulled her closer to me, and I wrapped her with my arms and then I wiped her tears

"Jen, I know that this is gonna come off as an unsolicited advice but Jihyo is right.. forgive them, do it for you Jennie, you deserve peace, life is short and everything happens for a reason, it doesn't make sense now but it will someday, everything will eventually fall into place" I said to her

She didn't say anything, She just hugged me tighter cried some more.

I held her in my arms and cried along with her, Jennie has been through so much but she's still standing strong, I know that it's hard for her to show her vulnerable side and I'm thankful that I'm here, comforting and holding her.

I tilted her head up and wiped her tears away, and then I kissed

her lips passionately.

It was a perfect last night

Our Perfect Goodbye.

:

:

2 WEEKS LATER

Seoul, South Korea

"Jennieeeee..."

I said looking at our pictures and videos while crying my ass off like a baby.

It's been two weeks since I left New York and I haven't stopped crying since I boarded the plane back here to Korea

I didn't go back to work just yet, I used my paid time off so I could mourn my lost love.

I miss her so much, I wanted to call or text her but we already agreed that we're not getting involved anymore and she was really firm about it.

She actually just had someone drop me off at the airport, she didn't see me off because she said it was too painful and there was no point to keep saying goodbye when that's all we've been doing.

****Knock Knock Knock!!****

"Waaaahhhh.. Go Away!!" I yelled then I continued sobbing

"Lisa-chan! Open this damn door or I swear I'm gonna have the condo security bust this door open!" Sana threatened

I lazily got up and opened the door because I know Sana will really call security if I don't

"What do you want?!" I asked angrily

"Lalisa what's going on with you?!" Sana said entering my home closing my door and dragging me with her

"Sit!" She said pushing me down my couch

"Ooowww what the hell?! What's your problem Sana?!"

"You reek of alcohol! You look dirty and gross! When was the last time you showered?!"

"About 3 days ago, but that's none of your business!"

"Lalisa! You got what you wanted right?! She signed the damn papers! You're finally free so what's up with the sob fest?!"

"I miss her okay?! I miss Jennie! I still love her Sana, I made a terrible mistake And now I can't take it back! It's too late!"

"Lisa-chan.." Sana said sitting down beside me rubbing my back to comfort me

I cried for quite a while and Sana just held me

"Sana, what do I do?"

"You haven't given the divorce papers yet to Atty. Jao yet right?"

I shook my head No

"Then go get your girl back, Lisa-chan"

"What? That's crazy talk, I was the one who kept insisting to break up and now you're telling me to get her back?!"

I looked at her but she's just giving me a blank stare

"I should get her back Sana! But what if she doesn't want me anymore? Then what?" I asked my bestfriend

"Then you move on. Completely. At least you won't have any what 'ifs' or any regrets, the most important thing is that you tried and if it still doesn't work out then you can always start over, okay? Life goes on my darling" Sana said kissing me on the forehead

I closed my eyes and smiled

"Yeah.. You're right. Thank You, Sana"

"You're welcome, Now go shower for an hour, she might reject you if you go to her looking and smelling like a slob"

I laughed and nodded

"Louis misses you by the way, so do what you need to do and take your son back, he's eating all my food" Sana continued

"Got it, I owe you Sana"

"Yeah you do, a lot, but I love you so I won't ask for anything back"

"I love you too, Sana"

2 WEEKS AND 2 DAYS LATER

10 PM

JENNIE'S POV

"Hahahaha..." I laughed while watching Modern Family but as soon as commercial comes on, I go back to crying again.

I'm so heart broken. I can't believe it's really over between Tangelo and I, when I was signing the divorce papers, I wanted to rip it up to shreds and then flush it down the toilet or burn it.

I haven't gotten any decent sleep and all I've been eating is a bunch of junk food while I drink Champagne.

"Life is so hard.. Why can't I just have her? This is so unfair! I hate life!" I yelled then I threw the bottle of champagne on the wall

Just then, I heard a very aggressive knock on my door

"Who the hell-go away!" I yelled but the person continued knocking

"Whatever, go and bleed out your knuckles knocking for all I care" I whispered then I turned up the volume of my TV

****KNOCK!! KNOCK!!KNOCK!! KNOCK!! KNOCK!!****

"God damn it If You Don't Leave Now I'll call the Police! Now Scram!!"

The person still didn't stop, I'm really getting angry and I'm about to kill somebody

I stood up and went to my room to get my Tazer, I put it on the lowest setting but strong enough to hurt somebody, then I went to my front door ready to electrocute the unwanted visitor

"Alright, You asked for it!" I said then I opened the door tazing the person on their side without hesitating.

It was too late when I realized who it was

"Jennie I-Ahhhhhhh!!!!!"

"Oh shit! Tangelo! Oh My God! Oh My God!" I said freaking out She's now laying on the floor twitching and she passed out

"Shit!" I said then I dragged her body inside.

I checked her pulse, good thing it's still regular, and she's breathing normally, I ended up carrying her to my bedroom

:

:

1 HOUR LATER

"Uunnngghhhh..." I heard Tangelo groan, she's starting to wake up, I'm laying next to her because I want her to see me when she opens her eyes

"Tangelo, Hey.." I said sitting up then I stroke her hair

She slowly opens her eyes and then she looks around

"Huh? Wha..where am I?" She asked groggily then she looked at my direction, when she finally realized who she was looking at, She sat up quickly and held her hand up

"Don't Hurt Me!" She said, her body is shaking

"Hey, hey, It's just me, Jennie. Sorry, I didn't mean to scare you.. or taze you, It's alright" I said trying to calm her down

"Jennie! Why the hell did you taze me you sadistic moron!"

"Why were you knocking on my door so hard you idiot!"

"Because you weren't opening your door!"

"You could've called and gave me a head's up that you were gonna come and drop by like a normal person!"

"That's no reason for you to taze somebody!"

"It's self defense! For all I know you're a rapist or a serial killer!"

"Serial killer my ass! You're the Devil! Nobody can kill you!"

"Shut the fuck up you stupid, ugly, orange freak!"

"You shut the fuck up you dumpling-faced chubby cheek demon!"

"Why did you come here anyway Tangelo?! I thought we agreed that we're done!" I asked angrily but she didn't respond, She just closed her eyes and took a deep breath

"You're just making things harder for me, you're not being fair.. I---"

"Jennie, I came here to tell you that I still love you"

I froze in place, to say that I was shock is an understatement

"Jennie, did you hear me? I said I love you" Tangelo repeated

I chuckled and shook my head

"Don't fucking play with me Lalisa, Just don't"

"I'm not, I made a mistake Jennie, the past two weeks that I spent with you made me realie that you're the one I really want to be with--"

"And what about your precious Jung-kook?" I asked bitterly

"What about him?"

"What do you mean what about him? he was the reason why you didn't want me anymore right? are you that indecisive?"

"No, Listen to me okay?" She said cupping my cheek looking deeply into my eyes "Him and I never got back together after that incident in Jeju, I admit he did want to be with me again and wanted to get married but I declined"

"He--he wanted to marry you?"

"Uh-huh.. but a huge part of me knows that he wasn't the one, I didn't realize it back then but I know now that you're the reason"

"Tangelo---"

"You're the love of my life, my only one. Jennie, Please give us another chance, I love you.. I love you so much, I'm willing to give it all up just to be with you again..

Tears started falling down my face from so much happiness, I never would've thought this day would ever come

I couldn't contain it anymore so I crashed my lips on hers, kissing

her passionately.

I pulled away from the kiss and looked at her intently

"I love you so much, Tangelo.. I really really do.."

She smiled lovingly and pecked my lips

"Jennie, It's You and I, Together.."

"Forever, Tangelo."

:

:

2 Years Later.

Tangelo ended up staying with me here in New York after getting back together, She applied for permanent residency here in the U.S. so she could stay longer

My Parents and I Finally reconciled and put our past behind us, it was a very emotional reunion but all is forgiven and they welcomed Tangelo into our Family.

I kept my current first and last name-Lalisa wants to that she wants to become Lalisa, Park officially so she changed her name again for the second time.

We finally decided to build a family and I am now 7 months pregnant, we found a donor who looks exactly like Lisa and he's also Thai.

We're going to have a baby boy and we're going to name him Liam Jacob.

"Hmm.. how's my baby mama?" Tangelo asked hugging me from behind while she's kissing on my neck.

We're in our house (The Balcony to be exact) at Lake George looking over the view

"I'm hungry again Honey, could you cook me some Gamjatang and Pad Thai?" I answered

"Sure baby, but it's gonna take a while, do you mind waiting a little bit?"

"Fine.."

"Awww.. I can make some mushroom toast while you wait, how does that sound?" She asked

I turned around and put my arms around her neck and kissed her lips

"That's sounds perfect, Love"

"YOU'RE Perfect. I love you so much, Jennie..You know that, right?"

"MmmHmm.. I do.. and I love you too, Tangelo"

"Forever?"

I smiled lovingly and carressed her cheek

"Forever"

THE END

A/N

Thank You So Much Guys for following Gungdung-i and Tangelo's Story

It's been a long, dramatic and wild 4 months

I appreciate all of you

Stay safe and God Bless!

50.) Kids, Mood Swings & Cravings

Title: Amazed

Artist: Boyz II Men

[There should be a GIF or video here. Update the app now to see it.]

A/N: SHORT EPILOGUE

LISA'S POV

5 Years Later

Astoria, Queens New York

"Liam Jacob Park! Get your little butt over here in the Living Room! Now!" I said yelling at my son because he made a big mess again.

"But I'm washing the dishes Mama..." He responded with a whiny tone

"Since when did you wash dishes?! If you don't come here after I count to five you're going to be in a lot of trouble young man and you wouldn't want that." I said firmly.

My son didn't say anything, I don't hear any footsteps so I'm assuming he's still in the Kitchen, Hiding.

"One..." I said with a warning tone

"Ok ok!" He said then I heard him running towards me, almost tripping on air.

I mentally facepalmed

Clumsy Kid

"Liam, how many times do I have to tell you to clean up your toys when you're done playing? you're almost 6 years old honey, you can't continue being like this, you gotta be responsible, you're about to become a big brother.."

"It wasn't me Mama, Honest! I was at the Kitchen this whole time, it's Louis who did the mess.."

"Don't you stand there and lie to my face, boy! and don't blame the cat!"

"Tangelo, what's going on? What's with all the yelling?" My 6 Month Pregnant Wife asked as she approaches us

Jennie and I decided to have another child again when we realized that we didn't want Liam to be like us, My wife and I are the only children of our Parents and it got lonely at times.

We were worried about Liam being alone because God forbid, if something happens to us then at least our kids will have each other.

We used our eggs this time and we had one of my wife's cousins donate their sperm to us.

Jennie decided she wants to carry our child again but as soon as she got pregnant, she blamed me and got mad at me for not carrying the baby

Anywho..Back to the "Liam Issue"

I didn't say anything when My wife asked me the question, Instead, I just showed her the mess our son did to our living room

Jennie shook her head and gave our son an annoyed look with her hands on her hips

"Liam, you know what to do, right?"

"Uhm..Make more mess?" He said jokingly but instantly regretting it when he saw my wife's face turning red in anger

"Clean this up Mister! I'm not going to tell you again!"

"Mommy, this is child slavery.." Liam said as he continues to whine

"Child Slavery? What do you know about it? and Where did you even hear that term?!" Jennie asked impatiently

"I heard you say it Mommy when we were watching those kids from poor countries.." he answered

"Child slavery is when you get paid, you're not getting paid! we ask you to clean up because this is your OWN mess!" Jennie countered

"But that's worse than slavery then, Mommy"

My son talked back again but my wife is not having it anymore.

I wanted to laugh because Liam is a lot like Jennie, but I know better, so I stayed quiet.

"Zip it! and clean this up or No Animal Crossing for you, got it?! I'm not kidding little boy. When I come back this place better be spotless, arraseo?!" Jennie said, the veins on her forehead looks like it's about ready to pop

Liam finally gave up and started cleaning up the living room.

Then my wife turned her attention to me

"And You" Jennie said with a menacing tone while she glares at me

"Ye-Yes Honey?" I said nervously

"Come here!" She said grabbing my hand and dragged me to our Kitchen

"Cook something! Me and your child are starving!" Jennie demanded

"Su-sure baby love, what are you in the mood for?"

"Don't call me that!" She yelled

"What?" I asked confused and scared

"Baby Love! Don't use that on me! how old do you think I am? 12?!"

****Sigh****

"Right. Sorry, I won't call you that anymore"

"Not call me *what* anymore?!"

I kinked my eyebrow and said "Uhm, Baby Love..?"

"What?! You don't love me anymore??!"

"NO! But you just! I didn't say! ****sigh**** Baby, that's not what I said, you told me not to call you Baby Love anymore so I-"

I stopped talking when I noticed that My wife is now full blown crying

"Yeobo! Why are you crying??!!" I asked panicking

"You don't love me anymore because I'm fat, ugly and unkempt! What are you still doing here then?! Get out of my House you jerk!" She said sobbing

I approached her then I gave her a hug

"Awww.. baby I love you, How could I not love you? You're the best, most beautiful woman in the world"

"Don't sweet talk me you Orange Freak! I hate you Tangelo!" She said pushing me away

"Honey come on, It's not good for the baby if you're upset like this" I said approaching her slowly this time.

She's in one of her moods again. Earlier she was nice, sweet and cuddly, like she wouldn't hurt a fly, We even had early morning sex but now she's something else again.

If you think her mood swings were bad in High school, Pregnant Jennie is on a whole 'nother level.

I'm trying not to freak her out more because we've been down this road before when she was pregnant with Liam. I know that at this stage of her pregnancy, she's capable of murdering somebody, specifically, ME.

I'm her favorite target.

Some things never change.

"You're the one who's not good for the baby ! It doesn't like your ugly face!"

"My Ugly Face?" I said knitting my eyebrows

Earlier in bed you were telling me how adorable and cute I am and now I'm ugly?

"Yes! I don't want to see your face right now! the baby might end up looking like an Oompa Loompa and it's going to be your fault! get out my face! you're annoying me! "

"Ok..Well, I still need to cook your food though honey. hmm..How about I wear a mask then? will that annoy you less, love ?" I offered trying to compromise with her

"Yeah! do that! it might lessen my anger towards you!"

I sighed then nodded.

Might as well do what she wants before she punch me in the face and kick me out of our house again.

"Alright love, I think Liam has a batman mask, let me get it, wait here, ok?" I said then I kissed her temple

I was about to get the mask when she suddenly called me

"No! Wait! Tangelo.." My wife said grabbing my arm, stopping me

"Yes, Love?"

"I'm Sorry Honey, I don't know what's going on with me, it's the baby, it has an attitude problem and it's not even born yet" She said sincerely, obviously feeling bad

She then held out her arms wide open signaling me to approach her and give her a hug

"Awww.. Is that so honey? it's alright then, no harm done, all is forgiven" I said giving her a gentle bear hug

"You're not upset with me, Tangelo?"

"No, not even a little"

"You still love me?" Jennie asked pouting cutely

"Yes" I answered smiling

"How much?"

"Sooo Very Much"

"Are You Sure Tangelo?"

"Of course Honey, you're my soulmate and the love of my life" I said confidently, then I kissed the top of her head

"Even when I get crazy and want to strangle you most of the time, you're not gonna leave me and our kids, right?"

"Baby, seriously? If I wanted to leave I would've done it a long time ago. Sorry to say this but you've bullied me, kidnapped me, sedated me and tazed me, If those situations didn't scare me away, what makes you think this one will? your mood swings are out of your control, Love"

"Yes, so let's blame the hormones and the baby whenever I get the crazies ok?" She said smiling and I giggled.

"Sure, but not the baby, maybe the hormones" I said then I tilted her head up and kissed her on the lips

"Hmmm.. Thank You, Tangelo. I feel much better now"

"Good, I'm glad. I love you so much, Jennie. My Beautiful, Gorgeous, Sexy Wife. My One and Only, My Forever and Always"

"I love you too, now about the food? I'm not kidding, the baby and I are hungry"

"Ahhh yes, you want the same one from yesterday? The Clam Chowder with Pickles and Tomatoes?"

"Yes but minus the Pickles and I want some Steamed Brussel sprouts with Caramel sauce and hot fudge for dessert"

"Uhhh..Ok then, let me check if we have Brussel Sprouts.."

"But If Brussel Sprouts aren't available then Asparagus and Vanilla Ice Cream would be fine" Jennie said excitedly

"Mommy! I'm done cleaning!" Our son said running towards Jennie, hugging her

"Good Job, My Love. See? it wasn't that hard now was it?" My wife said giving our son a kiss on the cheek

"No Mommy, the living room is spotless now" He said proudly which made me nervous

"Awww..That's my boy, come here, let mommy give you kisses"

"Jennie-ya" I whispered

"Hmm?"

"Let me just check the living room and see how Liam did okay?"

"Ok Tangelo, don't take too long though, I can feel my mood is about to change again and it's not going to be in your favor"

"Yes love, be right back" I said as I rush to the living room

When I got there, the living room looks normal..

It's clean.

No toys, No crayons or any coloring books

Huh. How did he clean up so fast?

Something's not right here

I checked the bathrooms--Clear

Checked his room--No Mess

Checked the guest bedrooms--Gleaming

There's only one place left

The Master's Bedroom

I opened our door and what I saw is just--abysmal

Liam threw all his stuff on our bed and his other things on the floor, he knows he's not allowed in our room and he's probably thinking that this is the last place I'll look since he can't enter without a key

Jennie probably forgot to lock it when she went out earlier

I knew it! he thinks he's slick!

"LIAM JACOB PARK! GET YOUR TINY LITTLE BUTT HERE NOW! YOU'RE IN BIG TROUBLE YOUNG MAN!"

Bonus Chapter: Story of SaTzu (Sana's Obsession)

A/N: This is just basically a short story of SaTzu, I was inspired by a comment that was made by one of the readers of the story so I decided to make a special chapter about them.

There's time lapse and quick change of pace

You know how it is lol.

I apologize for the errors.

TITLE: At My Worst (Remix)

Artist: Pink Sweat\$ ft. Kehlani

<https://youtu.be/R176lnVtwyg>

Approximately 16 YEARS BEFORE THE END OF 'I SEE ORANGE'

I Am Evil.

I Am Manipulative.

And I.. Am Inlove.

My best friend Lisa thought that her lover is Crazy

But She has no idea what Crazy really is

...She has no clue that she's friends with a More Deranged Person

And It Awakened when I met HER..

The Woman that made me fall on my knees..

The Woman that made me realize that Love is the only thing that matters in this Insane World

She's My Everything.

My Life..

My World..

My Tzuyu.

My Name is Sana Minatozaki, and whoever will dare steal her

away from me will face My Wrath.

SANA'S POV

Osaka, Japan

"Sana, are you sure you want to finish your last year of High-school in South Korea? why the sudden change of heart, dear?" My Father ask

I shrugged and said "I don't know Father, this place is boring me, I need some excitement, I'm gonna turn 19 soon and I feel like I'm wasting my life away"

He chuckled at what I said

"And going to Korea is going to solve this.. *'Teenage Crisis'* of yours?"

"I don't know. Maybe, I can't give you an answer not unless I try it first, no?"

My Father sighed hard and massaged the bridge of his nose, I already know that he's gonna go with what I want when he does those gestures.

"Fine, Sana. I'm gonna call Hajoon and see if he can squeeze in one more stubborn student"

"God-Father will totally say yes, I'm a good addition to his top student roster--but! I will let my credentials and my 4.0 GPA do the talking for me" I said cockily

"I'm gonna let you do this but promise me you'll maintain your grades and graduate on top of your class, you're my only heir and I expect that you meet my expectations"

"When have I ever let you down Father? your expectations? I will not only meet them, I'll exceed them"

I saw a great pride in my father's eyes, he looks so proud of me already.

"That's my girl"

:

:

"Sana, you're really going to Seoul for the rest of the school year?" My friend Juri asked

"Yep! I want a change of scenery you know?" I answered then I took a bite of my chicken sandwich

"Why the hell would you go in the middle of the school year? You're the student body V.P., who's gonna replace you now?" My other friend Rui asked with a frustrated tone

"I don't know, not my problem. Minari will handle it" I said smiling at my cousin who's sitting across the lunch table

My cousin didn't respond and she just continued on with her

paperwork

"Mina's The President, meaning she already has a lot on her plate and now you're giving her more headache by transferring to another school? not just any school, it just had to be in Freaking Seoul!" Rui said becoming more aggravated

"Listen Rui, My cousin isn't even complaining of the work that I'm leaving her--which is by the way, not much because I do my job well so I don't know why you're bitching about me going to Seoul"

"Ignore her Sana, Rui is acting that way because she'll miss you" Juri said nudging Rui

"What??! hell no! this bitch can go to Seoul tomorrow and I won't even notice!" Rui said glaring at me

"In denial, I know you're in love with me Rui but sorry, I don't swing that way" I said smugly but in a joking manner of course

"Oh God.. you're a piece of work aren't you?" Rui said rolling her eyes at me

"I'll miss you too Rui-chan, you can come and visit me there for spring break" I said holding her hand while smiling at her

"Stupid bitch" She said then she gave me a bear hug

Rui likes to pretend that she's the toughest and baddest among the four of us but in reality? She's the softest and the most sensitive one.

"What about your boyfriend?" Juri asked

"Who?" I said while I pull away from my friend's embrace

"Yuta! remember?! you've been going out with him for 2 months!" Juri said then she laughed

"Oh, right..break-up with him, got it" I said giggling

"You're unbelievable Sana, he really likes you, you know?" Rui said wiping her tears

"Meh. Like I said, not my problem, he knows the deal from the start, he's a temp"

"A temp?" My cousin asked looking up from the work that she's doing

"Yeah, temporary, it's not like he didn't know about it" I answered

"You're such a slut I swear, someday you're gonna meet someone that'll set you straight and that person's gonna be your Karma"

I smirked at my friend, she's being ridiculous again

"Give me a break Rui, I'm young and I don't have time for a serious relationship, It was fun while it lasted, it's not like we're gonna get married or something"

"You say that to every guy that you dated" Minari laughed softly then she turned her attention back to her work

"It's not my fault they're boring, they're so submissive I swear, like come on! fight back! throw me on the bed or something or choke

me while we have sex, they're all so Vanilla"
"Fucking Freak" Juri said laughing out loud

It's true though, I've dated a lot of guys and they're all the same.
I mean yeah sure, they treat me like a princess and cater to my every whim, It's nice and all but I find it really..
Plain.

There must be something wrong with me, or something's missing, but I can't quite put my finger on it.

Everything just seems to be lifeless and dull

I need an adventure

And maybe going to a foreign land will do me some good.

:

:

:

J. TRINITY

Seoul, South Korea

"Sana, let me introduce you to Lisa, she's going to be one of our Dance Instructors here, can you show her around? and F.Y.I, she's also a student at Pioneer high, she's the same age as you" My cousin Momo said introducing me to the girl with bright orange hair

"Lisa, this is Sana, my cousin"

"Hi Lisa, I'm Sana, Nice to meet you!" I said smiling at her

"Nice to mee---Owww" I didn't let her finish because I engulfed her with my signature Koala hug

"Sana let go, you're hurting Lisa" Momoring said as she giggles

"Ahhh! Sorry Lisa, I couldn't help it, you look cute, I like cute people" I said non-chalantly

"Oh goodness.. Lisa, please don't take it the wrong way, she's not flirting, she's just like that but rest assured she meant what she said" Momoring said like she's embarrassed or something

"Anyways, let's go?" I said to my new found friend grabbing her hand then practically dragging her out the door while saying good bye to my older cousin

Lisa Manoban, I find her interesting, but not in a romantic way.

One look and I already know that she's the type of person who's really shy and awkward--and sorry to say this but I could tell that she's a big pushover.

And it was confirmed when I finally attended Pioneer High.

She's being bullied by this person named Jennie Kim--another interesting character but I find nothing special about her.

Jennie is is totally in love with Lisa. My innocent friend however, is too naive to notice.

I understand Jennie's frustrations with Lisa, I would be frustrated too if the person that I'm in love with has no damn clue about my feelings, It's likely the reason why she's bullying Lalisa, to get her attention.

But, since I consider Lisa as my friend now, I decided to stick with her and not leave her alone, Jennie might be in love with her but I don't know what great lengths she'll do to get Lisa's attention, just in case things get physical, I'm there to protect my sister.

:

Second day in Pioneer High, I was expecting it to be an ordinary day, but what I didn't know is that it will be the day that I'll meet the person who's going to make me insane

Chou, Tzuyu.

The first time I've laid my eyes on her, I felt an instant connection that I couldn't explain.

Even though our first meeting wasn't exactly ideal, looking back now, I would say that it was perfect.

I didn't make it obvious though--that I fell in love at first sight because the idea of it was ridiculous, I'm not homophobic or anything, it's not even about gender, but I'm just not used to having these..feelings

:

Weeks passed and as time goes on, My feelings for her grew stronger

Damn it Sana! Get your shit together and calm down!

But I didn't calm down and my feelings went haywire

It grew so out of control that I started obsessing over her.

I want to get to know her really bad but I know My Tzuyu wouldn't be so keen about sharing details regarding her personal life with me because our encounters weren't exactly unicorns and rainbows but I was desperate to know every little thing about my beloved so I let money do all the work.

I hired a private investigator to research about Tzuyu regarding her past and present like her family background, childhood..

What are the things she likes and dislikes the most..

The good, The bad..

I want to know it all

Even her past romance(s)--which was very hard to swallow by the

way, I wanted to have her past lovers killed but I let it go and decided to focus on getting my girl

:

JENNIE and JISOO'S BIRTHDAY PARTY

(Before Jennie saw Sana and Tzuyu making out)

I decided to attend the biggest party of the year and finally confront Tzuyu about my feelings, I'm determined to make her mine, and she WILL be mine whether she likes it or not.

I was making my way through the crowd when all of a sudden, a guy stopped me

"Hey beautiful, want to dance?" he said.

He reeks of alcohol and marijuana and he could barely stand up

"No thanks" I said giving him a fake smile then I walked pass him

"Hey..Hey slow down, where are you going?" The drunkie said grabbing my right arm, I smirked and then I wrapped my free arm around his neck, pulling him closer to me

"You better let go of me now before I do something you'll regret" I whispered darkly

I pulled away and gave him an evil grin.

I saw the surprised look on his face, he gulped really hard then he let go of me slowly

"I..apologize Sana" He said

"Walk away" was my only response then I turned my back on him

:

I continued to walk around around looking for Tzuyu and when I finally saw her, I swear my heart stopped beating for a few seconds.

She looks breath taking..

She's by the deck drinking her liquor by herself when she's suddenly approached by someone

Qian, Kun

I know the guy, he's the latest one who's shown interest with my darling--

Kun gave Tzuyu a hug which was reciprocated by her willingly

When they broke off the embrace, I saw how Tzuyu was smiling at him warmly

She never smiled like that to me before!

Granted that Her and I never really had a chance to bond because she wouldn't let herself be close to me but still!

That smile should only be exclusive to me and NOBODY ELSE!

That thought triggered me and My vision turned red

I clenched my fists while gritting my teeth

I walked towards them stomping my feet

I separated the both of them then I gave Kun a bitch slap in the

face and pushed him away from my property, pulling Tzuyu behind me protectively

"Fuck Off!" I yelled

"Sana?! what the hell is the matter with you?!" I heard Tzuyu say but I ignored her

"You Bitch! what was that for?!" Kun yelled and was about to charge towards me but I met him halfway instead.

He was about to throw hands but I'm faster and I punched him right in his throat

He did the universal sign for choking, holding onto his neck with both of his hands

He's more vulnerable now so I decided to take advantage and punch him again with my fist landing on his nose and part of his upper lip.

It threw him off which made him fall on his bottom

He's now bleeding and He's crying in pain, but I wasn't satisfied with my work so I kicked and punched him in the face over and over again

I'm wearing my My Black Manolo Blahnik Leather Stilletos and it's not helping his situation

My mind is fogged up with jealousy and rage and I let it consume me

NO REMORSE..

NO MERCY..

DIE...

DIE!

"Sana! Sana please stop! you're gonna kill him!" Tzuyu cried which made me halt

Hearing my lover beg and cry caused a pain in my chest

I eventually came back to my senses and looked at Kun's beat up body

My breathing is heavy and my heart-beat is erratic, I felt a rush running through my whole body.

I was really about to kill him and I know that I won't even regret doing it--the thought of it excited me.

"Get up and Run! Don't EVER show your face to me again or I'll have you killed, arraseo?!"

He was barely responding but he managed to crawl slowly away from Tzuyu and I

"Sana have you gone mad?!"

I flinched when I heard Tzuyu yell at me, I closed my eyes and took a deep breath to compose myself

I faced her slowly and gave her a cold stare which made her back up a few steps away from me

"Sana.. what have you done.." She asked while wiping her tears away

I shrugged

"I've done nothing wrong, Tzuyu. I only did what I think was appropriate" I answered

"Are you out of your God damn mind?! he's the son of one of the most affluent investors in China! He's not gonna let this go! His Family is gonna come for you!"

Tch. Does she really think that that's going to scare me?

Cute.

I'm the only child of Raijin Minatozaki, The Head of the Family and we're one of the wealthiest and influential powerhouse in all of Japan, we're well connected and that includes getting involved with Politics and also, The Yakuza.

No one, not even the Government would dare go against us.

The last guy that expressed interest with Tzuyu is currently in a physical rehab

How did he ended up there?

It was my doing of course.

I ambushed him and with the help of My Father's thugs, I had him beat up, Bad.

He wasn't my first victim though, there were four more before him

I threatened them all and told them to stay away from Tzuyu because if they don't, it's light's out for them.

They got so scared that they ended up leaving Pioneer high, either moving to another school to study or home schooling.

"What the hell were you doing with him?!" I asked angrily completely ignoring her warning

"Sana! are you hearing yourself right now?! do you not care what's about to happen to you?!"

"The only thing I care about is the fact that you were fucking flirting with him when I told you not to!"

"I wasn't even flirting with him you dummy!"

"Yeah you were! why did you hug him back! and I even saw you smiling at him!"

"Because we're friends! nothing's wrong with hugging and smiling at your friends!"

"Are you really that clueless or what?! couldn't you tell that he likes you?!"

"He doesn't! and even if he does, what's it to you?! it's none of your fucking business!"

"Oh but it is my business, I told you already Tzuyu, I hate sharing what's mine!"

"I'm not yours to claim Sana!"

"I already claimed you Tzuyu, and you're not even gonna have a choice about it, you got that?! I own you!"

"You--You're insane!"

I chuckled and shook my head

"You're just now figuring that out?" I said then I swiftly approached her grabbing her by the arm and dragged her to the nearest rest room

:

:

4 YEARS LATER

Sana's Condominium

Seoul, South Korea

"Sana! this is ridiculous! we've been together for 4 years now and you still get jealous over every little thing!"

"And why shouldn't I get jealous huh?! the guy was all over you Tzuyu!"

My girlfriend and I are having another argument, it's been happening quite a lot, we haven't even recovered from our last fight and now, we're at each other's throats again.

Earlier today, I decided to pick her up from her photoshoot which I regret doing because that decision put us in this uncomfortable situation.

Tzuyu is now a popular model and brand endorser here in South Korea.

She was scouted by one of the managers from J.Y.P. Entertainment and offered her a modeling career which she gladly took because during that time, she was testing the waters and doesn't have any interest with handling her family's business in Taiwan.

Modeling was her escape, I wanted to protest about her choosing this career because I know I'll have more competition but I love Tzuyu so I let her do what she wanted

But it's taking a toll on our relationship and lately I've been having trust issues

Not with her but with the people she works with, especially when a guy is involved

I know they're out to steal my woman and it made me become anxious and aggravated causing me to become more jealous than usual

"Ugghhh! he wasn't all over me! It's all part of the Job, Sana!"

"Part of the Job?! is it part of the job for him to be hugging you like he owns you! I bet you he liked it too! I'll hurt him the next time I see him! you know I will!"

"There you go again! why does inflicting pain have to be involved every time you have a jealous rage?! why can't you just act normal when you get jealous!"

"Because that's who I am Tzuyu!"

"That is not an excuse! you don't hurt people just because you're jealous!"

"It is a good excuse when they're trying to steal what's mine!"

"Stop being so paranoid! nobody's trying to steal me!"

"Oh wow! fucking wow! and now I'm paranoid?! If I'm paranoid then You're fucking naive!"

"What did you say?!"

"You heard me Tzuyu! You're a naive little child who's fucking clueless and believes that everyone is just being friendly towards you when in reality, they're fucking predators!"

"What about you huh?! A lot of people have taken interest in you too but do you hear me say anything about it?! No! because I trust you! why couldn't you do the same?! it's not like I cheated on you Sana! "

"Because I don't care about them! I cut them off right away as soon as I feel that they want more than friendship! you however, you unknowingly let them cross the friendship line and give them false hope and it seems like you're enjoying it too!"

"What are you trying to say huh? that I'm a slut?! is that it?!"

"Your words, not mine" I answered smugly

Tzuyu didn't say anything anymore, she stayed quiet and so did I
There's a long, awkward silence between us and it's driving me crazy

Few more minutes and Tzuyu finally spoke up

"Maybe we should just.. end this, Sana"

"What..What do you mean?!"

"I can't do this anymore with you, you're suffocating me, it's becoming too much and I--"

"No Koi! please! I'm sorry!" I pleaded, tears already falling from my eyes

This is the very thing that I'm scared of, Tzuyu leaving me and now, it's about to happen

I hugged her and buried my face on her chest

"I'm sorry Koi..I'm sorry, I promise I'll control my jealousy and paranoia, just please, don't leave me..I can't make it without you

darling.. please" I said crying hysterically but she broke off our hug

I looked into her eyes and it's obvious that she's hurt from all that's happening but I also saw that this time, she's determined to go her own way

"I'm sorry Sana, Good bye" She said, she was starting to walk away but I stopped her, hugging her from behind

"No! No! Please Tzuyu! don't do this!"

But my plea proved to be useless, she forcefully broke herself free and faced me again

"I'm walking away, don't follow me Sana or else I'll completely cut you out of my life" Tzuyu said then she walked out the door leaving me heart broken.

:

"Sana-chan, please stop drinking, this won't do you any good" Lisa scolded taking my 3rd bottle of my Hennessy Paradis Imperial

"Ahhh! just leave me **hiccup** the fuck alone **hiccup** Lisa-chan!"

"I'm not going to! not when you're like this! come on! do you really think you'll get Tzuyu back by drowning yourself with alcohol?!"

"No, but if I **hiccup** die due to alcohol poisoning then MAYBE **hiccup** JUST MAYBE! She'll come **hiccup** and see me one last time" I said then I cried in despair

"Oh Sana.." Lisa said holding me in her arms hugging me tight, I held onto my best-friend and cried my heart out

Tzuyu and I have a history of "cooling off" every now and then but it never got to a point where we actually break-up

It's been 34 days since she left me and I honestly prefer to die than to continue living without her by my side.

"Lisa, what did I do wrong? all I ever did was love her and she still chose to walk away from everything we've ever had!"

"Sana-chan, just give her a little more time, she's hurt too.."

"Time?! how much time does she need?! it's been more than a month already! I left her alone like she asked and she hasn't even tried contacting me! not even once!"

"Sana, you need to pull yourself together, this is a good time to work on yourself, you've been revolving your world around Tzuyu for the past four years and--"

"She's all I know Lisa! how can I move on when she's all I think about!"

"I'm not saying that you move on from her, I'm just saying that self-destruction isn't the answer, I've been there and you know it, you witnessed it and pulled me out of my dark place and I'm telling

you this based on experience, It's pointless to stay there and beat yourself up"

I didn't say anything and I just let myself cry some more

"Th-Thank you Lisa-chan"

"You're always welcome Sana, I'm just here. You never left my side when I hit rock bottom, I'll do the same for you, I'll go through hell and back with you until you realize that there's no way but up" My best friend said hugging me tighter

"Lisa-chan.. I miss Tzuyu, I love her..so much.."

"I'm sure she feels the same, give her more space to breathe, she'll come around"

But what if she doesn't?

I know I've become overbearing for the past four years that we've been together.

I just love her so much and I can't bear the thought of losing her permanently.

"Sana, promise me you'll leave her alone and don't do anything drastic" Lisa said breaking away from our hug then she gave me a stern look.

Drastic..

DRASTIC

I got it!

Why didn't I think of it before?!

I smirked and wiped my tears away, an evil plan already in my mind.

"Sana.. you're scaring me, what are you thinking right now?"

"Nothing, you're right, I should work on myself, Thanks sis"

I know Lisa is skeptical and she doesn't believe me, She kind of has an idea of how far I'm willing to go for Tzuyu but nobody really knows my worst except for my lover

"Sana, please, whatever you're thinking, don't do it"

Nope, nobody's going to stop me, I've already made up my mind.

Tsk Tsk..

Tzuyu, Tzuyu..

You'll come running back into my arms in no time

Sorry Lisa-chan, but leaving Tzuyu alone..

IS NEVER GOING TO BE AN OPTION.

3 DAYS LATER..

TZUYU'S POV

Hong Kong

"Ok, nice! great job Tzuyu! now look on your left! perfect! you're gorgeous!"

My photographer said while I pose for the camera

This is my third and final day in Hong Kong shooting for Vogue and I could not be anymore relieved, I'm really exhausted, all I want to do is sleep.

"Alright, I think we're done!" He said while he taking a peak of his last shot, smiling with satisfaction

"Thank You, Tzuyu, you were great, as usual"

"Than you for making me look good, give yourself the credit you deserve, Eric" I said smiling

He was going to give me a hug but I avoided him and ended up giving him an awkward high-five instead.

I know Sana will get upset and she wouldn't like it if she sees me having close body contact with a person she's not familiar with especially if it's a guy

Ugghhh.. Get your shit together Tzuyu! Sana's not even here!

You broke up with her already, she doesn't have the privilege to control you anymore!

I shook my head out of my thoughts

I thanked the staff and then I excused myself.

I went inside my dressing room alone, I asked my manager to not let anybody in because I want to be in my own little world and think about Sana freely without any unnecessary interruptions.

It's been more than a month since I broke things off with her and until now, the pain that I feel is still fresh.

I couldn't forget the look on her face when I told her to leave me alone

She looks so broken and thinking about how much I hurt her makes my heart ache

We've never been separated for this long and I'm literally dying inside but I know that I need to stay strong and stick with my decision because if I don't, things will get more out of control and Sana's jealousy will only get worst and I might end up hating her in the process.

I don't want to go to that point because Sana is the love of my

life.

I just want her to learn her lesson.

Breaking up with her probably wasn't the smartest solution though, but I just got too overwhelmed with our never-ending fights and being separated from her was the best thing I could think of at that moment.

I felt tears streaming down my face, this is exactly one of the reasons why I want to be alone, I don't want other people seeing me vulnerable, Sana's the only person I let in when it comes to my emotions.

I stayed in my dressing room for another 30 minutes to fix myself, checking my make up, my hair and my outfit, making sure I don't look like a crying mess

I have a T.V. guesting in 3 hours and I need to look perfect.

I texted my manager and told her that I'm ready to go, 2 minutes later, I heard someone knocking on my door

My manager walked right in and she looks a bit distraught

"What's wrong? why do you look so stressed Manager Cho?" I asked her smiling awkwardly

"Tzuyu, there's no easy way to say this but Hong Kong Vogue cancelled on us"

"Huh? cancelled? what do you mean? the shoot just got done not even an hour ago, they can't possibly pull out on us all of a sudden?" I said confused

"But they did, they said that they no longer think you're fit to be in the cover"

I was very surprised with what I heard, I never had any issue with any of my campaigns before and I don't know how to deal with this one

"Uhm.. well, that was random.. and offensive, but whatever, it is what it is, let's just go to my T.V. guesting and get it over with"

"Tzuyu, that's another thing, the T.V. station found a replacement"

"Replacement? Why?"

"They called me and said you cancelled on them last minute, they were very upset and said that you're very unprofessional"

"I CANCELLED??! WHEN?!"

"An hour ago"

"How can I cancel when I was in the middle of a photoshoot! call them and tell them that it wasn't me! there must be some kind of misunderstanding!"

"Too late, they're very angry Tzuyu-ssi, There's nothing we can do" My manager said sadly

"But I--what..what's going on here? I don't understand.."

I feel disheartened and I have a lot of mixed negative emotions
Why is this happening?!

SANA'S POV

SN: Right, okay, thank you Mr. CEO, I'm glad you finally see things my way, I don't ever want your agency to book any more projects for Tzuyu, arraseo?

JYP: But, Miss Minatozaki, Please re-consider, Tzuyu is one of our highest paid talents, we can't just--

SN: I thought I already made it clear Mr. Park, No More Projects for My Angel, and besides, Her contract will expire soon, I don't want you to renew it, don't sign her anymore.

JYP: Sana-ssi, Tzuyu is at the peak of her career, she has so much potential

SN: I DON'T GIVE A DAMN! KICK HER OUT OF YOUR AGENCY!
IF YOU DON'T THEN I'LL MAKE SURE J.Y.P. GETS A BAD REP
WITHIN ASIA ESPECIALLY IN JAPAN AND CHINA, YOU GOT
THAT?! NOW DO AS I SAY!

I roared over the phone, this fool doesn't seem to understand that
I don't want my Tzuyu to be in the spotlight anymore

JYP: Y-yes, Yes Miss Minatozaki"

SN: Goodbye Mr. Park, I hope this will be the last time that we
associate with each other and just to be clear, I don't have anything
to do with ruining Tzuyu's career, Understand?

JYP: Understood, Miss Minatozaki. Have a nice--

I hung up the phone.

I didn't want to hear his annoying voice anymore

I grinned to myself knowing that I've won.

No Surprise there.

Sabotage.

That's right.

I did it.

I have been monitoring Tzuyu's work commitments and I started
making my moves on destroying her career--Manipulating and
sabotaging it one by one..

I just cancelled her project in Hong Kong about 2 hours ago, it
was last minute and I almost didn't succeed but luck was on my side
and I was able to pull it off

I used my family's connections and power to threaten the Editor in Chief of Hong Kong Vogue, not just her but also The President of TVB--The T.V. network that's supposed to be guesting Tzuyu in one of their popular variety show.

That's what she gets for being stubborn and going against me..

And for abandoning me!

Don't get me wrong, This isn't about me seeking revenge on my beloved.

Quite the opposite actually

This is just me simply trying to teach her a lesson..

The Hard Way.

I want to crush Tzuyu's spirit and make her realize that the modeling world is a cruel and unsafe place for a sweet, innocent little angel like her

I don't care if I'm being heartless

I don't care if she finds out about it eventually and hate me for it

Her career tore us apart and I'll make sure that I'll burn it down to the ground.

The underhanded move that I did in Hong Kong was only the beginning.

I've already cancelled her projects for the next seven months, she doesn't have anything lined up after that and even if she did, I would block it right away.

And when she comes back to South Korea, she won't have a career anymore and she'll face multiple scandals

She'll be so depressed and devastated and I'll come and swoop in and be the Heroine of the Story.

It's Perfect..

It's Brilliant!

"Ha! I should get a Noble Prize for this!" I said smiling to myself

Okay, maybe this is about me getting my revenge

Oh well, I'm still feeling proud of what I did

****sigh****

Oh Tzuyu.. You shouldn't have left me, My Love

:

:

:

:

PRESENT DAY
Month of May
Queens, New York

"Wait a minute, so you mean to tell me you were responsible for all the scandal Tzuyu got involved in?! Damn it Sana! How could you do that to her?!" My best friend Lisa said running a hand through her hair

I didn't respond to Lisa and just continued drinking my morning coffee, unbothered by her reaction.

If it isn't obvious enough, we're here in the United States visiting Jennie and Lisa for 2 weeks, It's our second day here and Tzuyu and Jennie decided that they're gonna go to Central Park together with our Kids.

I wanted to sleep in, my wife knows how much I love to sleep so she let me be.

Lisa didn't go with them either so we ended up having brunch, we ordered food and decided to reminisce about past.

We got to talking like normal friends do, but as the conversation got deeper.. it also got darker

She told me the complete details about her being Kidnapped by Jennie and I eventually confessed to her about what I did do Tzuyu.

Which Is probably not a good idea because now, I'm getting an earful

"Sana!"

"Uggh!! what Lisa-chan?! could you shut your trap?! it's 10:30 in the morning and I still have jetlag and you're yelling at me over something that happened years ago!"

"Sana-chan! You almost destroyed Tzuyu's life! how could you do something like that?!"

"Pfft, Please. You're acting like you your wife didn't put you through hell"

"But Jennie didn't go as far as ruining my image to the public!"

"Yeah?! but I bet you she would have if you were in the Entertainment industry! lucky for her, you're not as beautiful as My Tzuyu so there wasn't any chance for you to get scouted" I said smugly

"You're.. Unbelievable! I can't believe I'm just finding out about this"

"What? are you gonna tell on me now, Lisa-chan?"

"Of course not! but Sana-chan.. I--"

"Ignorance is a bliss Lisa-chan. What Tzuyu doesn't know won't hurt her, and besides, it all worked out in the end. We got married, we have two adorable twin little boys and she finally found something that she loves to do without being in the public eye"

"And buying her a 37% share at Korean Vogue is the perfect solution is that it?"

I grinned and nodded

"Exactly! it's a win win! she still gets to work in the entertainment world and she's the boss while helping her parents with their family's business"

"Wow.. I can't believe it--"

"We're back!" I heard my wife say which automatically made me smile, I got up from my chair and greeted her with a hug and a kiss, I did the same to our kids then I gave my Godson Liam a tight squishy hug

My kids Kenji and Kaiden are the same age as Liam and luckily, all three of them get along really well.

"How was your walk, darling?" I asked Tzuyu

"Pretty! I really love Central Park! we're going back tomorrow for another morning walk, you should join us Koi" my wife answered happily

"Hmm, Alright. I'll try Koi, did you eat?"

"Yeah we did" My wife said showing off her pretty little dimple, I cupped her cheek and gave her a quick peck on the lips

But our moment was cut short by none other than The Dumpling Demon

"Could you move out of the way Minatozaki?! you don't need to be blocking the door!" Jennie said with a lot of attitude and sass, I was gonna talk back but Tzuyu stopped me

Jennie is 7 months pregnant and Tzuyu warned me beforehand that her pregnancy is very delicate that's why it's important to not upset her.

"Right, I'm sorry Kim, My mistake."

"Yes, it is your mistake, Idiot" She said rolling her eyes at me then she turned her attention to Lisa

"Tangelo! make me something! I'm hungry!"

"Yes Honey!" My friend responded right away, fear obvious in her tone.

She hurriedly greeted Jennie and gave her a hug and a kiss then she went to their Kitchen.

"She's still a pushover" I whispered to Tzuyu

"Sssshhh! Stay out of it or Jennie will strangle you" My wife said giggling then she gave me a kiss on the cheek

"Let's go and help Lisa, we don't want the Monster Prego to be upset with all of us" I said to my wife.

Tzuyu laugh softly and agreed

"I love you, Koi"

"I love you too, Sana"

:

:

7 PM

"So, You Finally Told Tangelo Huh?" Jennie said standing next to me while we watch our kids playing in the pool

"Told her what, Kim?" I asked innocently but I already know what she's talking about

"Don't play dumb, Minatozaki. You told her about Ruining Tzuyu's Career earlier didn't you?"

I chuckled and nodded

"Did she tell you the whole story?" I asked

"No, she didn't need to. She just told me that You've done something crazy to your wife that she can't even talk about it"

"And she has no idea that you already knew about it before her, right?"

"Nope. None. I don't want to make her feel bad about it"

"Thanks Kim, I appreciate it"

"Whatever, you're lucky I'm such a good person or else I would've told Tzuyu about it"

"Good Person huh? alright then. Honestly though you should be thanking me too, Kim"

"Thank you for what? All you do is mess with me"

"Yes and that proved to be fruitful. Remember that night you and Lalisa got together again because you were stuck in Jeju Island? If I didn't plan out the whole thing you wouldn't have had her kids"

"Please! We got stuck in the same room because you were too cheap to book two separate rooms! Don't act like you're actually the reason why Tangelo and I got back together!"

"Cheap? Probably so. But You know, maybe deep down I was rooting for you and not Jung-kook"

"Yeah. Sure. If you say so, Minatozaki. Tangelo is Destined to be mine, I didn't need your help. Anyways You're Really Insane for doing those shitty antics. Good thing Tzuyu has a strong heart and mind that she was able to go through all that scandal"

"Yeah, all thanks to me" I said cockily

"Reality Check, You're the one who caused the problem, Minatozaki"

"Yes but I fixed the problem for her" I said winking at Jennie

She just rolled her eyes at me and whispered "Crazy Bitch"

"You and I are no different Kim. You know you would do the same if you were in my situation"

She scoffed

"Ha! Trust me, I can do it better than you Minatozaki, I'll Kill Lisa if she ever breaks up with me"

"Is there a competition on '*Who's Crazier*' that I know nothing about?" I asked laughing but she didn't answer

There was a comfortable silence between us and then Kim spoke up again

"You're right though Minatozaki, I would do the same thing you did without even thinking twice. If I have to ruin Tangelo's life to make her completely mine then I would, no questions asked. I want her to depend on me and only me, I want her to know that I'm the only who she can truly rely on, that I'm the only one who can love her the best"

"Yep! I have the exact same thought Kim, I love Tzuyu so much, there's no way I'm letting her escape"

"I understand" Jennie said nodding in agreement

"You know what I just realized Kim? You and I could've been the best of friends if we would've been put in a different circumstance"

"True. But we would've been really bad influence to each other and we might end up causing chaos"

"And that's why we have our wives to keep us grounded"

"Tangelo and Tzuyu sure does have that built-in '*Crazy Magnet*' don't they?" She said as she laughs

"They do, I'm Tzuyu's Psycho and You're Lisa's"

"But they can't deny that the Psychos in us turn them on"

"Right?! That's why they're perfect life partners for us"

I said then we laughed together like it's nobody's business
We're Insane, what do you expect?

"We're lucky to have them, Minatozaki."

"We are Kim..We really are"

終わり